

UNIVERSITY OF SOUTHAMPTON

Protected interests? The fortifications of Nevis, West
Indies, from the 17th century to the present day.

(Volume 2 of 2: Appendices A, B & C)

by

Tessa C. S. Machling

PhD Thesis

Department of Archaeology

Faculty of Arts

University of Southampton

September 2003

Appendix A - The myths of Jamestown

A 1.1 Introduction

In many books, tourist pamphlets, advertising materials and on maps (Hubbard 1996: 84, Gordon 1998: 3), a myth regarding the origins and fate of the settlement at Jamestown has been and continues to be told. In recent years the story has received academic investigation, with archaeologists exploring the validity of the legend (Taylor 1999: 98, Andrews 2002: 67).

The persisting stories state that settlers founded Jamestown in 1607, en route to Virginia, naming the town after King James I. The legend also asserts that following a catastrophic earthquake and subsequent tidal wave, in either 1680 or 1690, the town was entirely destroyed. A few versions even suggest that church bells can sometimes be heard ringing beneath the sea. However, the author can find no basis for any of these statements. But, as the fort associated with Jamestown shares its name and potential mythical fate, and in order to correct such a persistent myth, the author has included below her reasoning for ignoring the myth.

A 1.2 Foundation of Jamestown

The origins of the Jamestown foundation story are difficult to ascribe. No mention of a settlement by Virginia planters has been located, although it is known from John Smith's account that a brief stop was made at Nevis in 1607. However, in this account, no reference is made to founding a town. In fact, from acts and descriptions it would appear that a foundation date in the late 1660s/early 1670s seems probable. From documentary sources, a continuing series of references to Morton's Bay, the forerunner of the Jamestown settlement, can be found from this date.

In 1672, the first mention of Morton's Bay was made in a fort inventory of that year (Sir Charles Wheler, PRO CO1/29/161: 14/12/1672). Two further acts mentioning Morton's Bay also date from this year. The first stated that Morton's Bay, Bath Bay [Charlestown], Old Road, New Windward and Indian Castle were lawful ports of the island (PRO CO154/1/114: 1672), the second legislated that only stone or brick chimneys were to be built in Charlestown and Morton's Bay (Nevis Acts, PRO CO154/2/60: 10/2/1672).

By 1675, a further act ‘for the suppression of thatcht houses’ in Morton’s Bay and Charlestown was passed (Nevis Acts, PRO CO154/2: 43: 26/5/1675). In 1676, Morton’s Bay was described as the second town on the island after Charlestown, which had ‘but few houses’ (William Stapleton, PRO CO138/152: 22/11/1676). In 1680 an act was passed ‘against making dangerous fires in Charles town and Morton’s Bay’ (Nevis Acts, PRO CO154/2/23: 8/5/1680) and in 1682 the act for stone and brick chimneys in Charlestown and Morton’s Bay was again passed (Nevis Acts, PRO CO154/2: 16/3/1682). In 1683, an act to raise a levy in Charlestown, Morton’s Bay and World’s End was read (Nevis Acts, CSP 1681-5, No. 937: 12/2/1683).

The first mention of Jamestown appeared in late 1684, in an act which referred to the ‘lawful places receiving goods’ to be Jamestown and Charlestown (Nevis Act, CSP 1685, No. 1874: 27/9/1684). From this point onwards Morton’s Bay vanished from the acts to be replaced by Jamestown. The suggestion that Jamestown and Morton’s Bay were one and the same is further supported by a map of 1687, drawn by William Hack, which showed a fort named Morton’s Bay in the position of Jamestown (Fig C1a).

In 1685, Jamestown, Charlestown and World’s End were mentioned (Nevis Acts, CSP 1685-8, No. 79: 19/3/1685), with the same town names being included in acts from 1699 and 1700 (Nevis Acts, CSP 1699, No. 46: 20/1/1699; PRO CO154/5: 30/1/1700; PRO CO185/1: 22/10/1700). John Johnson’s description of James Fort at Jamestown stated that the location ‘is commonly known as Morton’s Bay’ (John Johnson, PRO CO152/6: 15/9/1705), providing further proof of the identity of Morton’s Bay and Jamestown as one and the same.

The fort and the town continued to appear in records (PRO CO152/6: 12/3/1706; CO152/7: 15/12/1707; CO152/11: 1/9/1715; CO152/16/159: 3/10/1727; CO152/20/148: 31/8/1734; CO152/31/11: 23/2/1769; CO152/32: 1/2/1773; CO152/ 64: 4/1787; CO152/83: 30/6/1801) until the early 19th century, with a map of 1810 (Fig. C1h) showing a town called Littleborough (probably a corruption from the term ‘Petit Bourg’ shown on a French map of 1758, Fig. C1f). However, on a further map of 1818 (Fig. C1i) no town was shown, with only a ‘Pleasure House’ being marked.

As has been shown above, a consistent pattern for the presence of Morton’s Bay/Jamestown throughout the mid 17th to 19th centuries can be seen. Had Jamestown been founded and named by the Virginian voyage, it would surely have merited mention at some point prior to 1684. Indeed, its mention only *after* James II’s accession, and the almost entire removal of the name of Morton’s Bay, would suggest that the town name was changed from Morton’s Bay to Jamestown. It is probable that the town only grew to a

size appropriate to be graced with a royal name from the later 17th century. By late 1684, only a few months before Charles II's death, the all too apparent choice of successor to Charles II appears to have led the island to apply the name as an advance gesture of loyalty.

A 1.3 Artefactual evidence

Pottery, clay pipes and glass bottle sherds recovered during the Time Team excavations in 1999 (Taylor 1999, Barker et al. 2002: 81) show two distinct date ranges: the first from around c.1660-1720 and the second throughout the 19th century. Allowing for manufacture in Britain and transport to the Caribbean, the earliest date possible is likely to be around 1670 or later. This would fit the documentary evidence for the first founding of the town in the late 17th century, however, it is difficult to establish with certainty whether the settlement evidence discovered by the excavations represents 17th century Morton's Bay/Jamestown proper or general activity close to the town.

Of interest is the apparent absence of true 18th century material, suggesting a hiatus in activity during this period. It is possible that this absence evidences a decline in activity on the site after the French attack of 1706. In the 19th century, slave emancipation led to an expansion of settlement activity on the island (Fog Olwig 1995: 73) and it is possible that the 19th century finds from the excavations represent evidence of this expansion into the vicinity of Morton's Bay/Jamestown: the status of the pottery discovered would not disprove such a theory (Barker et al. 2002: 84).

A 1.4 Destruction

Again, when one considers the mythical destruction of the town, no basis in fact can be established; no record of an earthquake in 1680 can be located. The passing of acts in 1680, 1682 and 1683, prove that the town was flourishing during this period, therefore the 1680 date can be categorically ruled out.

However, for 1690 the picture is less certain: an earthquake did occur in this year (Robson 1964: 789). An eyewitness account of the event (Anonymous 1690) describes the sea retreating from the land before returning again with great force. It also mentions that many houses in Charlestown were destroyed. However, *the account makes no mention of Jamestown or its destruction*. It also does not mention the destruction of any fort. In fact Charles Fort is described as having 'escap'd'. In a further account by Governor

Christopher Codrington, although much of the island's stonework is described as damaged (Christopher Codrington, PRO CO152/37:4/6/1690), no record is made of a lost town or fort. With Christopher Codrington's interest in all things military, his omitting to mention that the fort had been destroyed would be unlikely.

In the years immediately following the earthquake no mention is made of such huge destruction on Nevis, although numerous letters continue to be sent by the Governor home to England (CSP 1689-92, No. 977: 4/7/1690; No. 1212: 26/11/1690). Had the town and fort been lost it would surely have merited some comment. Indeed, following later disasters, such as the French attack of 1706, numerous petitions, accounts of damages, etc were sent to England. In Jamaica, where an earthquake in 1692 caused the destruction of the town of Port Royal, many accounts of the disaster survive (Pawson and Buisseret 1975). No such documents could be located for the 1690 Nevis event.

In addition to the overwhelming documentary evidence, recent geological work carried out in the area, although preliminary, has not been able to locate any tsunami related deposits (Andrews 2002: 68). Again, the artefactual assemblage from the Time Team site, the consistent range of material dating from the period between 1660 and 1700 and the apparently undisturbed contexts uncovered, would suggest that the site has not been subjected to a tsunami. In the light of all the above evidence such a catastrophic event appears extremely unlikely.

Although mention of a tidal wave is made in the 1690 account, great store should not necessarily be set upon this. In the Caribbean, where hurricanes and earthquakes are relatively common, at least fifty tsunami/tidal waves were recorded between 1530 and 1860 (Lander 2001: 1, Lander and Whiteside 2001: 1). However, only fifteen of the reported events are associated with significant damage (Lander 2001: 1). Inundation by the sea is not uncommon in Nevis with the hurricanes of recent years (e.g. Lenny and Georges) having caused water of several feet in depth to cover Main Street in Charlestown for days. Although damaging and inconvenient, generally these inundations, both historically, and in the present, cause few long-term inconveniences.

The attitudes of those brought up in the temperate British climate as compared with those possessed by the hurricane-weary Nevisians often show a great difference. For instance the seventy miles per hour winds in the British 'hurricane' of October 1987 caused widespread destruction and panic amongst the inhabitants of southern England. However, the Caribbean Hurricane Bertha, witnessed by the author in July 1996, which had slightly higher winds than the 1987 English version, excited little attention from the

inhabitants of Nevis. Windows were boarded and provisions were bought, but apart from that life carried on as normal.

Of course, larger hurricanes, such as Lenny in 1999 and Georges in 1998, pose a much greater threat to life and can cause immense damage to Nevisian property. However, with around one major hurricane per year, the ability of the islanders to swiftly repair and get back to normal is evidenced by the continuing prosperity of the island. It is likely that this survival mentality was also present historically. Therefore, the effects of such events should not be judged through European eyes, rather the adaptations and attitudes, which allowed, and continue to allow, the Caribbean islanders to survive and flourish in spite of these events should be examined.

A 1.5 The making of the myth

With the lack of evidence for the Virginia Jamestown foundation and for the debilitating earthquake, the origins of such a wonderful myth must be sought elsewhere. During the course of the author's research into the forts of Nevis, a possible source for this story has become apparent.

The origins of the earthquake story appear to be found in a history of Nevis made by a Nevisian planter, John Alexander Burke Isles. Burke Isles was a Justice of the Peace and had been Colonial Secretary in the 1870s. In 1871, he wrote his '*An Account Descriptive of the Island of Nevis, West Indies*' (Burke Isles 1871). Typically Victorian, the account makes mention of great disasters, heathen savages and great wars, all written in a flamboyant and extravagant prose. For example, the Newcastle Redoubt is described as a mausoleum through which the Caribs 'shot their last arrows and died in the hope of that bright reversion of which heaven itself had never bereft the savage beast'.

Within the history, Burke Isles (1871) describes how, on 20th April 1680, 'the capital Jamestown situate on the north west margin of the sea coast was submerged by an earthquake, carrying with it, its population and wealth'. He also describes 'relics of this terrible visitation' in the form of fissures. It is probable that the fissures referred to are in fact the ghuts (gullies), caused by run off water from Mount Nevis rather than by earthquakes. However, Burke Isles neglects to mention his sources for such a theory and if his deductions concerning the Newcastle Redoubt are anything to go by, a healthy scepticism is advisable.

Included in the account is a map, which pinpoints the location of the disaster in the vicinity of Morton's Bay (Fig. C1k). This marking persists to the present day and is shown

on the modern Ordnance Survey map of Nevis printed in 1984. The author discovered a possible reason for this continuation in the Ordnance Survey offices in Southampton.

Within the St. Kitts and Nevis collections of maps, a War Office map from 1920, entitled '*The Presidency of St. Kitts and Nevis*' by Major J. A. Burdon is marked with 'site of Jamestown, destroyed 1680'. A further note on the map states that 'Nevis is based on Isles' map of 1870: the coastline and hill features being taken from the admiralty chart of 1848'. Clearly, Burke Isles' map influenced the first Ordnance Survey map of the island and, once established in 1920 by the War Office, the myth of Jamestown's destruction, despite information to the contrary, was crystallized for the 20th century and beyond.

Appendix B - Governor John Johnson: A biography

B 1.1 Introduction

In July 1701, The Inniskilling (twenty-seventh) Regiment of Foot set sail from Cork for the Caribbean. Captain John Johnson, soon to be Major of the 27th, Lt. Governor of Nevis and then Governor of the Leeward Islands, currently Captain of a Grenadier Company, was on his way to becoming one of the most interesting, and influential, military men in Nevis' history. Daniel Parke (Governor of the Leeward Islands from 1706-1710) would later, snidely, describe Johnson's history as follows: 'Coll. Johnson was bred a bricklayer, he went into the army in the Irish warr in Tiffeny's regiment, he was very dextrous in bringing his Coll. black cattle for which service from a Sergeant Tiffeny made him a Captain. Codrington made him Major and Lt. Governor of Nevis, he could neither write nor read' (PRO CO239/1/15, 4/10/1706).

The regiment was formed in the late 1680s by Protestant men from Enniskillen, County Fermanagh, to defend the area against King James II, in the form of the Earl of Tyrconnell and his armies. It had started life as an unofficial militia which fought so effectively that, in 1689, they were given status as an official regiment by William of Orange in gratitude for their services (Copeland-Trimble 1876: 6, Constable 1928: 9).

In June 1689, Captain John Johnson was given a commission to be Engineer to the regiment, under its Colonel, Zachariah Tiffin. The precise details of Johnson's career are vague prior to this date. It would appear that Johnson had been in the army before 1689, and may have been the John Johnson mentioned as an Ensign in the Colonel-less Royal Regiment of Foot in February 1685 (PRO WO25/1/457, 2/1685). He could also have been in another regiment whose records have not survived. Alternatively, he may have been one of the original Inniskilling men, born and bred in County Fermanagh.

The surname 'Johnson' would point to south-west Scottish ancestry and the presence of many 'Johnsons' in Ulster (Dunlop 2000) might suggest that his ancestors had been one of the many planters from Scotland, who went to Ireland in the mid 1600s. The description by Parke of Johnson being a 'bricklayer' who 'went into the army in the Irish warr' (PRO CO239/1/15, 4/10/1706) would also support the interpretation of Johnson as a local man, who only joined the army upon James II's threat to Ireland. Alternatively it may just reflect Parke's bitterness towards this man, whom he clearly regarded as an upstart of low breed.

B 1.2 Ireland and Flanders

From 1689-1690 the 27th Regiment of foot was involved in the Battle of the Boyne, amongst others in Ireland, and in 1692 was sent to Flanders. Whilst there, they 'were employed in strengthening the walls of Dixmude' (Constable 1928: 31). As the Regiment's engineer, Johnson would clearly have been involved in this project.

Johnson would appear to have been a good soldier. In April 1693, whilst the regiment were serving at the Tower, he received a commission to be Captain of the Grenadier Company in the regiment (PRO WO254/274, 4/1693). This honour was reserved for men of great ability, who, interestingly, were often given the position due to their good looks and height, in addition to their military capability (Evans 1990: 502).

In 1695, the 'Inniskillings' were present at the siege of Namur, and Grenadiers from the 27th took part in the final, successful, assault on the fortress. In 1696, they were involved in yet more fortification work and constructed an entrenched camp at Anderlecht. By the end of 1697 they had returned to Ireland and stayed there until 1701, when news of their transfer to the West Indies was received (Constable 1928: 46).

B 1.3 The West Indies and Christopher Codrington

Tiffin's regiment arrived in Antigua in 1702 and in August of that year Tiffin died and was replaced by Colonel Thomas Whetham (Constable 1928: 47). Their first action in the Caribbean came in 1703 when the Regiment was part of an expedition to Guadeloupe under the command of the then Governor of the Leeward Islands, Christopher Codrington III. It would seem that Johnson first met Codrington at this time (PRO CO 152/8, 3/1703).

Christopher Codrington III had been born in Barbados to a family of note who had a large estate in England as well as considerable plantations in both Antigua and Barbados (Harlow 1989: 1). Codrington's father, Christopher Codrington II, had been Governor of the Leeward Islands from 1689 until 1698 (Henige 1970: 131), and appears to have been responsible for many military improvements in the Leewards (PRO CO152/1, 3/7/1693).

His son was sent to England to be educated and eventually received a fellowship at All Souls College, Oxford in 1689. In early 1693, Codrington volunteered for an, ultimately unsuccessful, expedition to capture Martinique. After this defeat he went to St. Christopher and inspected the forts and defence of Nevis, Antigua and St. Christopher with his father, learning the duties of Governorship as he went (Harlow 1989: 69). Codrington then returned to Oxford. In 1695 he, like the 27th Regiment, served at Namur,

where he was promoted from Captain to Lieutenant Colonel. He then returned once again to his Oxford Fellowship before travelling to Paris (Harlow 1989: 85).

On the death of his father, in 1698, he was appointed Governor of the Leeward Islands. After two years of discussion over payment, he finally arrived in the Leeward Islands in September 1700. As Governor, Codrington passed many laws and restructured the corrupt system of justice present in the islands. He would appear to have been a man who respected education and learning and tried to promote it in others, a trait which may have attracted him to Johnson, a man of apparent 'low' birth who clearly had the potential for improvement. Codrington was a man who could see nothing wrong in slavery but, in direct opposition to the planters, believed in education and religion for the slaves and later, in his will, founded Codrington College in Barbados (Harlow 1989: 217).

Other of his laws provided land for small planters through taxation on large landowners who did not cultivate their estates. On Nevis, he passed acts for repairing the breastworks and for the better regulation of the militia (PRO CO185/3, 13/2/1701). In 1701, he wrote that 'Nevis seems to be naturally stronger and better fortified, still there is great want of good armes and ammunition, but if care was taken, the militia of that island might be brought to some discipline' (PRO CO153/7, 16/7/1701).

In 1703, Codrington was so impressed with Captain John Johnson's actions in Guadeloupe that he made him first Major and then Lt. Governor of Nevis in July of that year (Grant and Monro 1910). In 1704, Codrington was replaced by Sir. William Mathew as Governor of the Leeward Islands, but stayed on in Antigua to oversee his plantation.

B 1.4 The Nevis forts

From 1703-6 Johnson set to work improving the forts and defences of Nevis (PRO CO 152/6, 9/2/1704). It is difficult to establish the level of Johnson's involvement in these works, although it would seem that he was mainly responsible for the design and construction. It is, however, almost certain he was working under the influence of Codrington: as Parke states 'Johnson protested to me that he never did any one thing but by Coll. Codrington's advice' (PRO CO239/1/15, 4/10/1706).

Codrington had obviously intended to repair the Nevis fortifications, continuing the work started by his father in 1693 (PRO CO152/1, 6/11/1693). However, in the years prior to Johnson's arrival little work was carried out and it would appear that men and arms were of more importance to Codrington (PRO CO153/7, 20/8/1701; CO185/2/42, 1702). Codrington did visit the Nevis forts in 1701 and suggested that certain forts needed

repair (PRO CO 152/4, 25/8/1701), but does not appear to have suggested exactly how the repairs should be achieved.

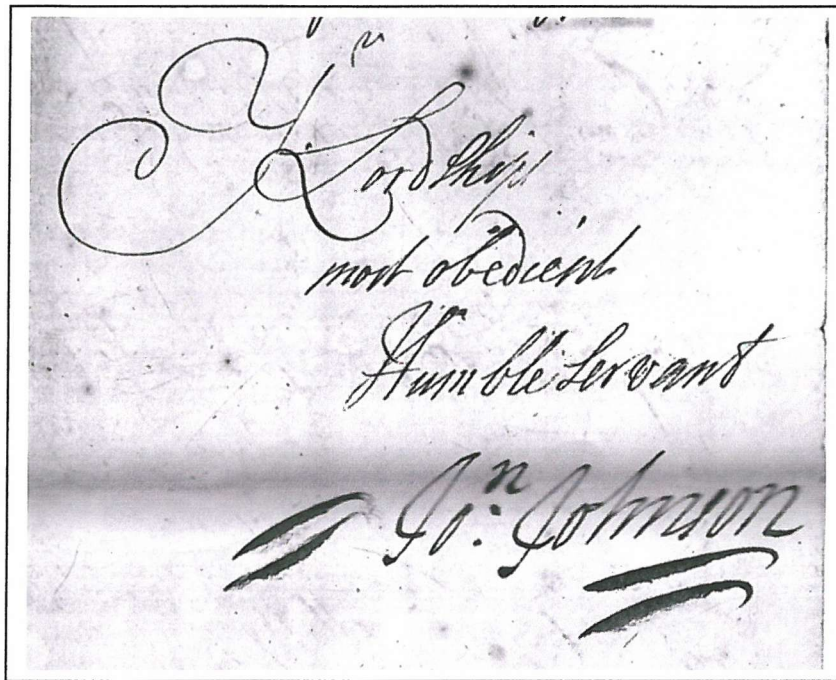
A photograph of a handwritten letter. The text is written in a cursive script. At the top, it says 'Your Lordships'. Below that, 'most obedient'. Then 'Humble Servant'. At the bottom, 'S^r. Johnson' with a flourish underneath.

Figure B1a) Johnson's signature on a letter of 1705 (PRO CO152/6: 15/9/1705)

With Johnson's experience as a bricklayer, engineer and soldier there is no reason to suggest that he was not capable of the works he claims to have instigated (PRO CO152/6, 15/9/1705). It must not be forgotten that Codrington, for much of this time, would have been in Antigua and would therefore have been unavailable to Johnson, who was in Nevis. Indeed, Sir. William Mathew clearly believed Johnson was responsible for the forts and stated 'Nevis is in much the best posture and defence of any island...I must do Col. Johnson the Lt. Gov. thereof that justice, to tell your Lordships that it is chiefly due to his great care and dilligence and that his zeal for her Majesty's favour truly deserves your Lordships favour' (PRO CO153/9, 31/8/1704). Thus it would appear that Codrington may have suggested to Johnson that the forts needed repair and the precise design, construction, etc. was then up to Johnson who had far more experience in such matters.

By 1704 the forts were described as nearly finished (PRO CO154/5, 22/3/1704). Well designed and built, from faced and shaped stones with lime mortar, the forts were the most considerable ever constructed on the island and form the majority of the early 18th century structures which survive to the present day. This was quite an achievement for the 'young engineer' (PRO CO152/6, 15/9/1705) who had left Ireland in 1701.

In December 1704, Mathew died and Johnson, as Deputy Governor of Nevis, by default became Governor of the Leeward Islands, until a new Governor could be sent from

England. He continued the defences of Nevis and also worked on Monk's Hill Fort on Antigua, a project started by Codrington (CSPD 1704-5, 446; PRO CO152/6, 9/2/1704). In March 1705, Daniel Parke received his commission to be Governor of the Leeward Islands (PRO CO153/9, 27/3/1705), and arrived in the Caribbean in May 1706.

B 1.5 Daniel Parke

Parke in his previous positions on the Virginia Assembly and as escheater for York County had been accused of misadministration. When the accusations were made public, he had returned to England without leave. He had made his money from tobacco, had bought a country estate and then ran for Parliament. He won his seat through bribery and, when the corruption was discovered, was expelled from Parliament. In the 1690s, he served as a volunteer in Flanders and redeemed his reputation by bringing news to Queen Anne of the victory at Blenheim.

After 'a period of assiduous attention at Court' (Harlow 1989: 188), upon Mathew's death, he was offered the position of Governor of the Leeward Islands. This meant that Johnson again became Lieutenant Governor of Nevis. It also meant that the two previous Governors were still in the Leeward Islands, as Parke seems to have seen it, potentially watching and reporting his every move.

Parke appears to have been violently jealous and suspicious of Codrington and immediately set about damning his, and by association, Johnson's name (PRO CO152/6, 15/7/1706). Parke was extremely disliked by the planters of the Leeward Islands, apparently due to his philandering (with planters wives') and his pompous attitude (Harlow 1989: 194). In one account, it was even said that his wife, having been kidnapped by Caribs, preferred to stay with them rather than return home to her husband (Crandall 2000: 189). His accusations against Johnson and Codrington were harsh, and would appear to be mostly unfounded.

B 1.6 The French attack of 1706

In February 1706, the first test of Johnson's forts came when the French attacked the island. On 7th February the French ships came into range and, as Col. Richard Abbott narrates, 'gave their broadsides which was returned very warmly by three of our own forts battering on them at one the same time doing considerable damage to the ships and killing the commander of the 70 gun ship' (PRO CO184/4, 13/3/1706). After this, as Johnson

states 'perceiving the roughness of the forts, platformes and trenches, which were observed to be well lined, twas thought adviseable to remand them [the French soldiers] on board' and five days were '...spent without any real action more than exchanging great shot daily between the forts and the enemy's ships; with some damage on their side but none to ours' (PRO CO153/9, 13/3/1706). The French finally stood off and headed for St. Christopher.

Johnson then, apparently perceiving that Antigua was also in danger, took some of the 27th Regiment to that island. However, after sacking St. Christopher (PRO CO152/6, 12/3/1706) the French returned to Nevis on the 21st March. The arrival of the fleet to the north of the island convinced the Nevis commanders that 'the enemy would attempt their landing to the northward and accordingly the troops were posted' (Richard Abbott, PRO CO152/6, 3/6/1706). Johnson's coastal batteries were effective and provided no means of landing on the western coast. Forts also mostly protected the small bays to the south and east. The French, realizing that attack on the west would be futile, split their fleet and in the night landed 3,000 men in Green Bay to the south-west of the island. By day break on the 22nd they were in command of 'four of the best platforms which were only defensible to the sea' (Richard Abbott PRO CO184/1/6, 21/3/1706).

Nevis was sacked and 'two thirds of the chief town was burn'd to the ground' (David Dunbar PRO CO152/10, 7/7/1715). Many sugar estates were also destroyed. From contemporary accounts it would appear that defeat was not inevitable, rather the result of the neglect of two Nevis planters, Colonel Burt and Colonel Butler, who had been stationed at the bay: 'the former leaving his post and the latter not taking that due care as became him' (Richard Abbott PRO CO184/1/19, 22/4/1706). However, later that year, when Parke arrived in the Caribbean, he immediately seized the opportunity to criticize, and blamed the whole affair on Johnson and Codrington's mismanagement. He accused Johnson, amongst other things, of having taken all the good guns to Nevis, which were 'now all destroyed' (PRO CO152/6, 15/7/1706) by the French. Although Parke's comments were vicious, he was not Johnson's most dangerous enemy. John Pogson filled that role.

B 1.7 The death of Johnson

In September 1706, Johnson was on St. Christopher dining with a Mr Kimberson. At dinner, there was an angry exchange of words between Johnson and his old rival Pogson, tenant of William Freeman of St. Christopher. Freeman had lost possession of an estate under Codrington's Governorship in 1701, and felt he had been badly treated (Harlow 1989: 138). The affair was reported to England and although Codrington's name had been

unanimously cleared, bad feeling between Codrington and Freeman (and by their association with the two rivals, Johnson and Pogson) existed for many years after the event. In April 1704, this animosity was further developed when Johnson was tricked into passing illegal legislation on St. Christopher and was wrongly accused, by Pogson, of accepting a bribe to do the same. Johnson, when he discovered the lie, had removed Pogson from the Council of St. Christopher (PRO CO152/6, 4/1705). Pogson felt he had been wronged and wanted revenge.

As Johnson left dinner at Kimberson's, Pogson followed him out. Riding home, Johnson stopped to tie his breeches and was caught by Pogson, who drew a pistol and shot him. According to Colonel Richard Payne, who witnessed the event, Johnson said "'I am barbarously murdered'" and '...dismounted his horse and lay down on his back'. It had not appeared to Payne that the event had been a duel and, in his statement, he confirmed this by saying that Johnson was unarmed (PRO CO152/7, 14/10/1706). Johnson was dead, murdered, as Parke's stated, 'Coll. Codrington's martyr' (PRO CO152/6, 15/9/1706).

After Johnson's murder Parke's, now unchecked, complaints increased dramatically: 'I should have suspended Col. Johnson had he not died for I think he was wanting in his duty both before and after the taking of Nevis' (PRO CO239/1/15, 4/10/1706). He also accused Johnson of incompetence as an engineer: 'Collonell Johnson who understood nothing of the matter, poor man he could neither write nor read therefore twas not likely to understand fortification, put them to soe much charge in building of a little fort and platformes that were of noe use to him that I can't gett them now to do anything; there is here a trench as they called it that is a streight ditch and the ditch on the wrong side' (PRO CO152/6, 9/12/1706).

This last attack was clearly unfounded as Johnson's forts had defended Nevis admirably and were only let down by the incompetence of Colonel Burt and Colonel Butler at Green Bay. The charge against the trenches would, in 1734, be further refuted by Sir William Mathew, who commented that there was 'a good ditch and rampart...which may be repaired well to be defended' (PRO CO152/20/148, 31/8/1734).

By 2nd October 1706, Pogson had been captured and was in Fort Charles on St. Christopher, awaiting trial (PRO CO241/1, 2/10/1706). However, by the end of October Pogson was free, having been unanimously acquitted of murder by a jury of his fellow islanders, leading even Parke to complain of an unfair trial: 'had not my instructions tyed me up to the contrary I would have turned out all the twelve justices' (PRO CO153/9, 9/12/1706).

In November, Pogson's wife Sarah petitioned the Council of St. Christopher on behalf of her husband (PRO CO241/1, 23/11/1706) who had fled to England after Parke had threatened to charge him on a lesser count of stabbing Johnson (PRO CO152/7, 31/10/1706). By 1707, he had returned to Nevis and was triumphantly elected to the Assembly of St. Christopher after Queen Anne had ordered him turned out of office on the Council (PRO CO152/7, 17/4/1707; Dunn 1973: 144).

Meanwhile, Parke was still intent on persecuting Johnson and as he was now dead, he turned on his widow. Parke had arranged for Major Gore to administer Johnson's estate, but had since discovered that, at the time of his death, Johnson was due the profits of seven ships seized during his Governorship. Parke claimed that half of this prize was due to him, and that on doing his accounts after Johnson's estate had been settled, realized 'that Coll. Johnson owed me more than what I bought of ye administration came to' (PRO CO152/7, 8/3/1708) and that should there be any complaints of Johnson's widow against the settlement he will 'return all I had and lett her make ye most of it and lett her pay me my due...for should I take all manner of advantages of ye ships as Coll. Codrington and as by his advice Johnson did' (PRO CO152/7, 8/3/1708).

By 1710, the general hatred of Parke was growing and he had been shot at a number of times. On one occasion, a Nevisian slave, firing at point blank range, caused Parke's horse to shy, leaving Parke to suffer only a wounded arm (Harlow 1989: 198). As complaints to England steadily grew, Queen Anne ordered him home to answer the charges against him. However, Parke delayed his return, even going so far as to break up a meeting of the Antiguan Assembly 'at bayonet point' (Dunn 1973: 145).

The Antiguanians were infuriated by this act and, while Parke hastily barricaded his house, raised 300 armed men against him. On 7th December matters came to a head and Parke was ordered to leave Antigua. He refused and fired cannon at the assembled rebels. An exchange of fire ensued and a bullet in the leg felled Parke. The rebels immediately set upon him, beating him to death (Walter Hamilton PRO CO153/11, 23/2/1711).

Thus ended the life of Johnson's most publicized critic. In the months that followed, his murderers could not be identified, and in the end no-one was prosecuted. As Dunn (1973: 146) states: 'it was scarcely feasible to prosecute the entire island population'. Parke had received the same fate as Johnson, albeit under far different circumstances, and the killers of both remained free. The dangers of being a Governor in the Caribbean had now been proved, twice.

B 1.8 Conclusion

Whatever the precise details of Johnson's life, he was clearly exceptional in Caribbean military history. Born without wealth or status, he rose through the ranks to become Governor of the Leeward Islands. It is impossible to say what would have happened had he survived. In all probability, Parke would have suspended him from duty. In time, Johnson would probably have redeemed himself, as many others before and after him did. The next obvious step for a soldier such as Johnson would be to become Colonel of his own regiment, possibly returning to Britain. Another common path followed by ex-officials and soldiers was to remain in the Leeward Islands as planters, slave owners.

This part of the history of Johnson must not be forgotten. As the architect of Nevis defences in the early 18th century, Johnson would have been part of the slave culture of the Caribbean, ordering slaves to work on the defences of Nevis. He probably aspired to be a slave owner: the ultimate achievement of the Caribbean self-made man. Therefore, while acknowledging the achievements of this man it is important not to forget the many slaves who made his designs a reality; they were the true builders of his forts

Appendix C - Gazetteer of archaeological and historical information

C 1 Gazetteer description

C 1.1 Introduction

The Gazetteer has been compiled from the author's historical research and from archaeological evidence recovered during fieldwork. In the majority of cases, the historical evidence has been transcribed from original documents and, to maximise objectivity, original spellings and grammar have been retained. The only exception to this is in the case of the Calendars of State Papers, where the transcriptions of the Calendars' compiler have been reproduced as written.

A series of historical maps of Nevis is included in Section C1.3 (Figs. C1a-C1m). Other maps are known to have existed, but unfortunately, copies of these were not available to the author. These include a British map of 1792. A map of fort locations, sent by John Johnson to Britain in 1705, could also not be located in any library or archive. It is assumed that this map has been lost in antiquity.

Also included in C1.3 is a map with all known forts, batteries and gun emplacements marked (Fig. C1l), and a photo profile of the western coast of Nevis showing the positions of the forts on this coast (Fig. C1m). Included in Section C1.4 is a list of the forts arranged, running clockwise, around the island from New River in the east to Newcastle in the north.

Sections C2-C43 form the bulk of the Gazetteer and include all historical and archaeological material uncovered by the author, arranged in the same order given in Section C1.4. The information for each fort and military site in Sections C2-43 has been organised systematically and includes ten sections of information:

- 0.1 Notes.
- 0.2 Grid Reference (taken from the OS 1:25,000 Map of Nevis, 1984).
- 0.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date.
- 0.4 Descriptions from other sources.
- 0.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition.
- 0.6 Evidence for manning.
- 0.7 The fort at war.

- 0.8 Archaeological evidence.
- 0.9 Artefactual evidence.
- 0.10 Discussion.

C 1.2 Key to References

Each historical document is referenced to source using the following key:

1) PRO = Public Record Office, Kew, London. This archive was renamed ‘The National Archive’ in 2003, but for ease of recognition, the name PRO has been retained.

Within the Public Record Office the following references are given:

CO = Colonial Office Series

WO = War Office Series

ADM = Admiralty Office Series

CSP = Calendar of State Papers, Colonial Series

The standard referencing protocol of “(PRO Series Number/Piece/Page: date of the manuscript)” has been used throughout the text. Where the author of the manuscript is known this has also been added at the beginning of the reference.

2) BL = British Library Manuscript, London.

3) NARCH = Nevis Historical and Conservation Society Archive, Charlestown, Nevis.

C 1.3 Maps of Nevis

The maps below come from a variety of sources including the Nevis Historical and Conservation Society Archive (NARCH), the Public Record Office (PRO) and the British Library (BL).

To aid comparison, all maps have been orientated with north at the top of the page. The eleven historic maps that have been located by the author are generally accurate and would appear to show the fort locations correctly. However, in the case of Figures, C1c, C1d, C1f, C1g and C1h an element of caution is advised.

C 1.3.1 Maps C1c, C1d, C1f, C1g and C1h

It would appear that these maps originate from the source maps C1c or C1d, which have then been copied with minor changes, over many years. The original maps, C1c and C1d, are both French intelligence maps and it is uncertain whether these were made by a mapmaker who was familiar with the island, or whether they result from hearsay and second-hand knowledge. The author suspects that they arise from a certain amount of first-hand knowledge of the island, although it would appear that much of the coastal information has been added from a view of the island 'from the sea'. Indeed, this interpretation is borne out by the fact that although many Nevisian towns, forts and roads have been placed correctly, the French mapmakers obviously did not know the names of these places. For example, Jamestown is placed correctly, but is called 'Petit Bourg' [little town], suggesting that its true name was unknown. The French map of 1758 (Fig. C1f) would appear to be a French copy of maps C1c and C1d. The 1782 and 1810 maps (Fig. C1g and C1h) were produced by English mapmakers.

Despite their varied ages, nationalities and markings, some clues to their accuracy can be gleaned. When compared with modern maps and the author's fort location plans in maps C1c, C1d and C1f, the west coast of the island is shown extremely accurately. However, the same cannot be said for the east coast. In all three maps, Newcastle is shown as being next to a cove on the east of the island. The other place marked on the east coast is 'Fort au Vent'. Long Point Fort, which should be on the south-west of the island, is shown at point N, almost due south (Fig. C1f).

From the illustrated shape of the map, it would appear that 'Fort au Vent' should be in the vicinity of New River. Indeed, in map C1f the mapmaker has replaced 'Fort au Vent' with 'La Riviere Neuve' [New River]. However, if one turns the map c.45° clockwise, it is apparent that Fort au Vent should in fact be Indian Castle: the misshapen illustration of the island, however, disguises this fact. This theory is supported by the fact that Indian Castle is not marked on the map, even though the fort was present at this date.

In the English maps C1g and C1h, the latter of which appears to be an almost direct copy of the former, although Newcastle is not named as the cove site with the battery, this feature is still shown. At the Fort au Vent site, although a battery and church is still shown, the name, as in map C1f, has had the name New River added. It would therefore appear that the English mapmakers, knowing that Newcastle was not on the east coast, and knowing that New River was, have added their interpretation of the site locations. Thus, the name New River has been added and Newcastle placed in its correct

location to the north of the island. However, in retaining the batteries behind the cove and next to the church, this renaming has further confused the situation.

Therefore, it would appear that all five maps have elements of truth and fallacy. As the original French maps C1c and C1d were almost certainly ‘spy’ maps, this is to be expected. In summary, although they are generally useful and interesting, the author believes that all five maps should be treated with caution.

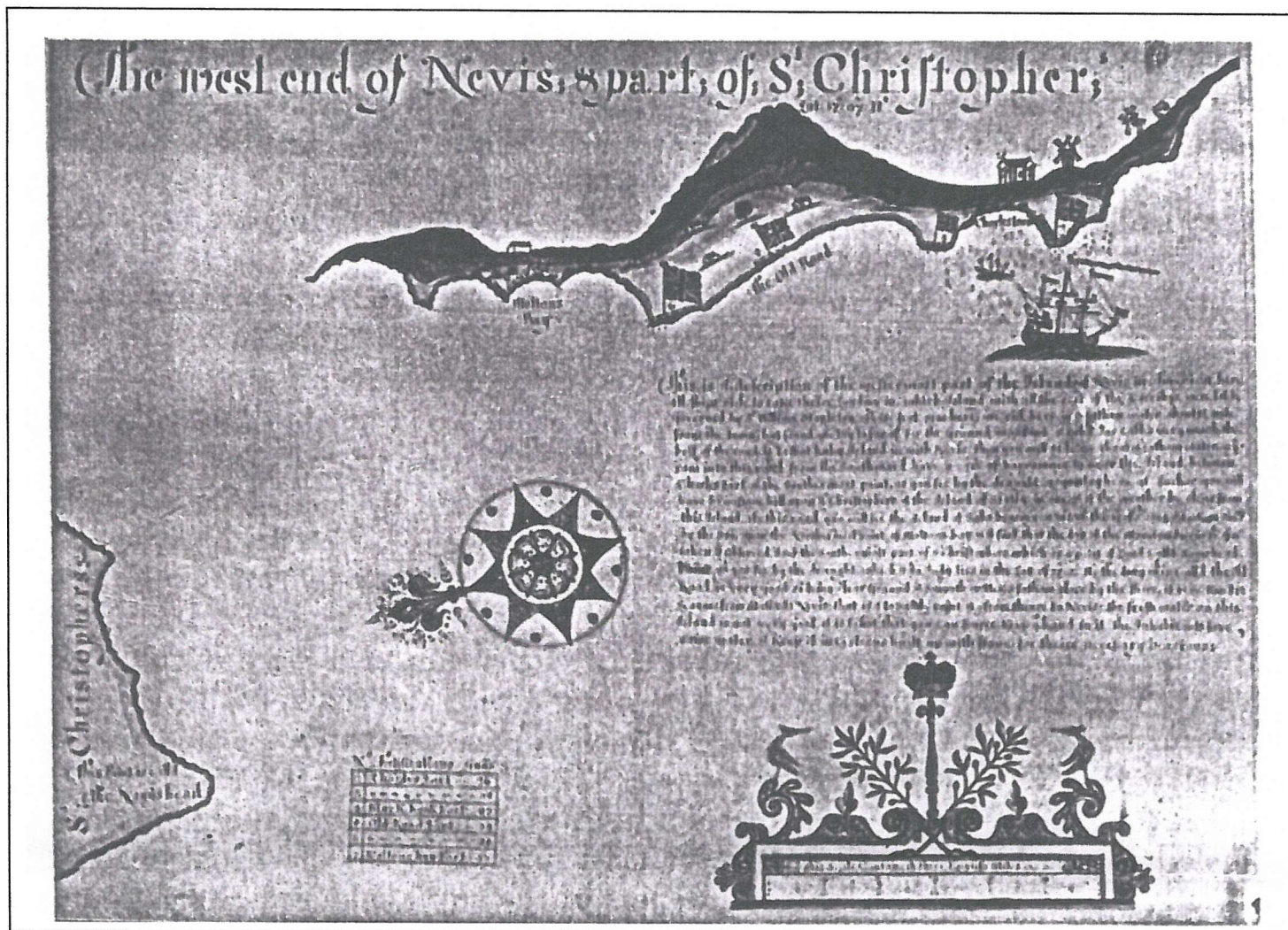


Figure C1a) 'The west end of Nevis and part of St. Christopher' by William Hack, 1687 (BL Sloane 45.35)

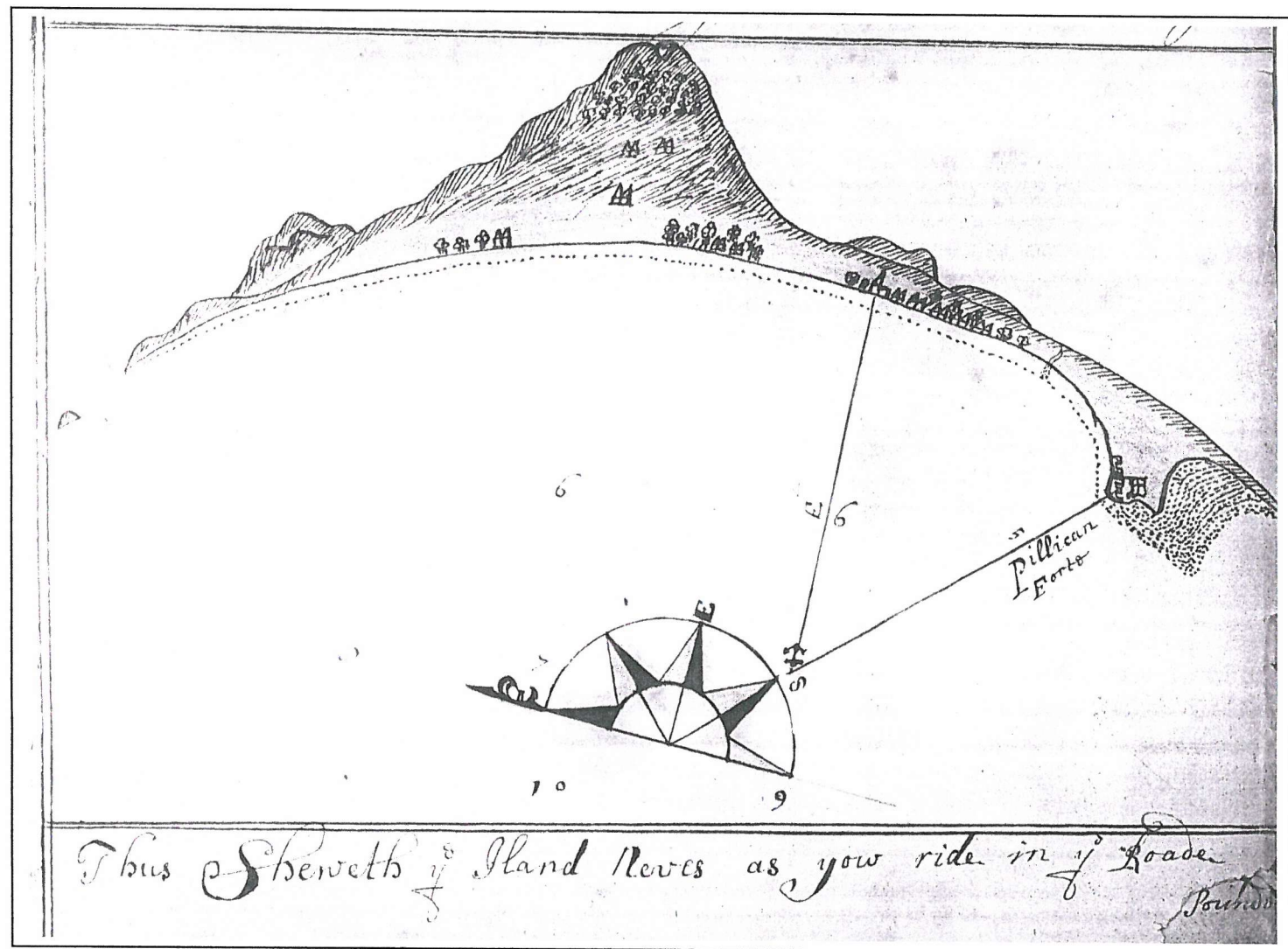


Figure C1b) 'Thus sheweth the island Neves as you ride in the roade' by Robert Thompson, Master of HMS Benbow, 1700 (PRO ADM7/833)

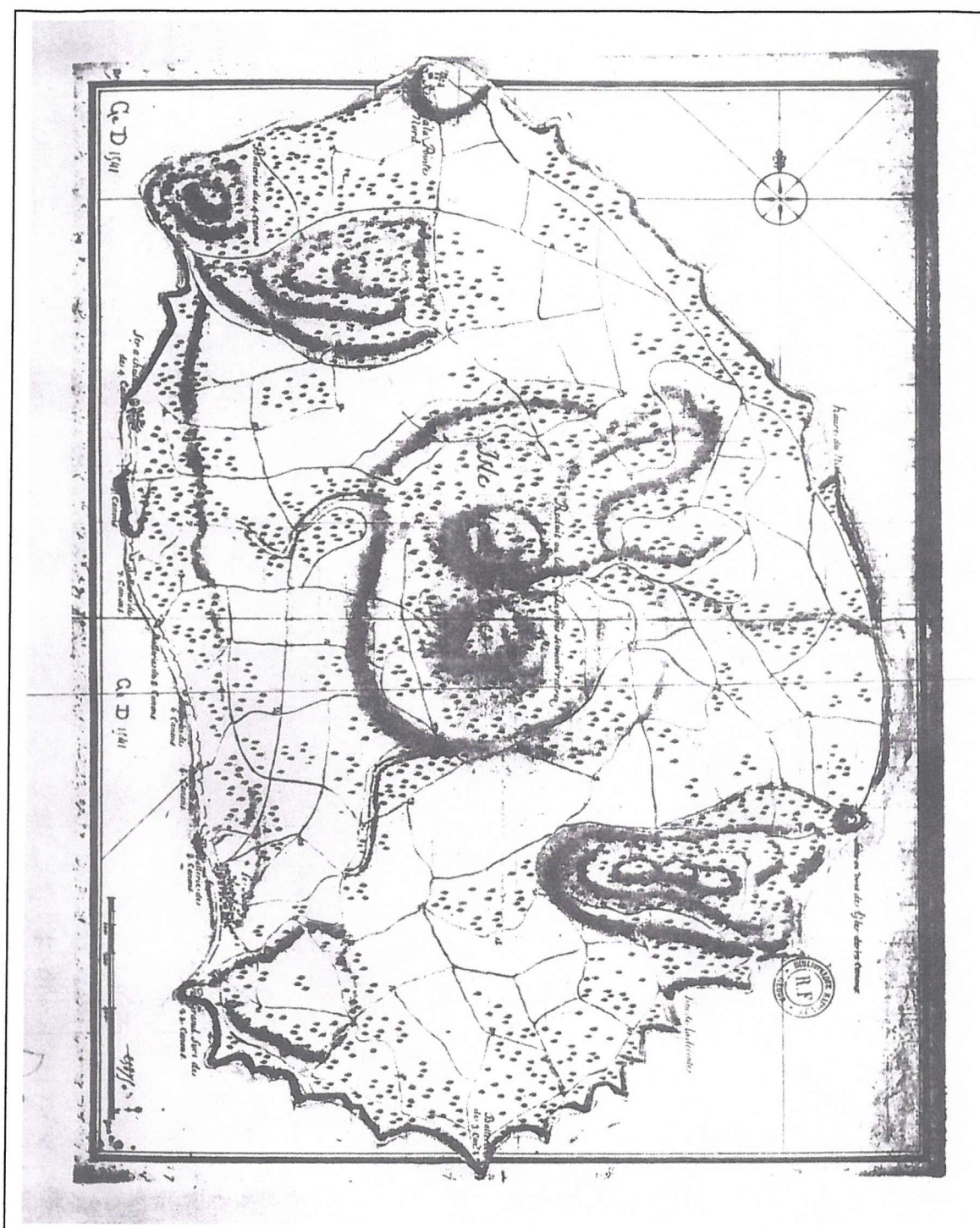


Figure C1c) French map of Nevis, ?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in the Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: G e SH Pf 154 Div 22 P5)

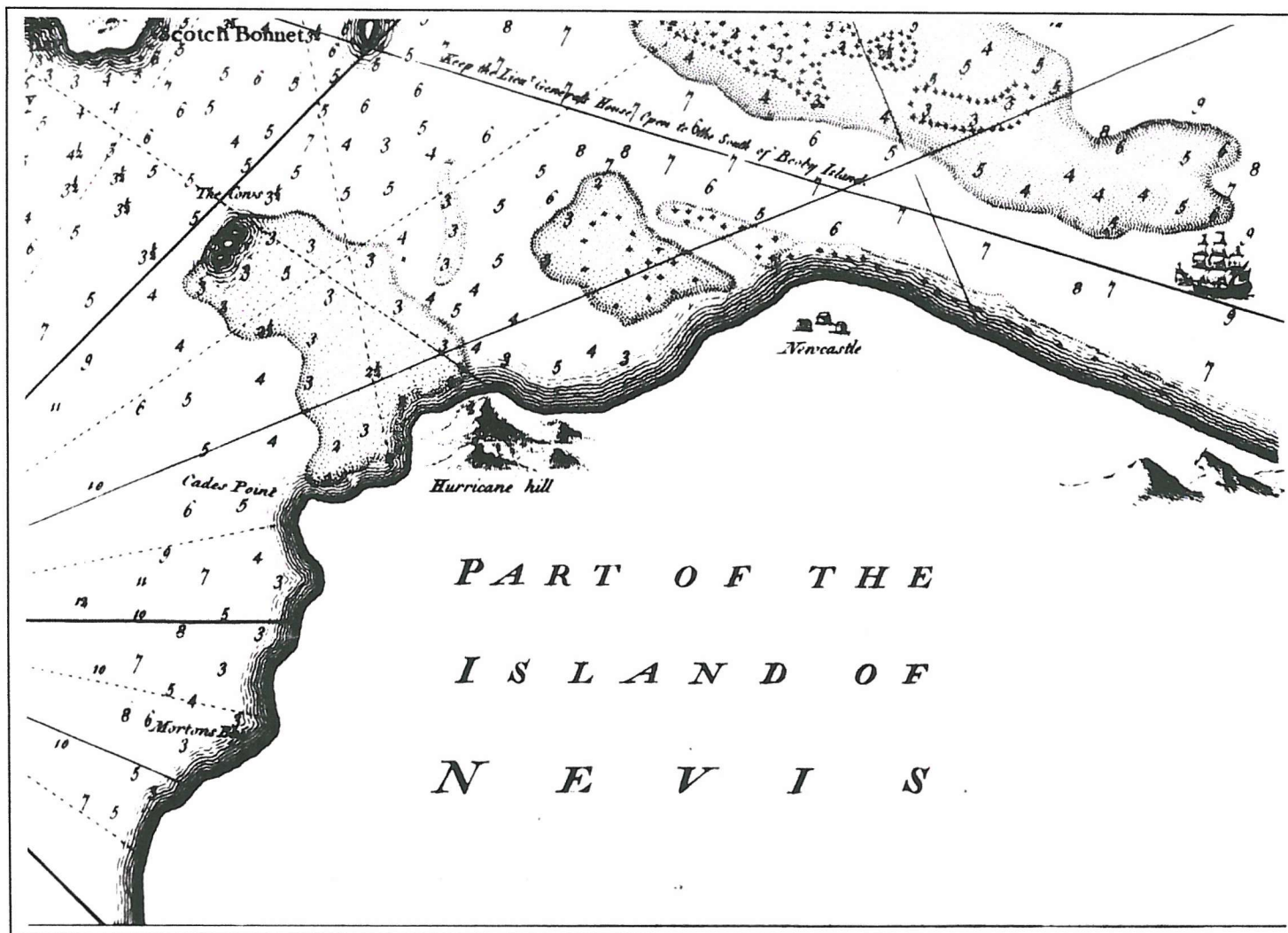


Figure C1e) Map of northern Nevis, 1753 (PRO CO700/ST. CHRISTOPHER AND NEVIS/5)

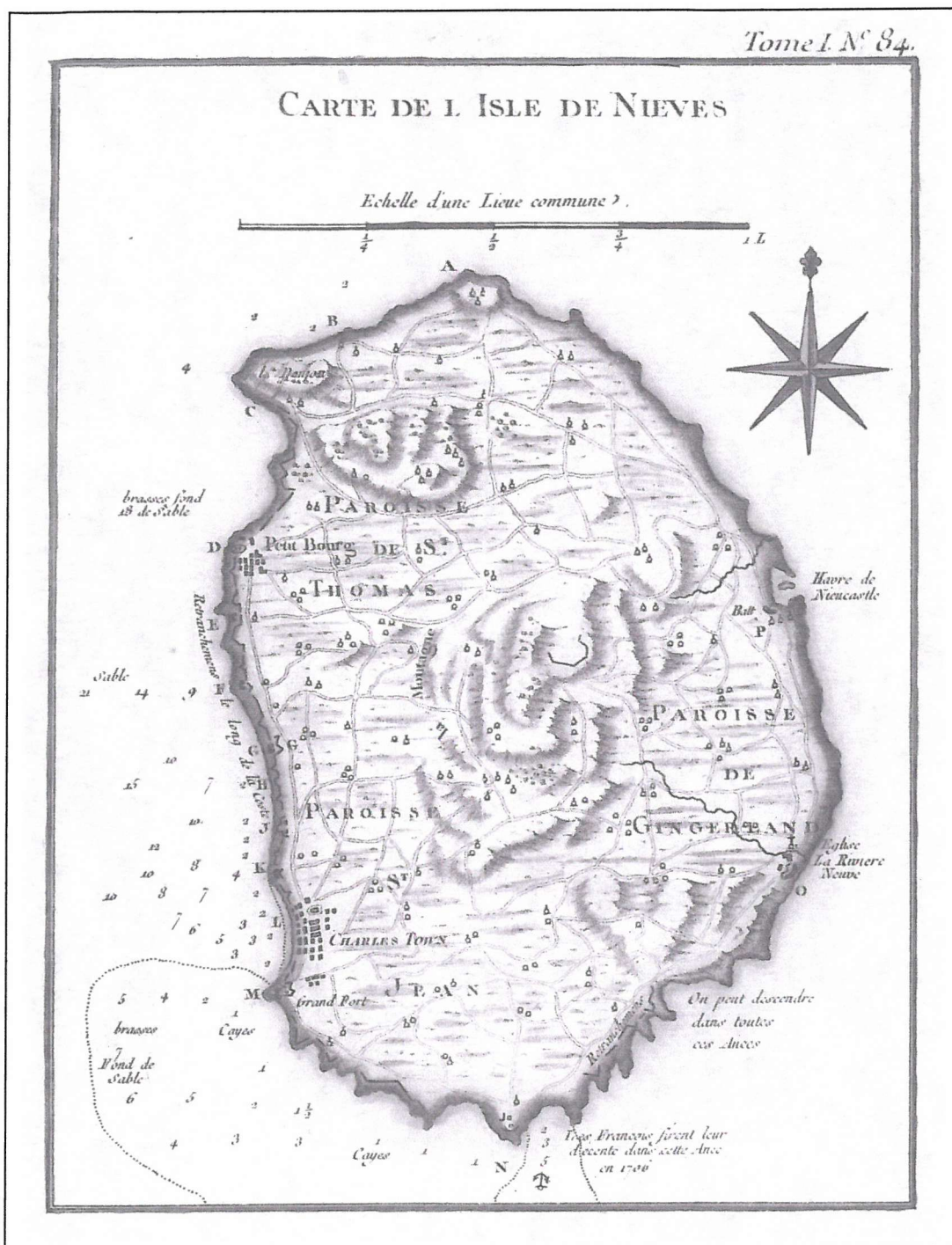


Figure C1f) French Map from 'Geographical description of the Antilles islands possessed by the English' by M. Bellin, 1758 (NARCH).

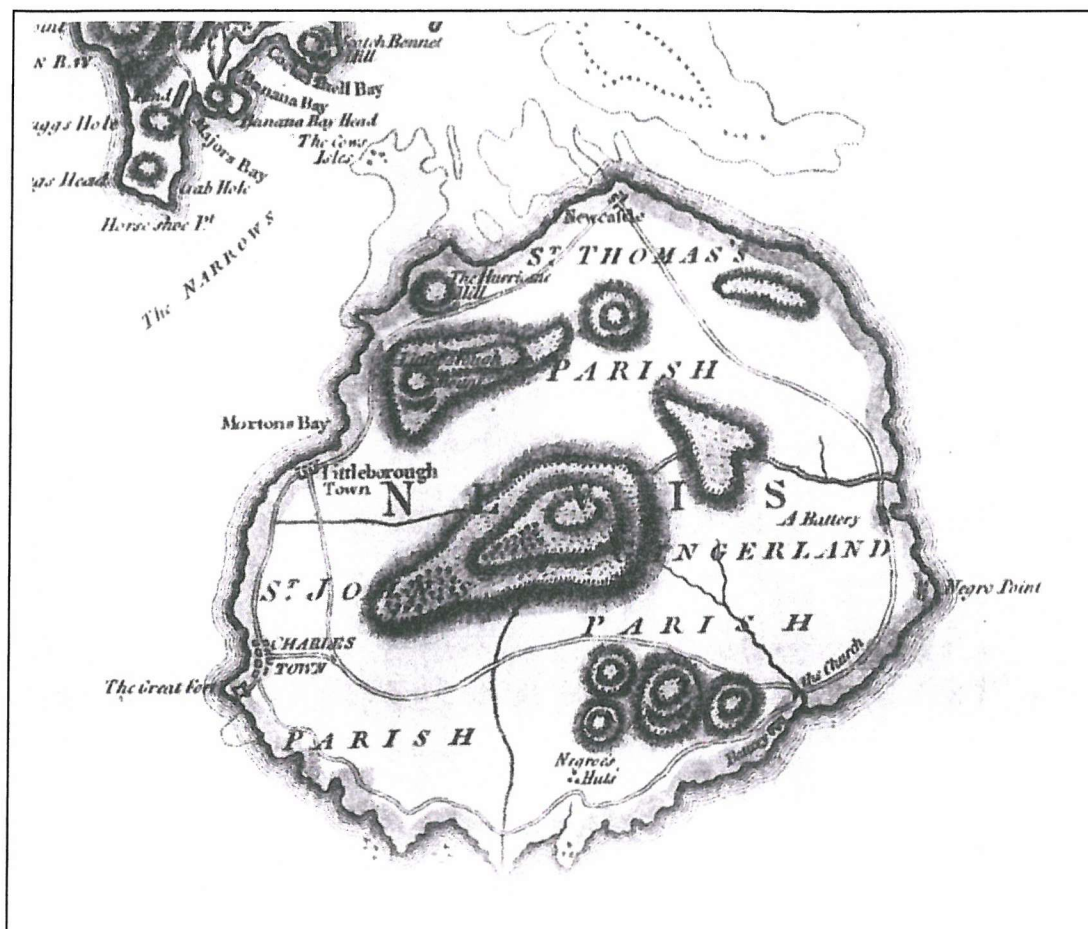


Figure C1g) 'An accurate map of the islands of St. Christopher and Nevis in the West Indies, by an officer', 1782 (NARCH).

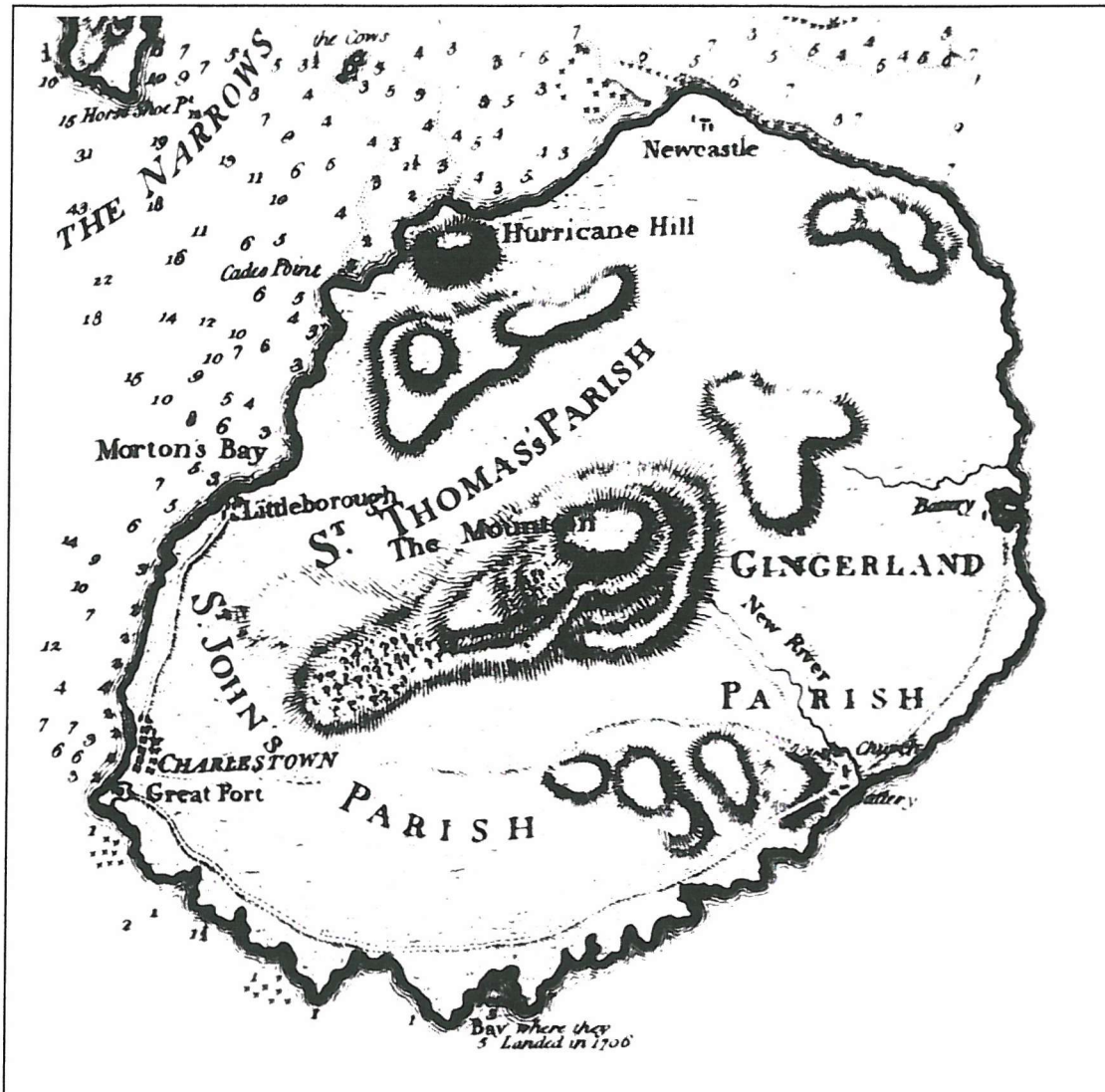


Figure C1h) 'Nevis, by Sir Thomas Jefferys' 1810 (PRO CO700/ST. CHRISTOPHER AND NEVIS/6)

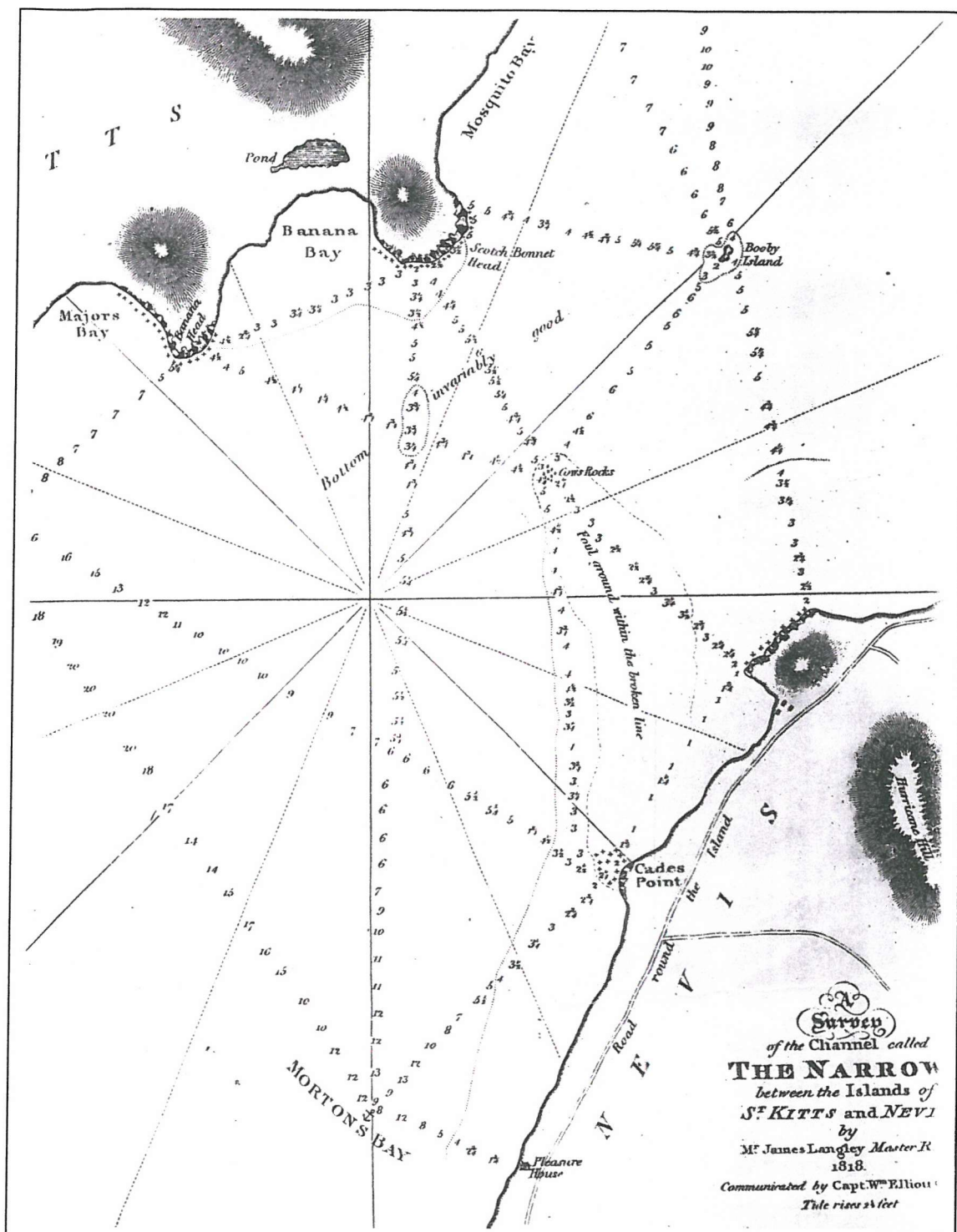


Figure C1i) 'Survey of the channel called The Narrows, between the islands of St. Kitts and Nevis' by Mr James Langley', 1818 (NARCH)

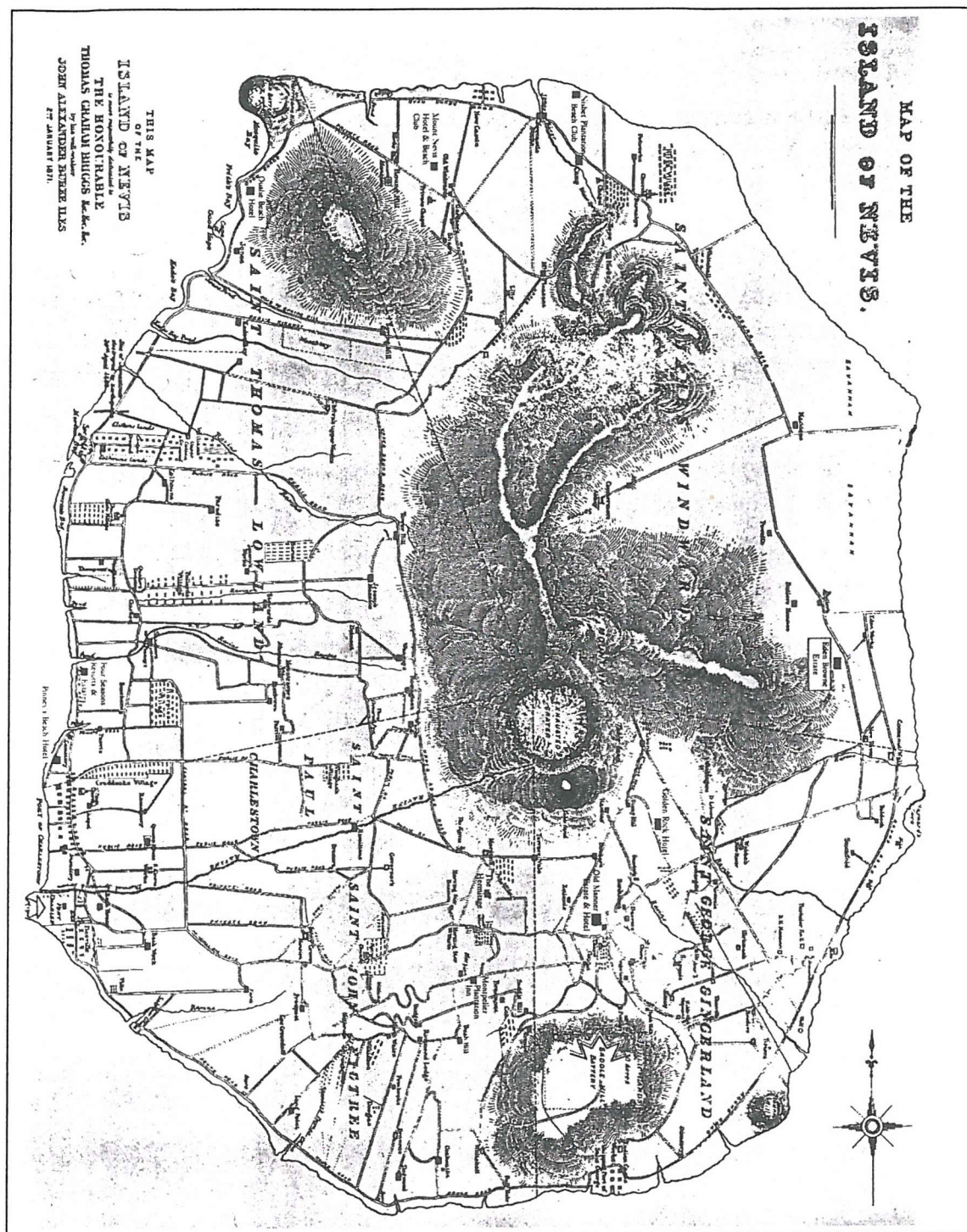


Figure C1k) Map of Nevis from 'An account descriptive of the island of Nevis, West Indies' by John Alexander Burke Isles (BL 10470.i.7).

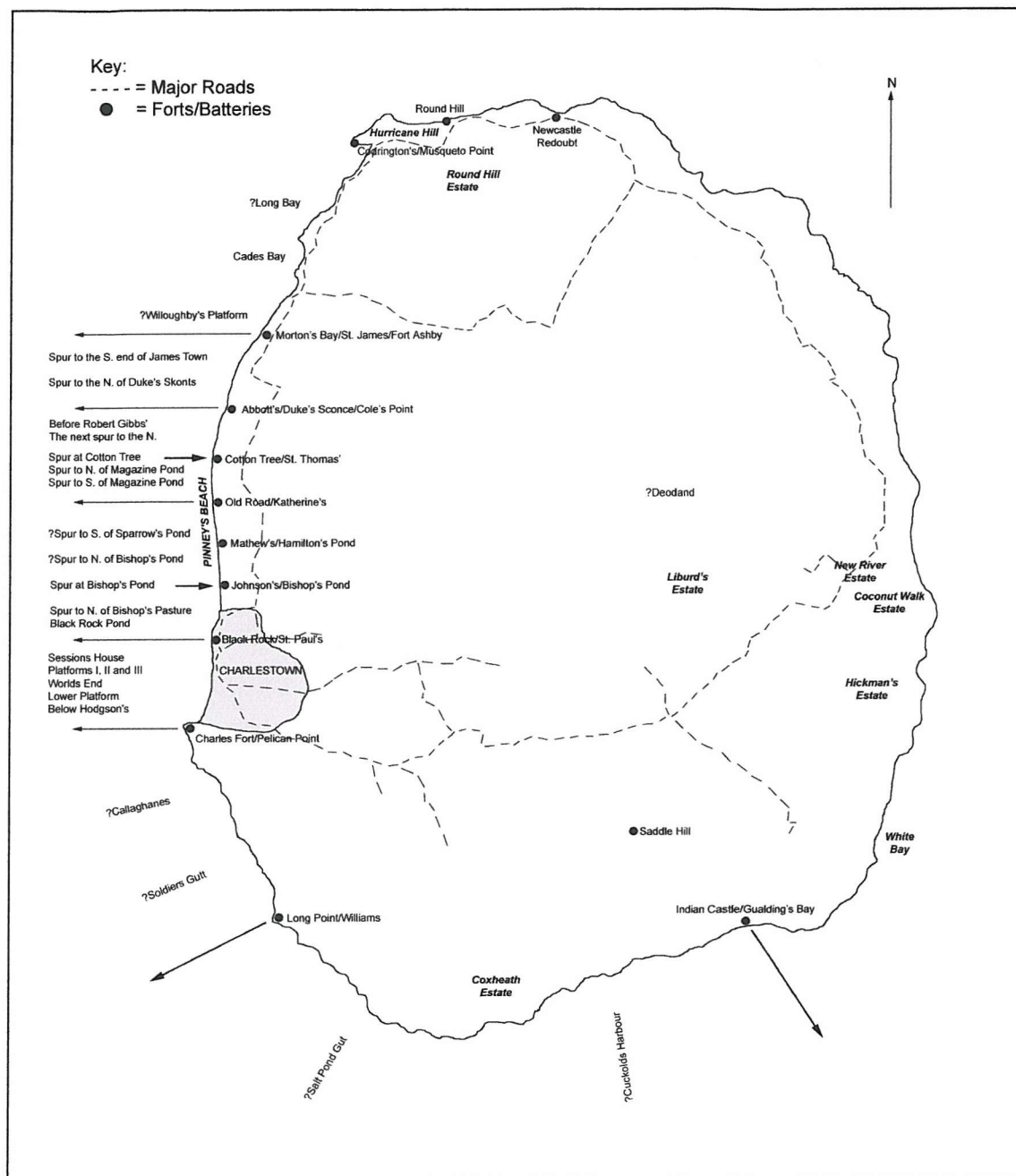


Figure C11) Map of Nevis showing locations of forts, batteries and gun emplacements



Figure C1m) Photographic profile of the west coast of Nevis showing visible fort locations.

C 1.4 Order of forts/batteries and gun emplacements, running from south-west clockwise to north (Fig. C11).

C 1.4.1 Coastal Forts, batteries and gun emplacements:

- C2 ?New River (This battery is almost certainly Indian Castle, see C1.3.1)
- C3 Indian Castle/Gualding's Bay/St. Anne's
- C4 Cuckolds Harbour
- C5 Salt Pond Gut
- C6 Long Point/William's/William and Mary's
- C7 Soldiers Gutt
- C8 Callaghanes Bay
- C9 Charles Fort/Fort Charles/Pelican Point
- C10 Below Christopher Hodgson's House
- C11 Lower Platform
- C12 Worlds End
- C13 Platform II
- C14 Platform III (or later versions of platforms I and II)
- C15 Platform I/Sessions House
- C16 Black Rock/St. Paul's
- C17 Black Rock Pond
- C18 Spur to the north of Bishop's Pasture
- C19 & C20 Spur at Bishop's Pond → ?becomes Johnson's/Bishop's Pond
- C21 Spur to the north of Bishop's Pond
- C22 Mathew's/Hamilton's Pond
- C23 Spur to the south of Sparrow's Pond
- C24 Old Road/Katherine's
- C25 Spur to the south of Magazine Pond
- C26 Spur to the north of Magazine Pond
- C27 & C28 Spur at Cotton Tree → becomes Cotton Tree/St. Thomas'
- C29 Next Spur to the north
- C30 Before Robert Gibb's
- C31 Duke's Sconce → ?becomes Abbott's/Cole's Point
- C32 Spur to the north of Duke's Skonts
- C33 Spur to the south of James Town

C34	Morton's Bay/St. James'/Fort Ashby
C35	Willoughby's platform
C36	Cades Bay
C37	Long Bay
C38	Codrington's/Musqueto Point
C39	Round Hill
C40	Newcastle Redoubt

C 1.4.2 Interior forts/batteries and miscellaneous defences:

C41	Saddle Hill
C42	Deodand/Deodan
C43	Entrenchments/Trenches (for locations see Figs. C1c, C1d & C1f).

C 2 New River

C 2.1 Notes:

This battery is only referenced in three maps (Figs. C1f, C1g & C1h) and could not be located archaeologically or historically. These maps (from 1758, 1782 and 1810) locate various other Nevis locations incorrectly, for example, Newcastle is shown on the east of the island. The author believes that the battery identified in these maps is actually Indian Castle (for reasoning, see C1.3.1). In the absence of further corroborating evidence, the presence of a fort at New River is unlikely.

C 2.2 Grid ref.: W 62° 32' 33", N 17° 08' 43"

C 2.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

1672 (PRO CO154/1/114, CSP1669-1674, 1013): 'Laws Regulations and orders in force at the Leeward Islands, 1668-1672: Bath Bay, Ould Road, Morton's Bay, New Windward and Indian Castle should be lawful shipping places for any goods'. It is reasonable to assume New Windward refers to New River.

1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin': The 'Fort au Vent' is shown on the east side of the island in the vicinity of New River, at position O (Fig. C1f). Clearly the position has been misidentified.

1782 (NARCH): 'An accurate map of the islands of St. Christophers and Nevis in the West Indies by an Officer with the positions of the English and French fleets' (Fig. C1g): a battery is shown next to the church on New River Ghut.

1810 (PRO CO700 ST.CHRISTOPHERANDNEVIS/6): Map of St. Christopher and Nevis: A battery is shown as being next to the church (Fig. C1h).

C 2.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 2.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition: N/A

C 2.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 2.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 2.8 Archaeological evidence:

The area in the vicinity of New River ghut and estate was extensively walked. However, although several plantation remains were located, no military remains could be found.

C 2.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 2.10 Discussion:

The New River battery appears on only three maps of the late 18th/early 19th centuries. All three maps appear highly inaccurate and would seem to be copies of earlier French maps of the early 18th century. No mention of a battery at this position is made in other contemporary documents and it is likely that the position of the battery represents confusion over identification.

It is, however, possible that the battery was only an alarm gun position/temporary gun emplacement. In this scenario, it is likely that a single cannon, placed on a wooden platform would have been present. This type of position may only have been used for a short period of time and would therefore not have merited mention. Such an emplacement would have left little evidence archaeologically.

It is probable that Indian Castle is the fort that was mistaken for New River, as Indian Castle does not appear on any of the maps identifying New River (see C1.3.1). However, without further information this theory is difficult to prove or disprove.

C 3 Indian Castle/Galding's Bay/St. Anne's/Gualding's Bay/Gualden('s) Bay/Galden Bay
Fort

C 3.1 Notes:

Indian Castle is the earliest and most common name for this area (first used in 1672). The fort appears to have been constructed by Johnson in 1705, after Indian Castle becomes one of the larger ports on Nevis. The name Gualding's/ Gualden(s)/ Galden/ Galding's Bay probably refers to its location rather than to the fort name proper. Although probably one of the first forts to be reduced by the French in 1706, the fort survived in limited use, with two cannon and a gunner being present at the fort. By the late 18th century the fort appears to have been abandoned.

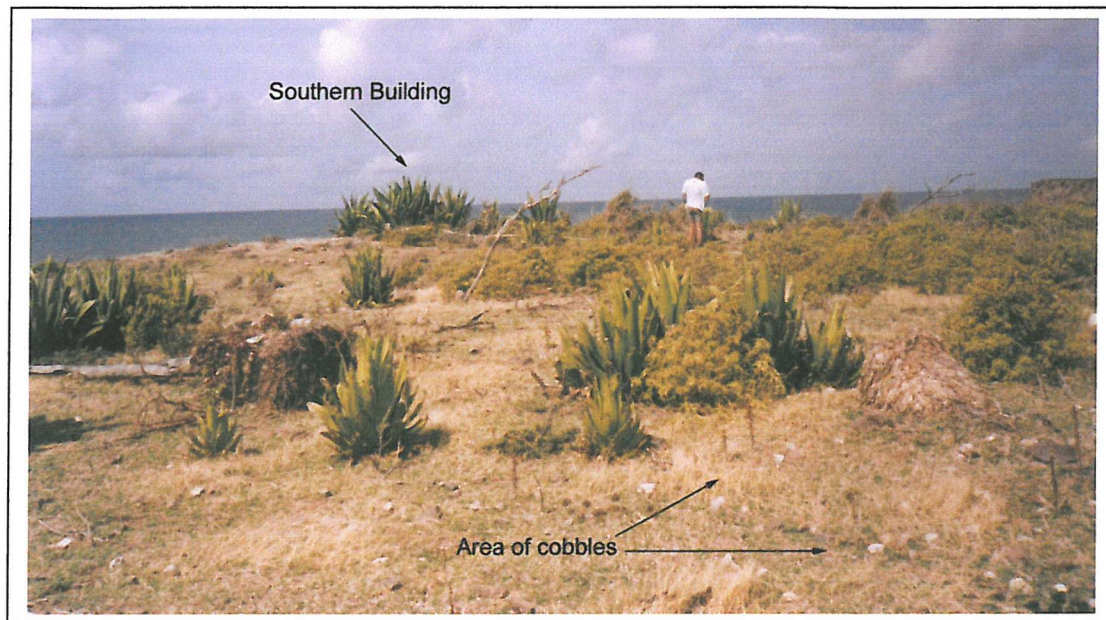


Figure C3a) The site at Indian Castle, May 1999.

C 3.2 Grid ref: W 62° 33' 53", N 17° 06' 24"

C 3.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

1672 (PRO CO154/1/114, CSP1669-1674, 1013): 'Laws Regulations and orders in force at the Leeward Islands, 1668-1672: Bath Bay, Ould Road, Morton's Bay, New Windward and Indian Castle should be lawful shipping places for any goods'.

?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P 5): French Intelligence Map: 'Fort at the windward of the island of twelve cannon' shown (Fig. C1c).

?1703 (NARCH): 'Par Beauvilliers' French Intelligence Map: 'Fort at the windward of the island of twelve cannon' shown (Fig. C1d).

11/5/1704 (PRO CO185/1): Nevis Act: 'An act for making Indian Castle a shipping place'.

c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): 'A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty's island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in

Chief of all her Majesty's Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereign lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep': 'Indian Castle fort made to hold fourteen guns, with ten guns viz. eight sakers, two 3lbers [no stores of any kind]'

6/1705 (PRO CO153/9): Nevis Act: 'An Act to make Indian Castle a lawful shipping place'.

15/9/1705 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1704-5, 1344): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...[position] A: A small fort erected by me to the windward of the island commanding a very calm bay fitt for small vessels to ride in butt especially if should be chas'd by any privateers have the opportunity of getting in there when perhaps are not able to weather the island soe far as to reach the main road, its call'd St. Anne's fort or commonly known by the name of Indian Castle it is furnisht with twelve guns, the wall ten foot thick and nine foot high stands upon a clift, the ground would allow noe other figure within which stands a stone built guardhouse cover'd with shingles, two rooms below, one for the officers and another for the souldiers with lofts overhead for arms and ammunition, a standing guard there of eleven men with spare arms for fifty, its quitt finisht except some guns...The ambusiers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'.

15/9/1705 (PRO CO700 ST.CHRISTOPHER AND NEVIS/2): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: Johnson's fort plans show a triangular shaped structure with blunted points (Fig. C3b). One face of the triangle forms the gun platform (c.35 yards long) with the other two walls (c.37 yards long) tapering to the rear of the fort. Ten embrasures occur on the southern walls. An entrance gateway is shown on the northern side. A guardhouse and circular feature (possibly a cistern/well) are shown on the interior. The gun platform is c.8 yards wide and the walls are 3 yards thick on the gun platform and 1½ yards thick on the other walls.

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'An accompt of what new forts wee have lately built and where, what old ones repaired and the changes wee have beene at to doe the same': 'At Galdings Bay a complete new ffort with a guardhouse, platforme and cisterne all of stone and lime, £1400. Long guns much wanting for this ffort'.

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis: 'An account of the proceeding of the French fleet against Nevis February 1706': The French comprised '...in all thirty six sayle'. '...forty of the Queen's soldiers that were at Antigua and were forced to take shelter and land the men at Gualdings Bay being chased by a French man of warr and a sloop'.

19/3/1706 (PRO CO153/9): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...[position] A: A small fort erected by me to the windward of the island commanding a very calm bay fitt for small vessels to ride in butt especially if should be chas'd by any privateers have the opportunity of getting in there when perhaps are not able to weather the island soe far as to

reach the main road, its call'd St. Anne's fort or commonly known by the name of Indian Castle it is furnisht with twelve guns, the wall ten foot thick and nine foot high stands upon a clift, the ground would allow noe other figure within which stands a stone built guardhouse cover'd with shingles, two rooms below, one for the officers and another for the souldiers with lofts overhead for arms and ammunition, a standing guard there of eleven men with spare arms for fifty, its quitt finisht except some guns... The ambusiers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'.

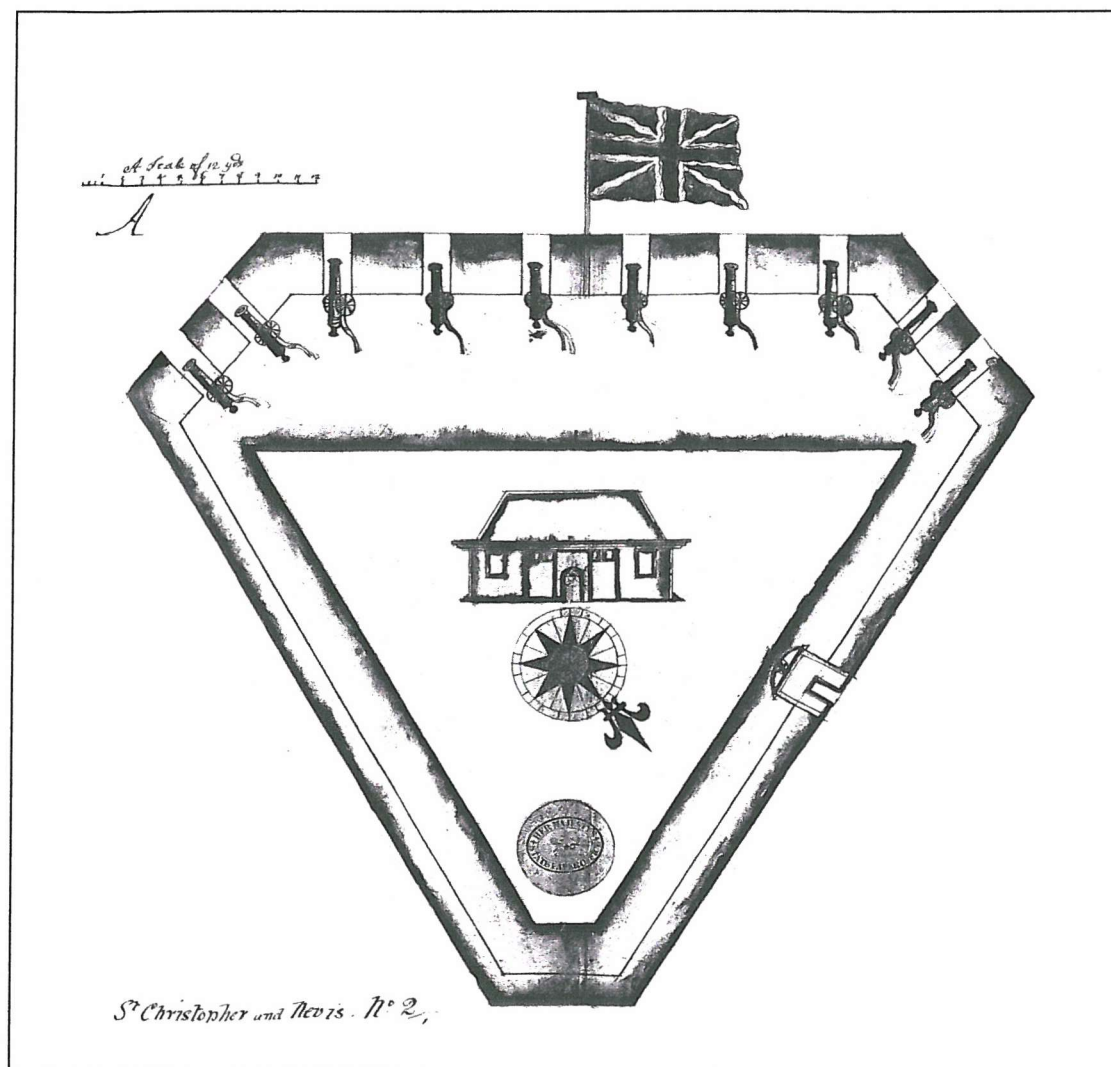


Figure C3b) Governor Johnson's plan of Indian Castle Fort, 1705

- 22/4/1706 (PRO CO184/1/19, CSP1706-8, 282): Richard Abbott to Sir C. Hedges: 'The enemy stole a landing at Green Bay where was posted Col. Burt and thirty men at Long Point and Lt. Col. Butler and forty men at Gualdings Point: the former leaving his post and the latter not taking that due care as became him...platforms will not fight themselves'.
- 15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: 'An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores': 'Galdings Bay has nothing'.
- 3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): 'An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island': 'Galdens Bay Fort guns dismounted three rabinetts'.

- 31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...At Galding's Bay fort there are one or two unserviceable old gunns'.
- 20/6/1755 (PRO CO152/28): Charles Payne: 'An account of ordnance their condition, the condition of the carriages, quantity of shot, powder and all other military stores': 'The gunner has reported to us that there are 2 pair more of iron wheels belonging to the fort, but sent to Mr. Vincent at Indian Castle by order of the Honourable the President'.
- 1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin': 'Fort au Vent [Windward fort] with twelve pieces' shown in position O (Fig. C1f) at Indian Castle but described, incorrectly, as being at New River. This map appears to be a copy of the earlier, ?1703 French maps (Figs. C1c & C1d) and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century situation rather than that of the mid 18th century.
- 23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/31/11): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Gaulden Bay Fort: two 12lbbers in good condition.
- 23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/49/21): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Gaulden Bay Fort: two 12lbbers in good condition.
- 1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'To the southeast of this battery [Cuckolds Harbour] about two miles is a fort in a most ruinous condition on which are two good 12lbbers mounted the carriages in very bad order. This fort is called Gauldens Bay fort and is situated on the southernmost point of this island'.
- 20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'To the southeast of this battery [Cuckolds Harbour] about two miles is a fort in a most ruinous condition on which are two good 12lbbers mounted the carriages in very bad order. This fort is called Gauldens Bay fort and is situated on the southernmost point of this island'.
- 8/11/1775 (PRO CO186/7): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: George Webbe is appointed gunner at Indian Castle.
- 1782 (NARCH): 'An accurate map of the islands of St. Christophers and Nevis in the West Indies by an Officer with the positions of the English and French fleets' (Fig. C1g): A battery, is shown next to a church (see C1.3.1).
- 1810 (PRO CO700 ST.CHRISTOPHERANDNEVIS/6): Map of St. Christopher and Nevis: A battery is shown next to a church on the New River ghut (Fig. C1h). However, New River ghut has been wrongly placed and the battery shown is probably Indian Castle (see C1.3.1).

C 3.4 Descriptions from other sources:

- 2/3/1982 (NARCH): Letter from Franklin R. Paddock to Richard Lupanacci: 'Indian Harbor battery: This battery shown on old maps served as a protection for the fort on Saddle Hill. Within memory of living man all of the guns here were once on the shore atop a cliff at the Atlantic's edge. In my personal observation, some three or four years ago there were four cannon in the shallow sea near the shore but they disappeared after Hurricane David in the summer of '81. There were two cannon muzzles visible sticking high out of the embankment here which gradually became more

prominent...they similarly disappeared after David, but one is visible right next to the base of the cliff from time to time in the sand. A very rusted gun still lies on the cliff a number of feet from its edge’.

C 3.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P 5):

‘Fort at the windward of the island of twelve cannon’ shown (Fig. C1c).

?1703 (NARCH): ‘Par Beauvilliers’ French Intelligence Map: ‘Fort at the windward of the island of twelve cannon’ shown (Fig. C1d).

c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): ‘A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty’s island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty’s Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereign lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep’: ‘Indian Castle fort made to hold fourteen guns, with ten guns viz. eight sakers, two 3lbers [no stores of any kind]’.

15/9/1705 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1704-5, 1344): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: ‘...it is furnisht with twelve guns...within which stands a stone built guardhouse cover’d with shingles, two rooms below, one for the officers and another for the souldiers with lofts overhead for arms and ammunition, a standing guard there of eleven men with spare arms for fifty, its quitt finisht except some guns’.

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: ‘An accompt of what new forts wee have lately built and where, what old ones repaired and the changes wee have beene at to doe the same’: ‘At Galdings Bay...Long guns much wanting for this ffort’.

19/3/1706 (PRO CO153/9): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: ‘I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair’d by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac’t...it is furnisht with twelve guns...a stone built guardhouse cover’d with shingles, two rooms below, one for the officers and another for the souldiers with lofts overhead for arms and ammunition, a standing guard there of eleven men with spare arms for fifty, its quitt finisht except some guns’.

15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: ‘An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores’: ‘Galdings Bay has nothing’.

3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): ‘An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island’: ‘Galdens Bay Fort guns dismounted three rabinetts’.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: ‘...At Galding’s Bay fort there are one or two unserviceable old gunns’.

20/6/1755 (PRO CO152/28): Charles Payne: ‘An account of ordnance their condition, the condition of the carriages, quantity of shot, powder and all other military stores’: ‘The gunner has reported to us that there are 2 pair more of iron wheels belonging to the fort, but sent to Mr. Vincent at Indian Castle’.

1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin':
'Windward fort with twelve pieces' shown in position O (Fig. C1f).

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/31/11): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Gaulden Bay Fort: two 12lbbers in good condition.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/49/21): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Gaulden Bay Fort: two 12lbbers in good condition.

1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': '...on which are two good 12lbbers mounted the carriages in very bad order'.

20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': '...on which are two good 12lbbers mounted the carriages in very bad order.'.

C 3.6 Evidence for manning:

15/9/1705 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1704-5, 1344): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't... within which stands a stone built guardhouse cover'd with shingles, two rooms below, one for the officers and another for the souldiers with lofts overhead for arms and ammunition, a standing guard there of eleven men with spare arms for fifty, its quitt finisht except some guns'.

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis: 'An account of the proceeding of the French fleet against Nevis February 1706': The French comprised '...in all thirty six sayle'. '...Forty of the Queen's soldiers that were at Antigua and were forced to take shelter and land the men at Gualdings Bay being chased by a French man of warr and a sloop'.

19/3/1706 (PRO CO153/9): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't... within which stands a stone built guardhouse cover'd with shingles, two rooms below, one for the officers and another for the souldiers with lofts overhead for arms and ammunition, a standing guard there of eleven men with spare arms for fifty, its quitt finisht except some guns'.

22/4/1706 (PRO CO184/1/19, CSP1706-8, 282): Richard Abbott to Sir C. Hedges: 'The enemy stole a landing at Green Bay where was posted Col. Burt and thirty men at Long Point and Lt. Col. Butler and forty men at Gualdings Point: the former leaving his post and the latter not taking that due care as became him...platforms will not fight themselves'.

8/11/1775 (PRO CO186/7): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: George Webbe is appointed gunner at Indian Castle.

C 3.7 The fort at war:

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis: 'An account of the proceeding of the French fleet against Nevis February 1706': The French comprised '...in all thirty six sayle'. '...Forty of the Queen's soldiers that were at Antigua and were forced to take shelter and land the men at Gualdings Bay being chased by a French man of warr and a sloop'.

22/4/1706 (PRO CO184/1/19, CSP1706-8, 282): Richard Abbott to Sir C. Hedges: 'The enemy stole a landing at Green Bay where was posted Col. Burt and thirty men at Long Point and Lt. Col. Butler and forty men at Gualdings Point: the former leaving his post and the latter not taking that due care as became him...platforms will not fight themselves'.

C 3.8 Archaeological evidence:

This site, located on a slight promontory at the south-east of Nevis, was visited in May 1999 and in February and May 2000 (Fig. C3a). The site survives on a c.10m high cliff bounded to the east and west by ghut ravines. The eastern ghut is now dry, but the western ghut ends in a water-filled pond as it reaches the sea. Beyond this ghut, to the west, a wide sandy beach occurs, with evidence of archaeological material in the form of a possible well and other masonry structures.

The cliff is eroding rapidly with 1-2m being lost between May 1999 and February 2000 (Fig. C3c). The precarious, and dangerous, location of the site made detailed examination difficult. Many of the features exposed in the cliff section could only be viewed from the base of the cliff and therefore precise measurements were impossible to obtain.

The site comprises four mortared stone walls, three apparently relating to a single structure/building, the fourth representing a possible northern boundary wall, some 15m behind the building, running east to west down the slope into the ghut to the east of the site. The structure/building now only survives as the northern corner (an area of c.100m²) the rest having fallen over the cliff (Figs. C3c & C3d).

Within the southern structure/building the remains of a circular well/cistern survive. In May 1999, this circular structure was c.1.5m back from the cliff; however, by May 2000 this feature was partially exposed in the cliff edge (Fig. C3d) as a cylinder (c.2-3m deep visible) and therefore is more probably a well. The structure is c.5m in diameter with a central depression some 0.6m deep, filled with rubble. The interior face of the structure has been rendered in mortar.

The whole area south and east of the northern wall shows evidence of a mortar spread (marked out by vegetative growth not seen in any other area of the site). An area of apparent cobbling is present at the north-east edge of the spread (Figs. C3a & C3d). This feature appears to occur within the boundary of the northern wall and seems to represent some form of courtyard/work area.

The walls of the southern structure are 0.6-0.65m thick and survive as foundation level remains to a depth of c.40cm. The northern wall is 1.2m thick and stands to a height of 0.2m. The wall within the southern structure appears to have been dressed on the western side. The eastern wall of the southern building shows no evidence of dressing but the east to west, southern building wall shows evidence of dressing on the northern face. The northern 'boundary' wall shows no evidence of dressing.

In the cliff section, in May 1999, as well as the four walls at least three mortar floor levels could be seen within the building on the cliff. By February 2000, a level of red ceramic floor tiles could also be seen,

lying some 20-30cm below ground level (Fig. C3d). These tiles appear to be c.25cm by 25cm by 5cm thick, but despite attempts to dislodge an example from the cliff edge, the closeness of these finds to the edge and the height of the cliff made any attempt unwise, and this endeavour was abandoned. These tiles appear to be present only within the limits of the interior wall of the building, to the south of the cistern/well, suggesting a separately tiled area within the building.

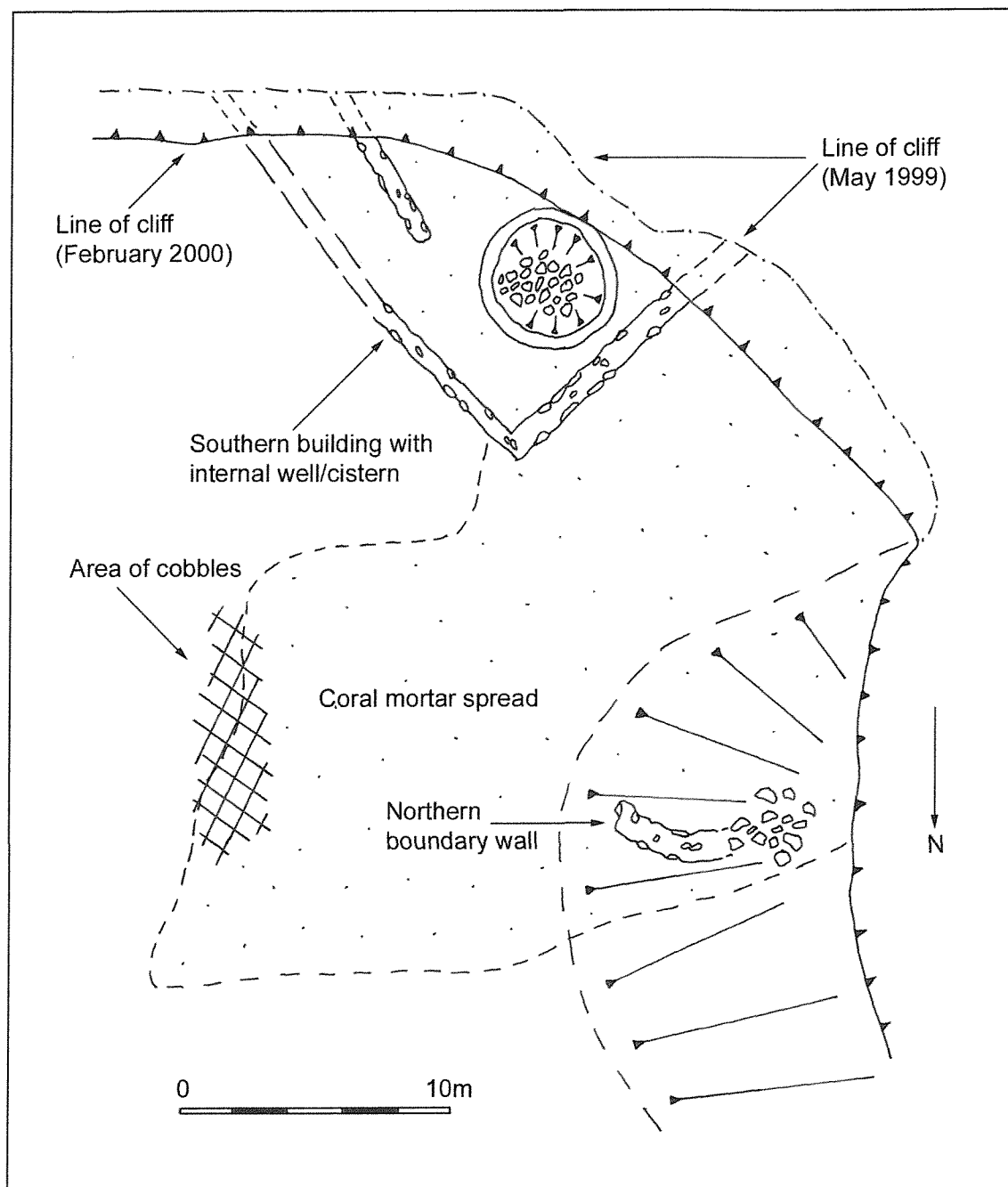


Figure C3c) Site plan of Indian Castle, May 1999 (from a plan by A. Crosby).

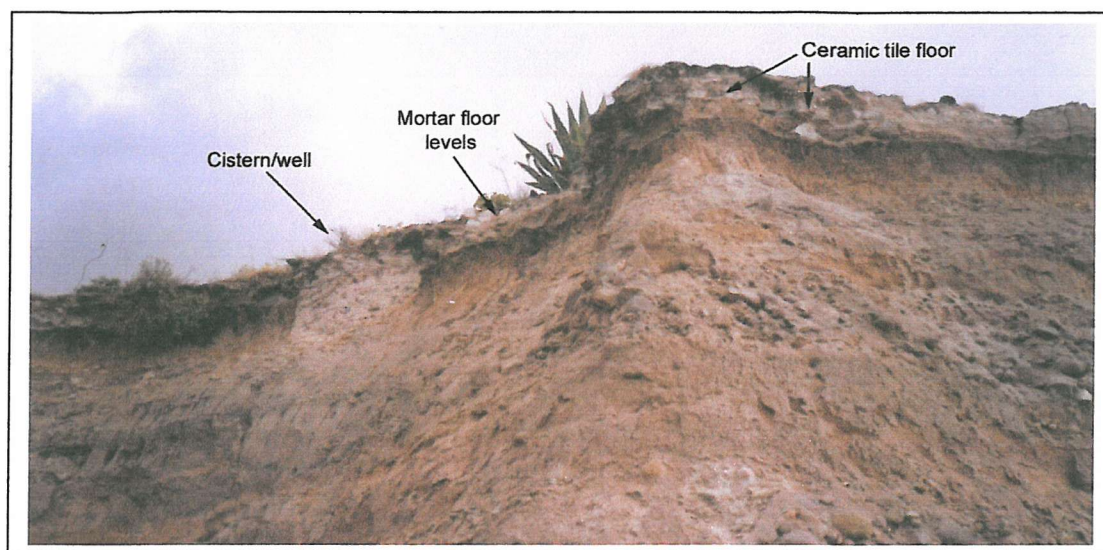


Figure C3d) Cliff section at Indian Castle, February 2000

C 3.9 Artefactual evidence:

The site was walked over its entire area and a few artefacts were collected. Unfortunately, all these artefacts are 19th-20th century in date and almost certainly represent casual loss over the site subsequent to its use. The only other artefacts known to have come from the site are cannon (Fig. C3e).



Figure C3e) Cannon from Indian Castle at Fort Charles

These were airlifted from the sea below the cliff in 1986 by a British Royal Naval helicopter from HMS Invincible and taken to Fort Charles, where they have lain ever since. Five iron cannon of a late 17th century date were recovered, but apart from their length (two at eleven feet, one at ten feet, one at seven feet six inches and one at six feet six inches) little more can be told about these cannon due their extremely rusted and poorly preserved state (Trollope 2000).

C 3.10 Discussion:

The site at Indian Castle would appear to represent the 1705 fort designed by John Johnson (Fig. C3b). Johnson's plans of September of this year can be seen to match the remains found if it is assumed that the

northern boundary wall represents the north-western wall shown on Johnson's plans. This wall is shown as being 1½ yards thick, which compares well with the 1.2m thickness present today. In this scenario, the building on the cliff edge would represent the corner of the interior guardhouse; the mortar spread representing a courtyard surface within the fort enclosure.

Other parts of the fort enclosure wall do not survive, but this may be explained by the presence of turf rear walls as mentioned by Johnson as having been built at other Nevis forts. In this case the rear wall might not be expected to have survived, a mortar and stone wall being built only on the side of attack at the cliff edge, an area also susceptible to erosion and therefore inappropriate for a turf construction.

Another interpretation might suggest the building on the cliff edge represents the back corner of the fort enclosure with the cistern, as shown in the plan (Fig. C3b), built at the back of the fort. In this case the guardhouse would long since have fallen over the cliff. The mortar spread would therefore represent a levelled surface around the fort. Either scenario is difficult to prove with certainty although the first, with a ceramic-floored guardhouse and mortared courtyard, appears more likely to be the case.

C 4 Cuckolds Harbour battery

C 4.1 Notes:

This battery was mentioned in only two documents (both from the early part of 1773) and is likely to have been a temporary gun emplacement, rather than a battery proper. It is likely to be of an early 18th century date, as by 1773 it is described as ruined.



Figure C4a) Photo of Coxheath Estate, looking north to Mount Nevis

C 4.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (between Long Point and Indian Castle Forts)

C 4.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'Further to the southeast about two miles [from Salt Pond battery] is the ruins of another battery on which there are no cannon fit for service. It is called Cuckolds Harbour battery'.

20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'Further to the southeast about two miles [from Salt Pond battery] is the ruins of another battery on which there are no cannon fit for service. It is called Cuckolds Harbour battery'.

C 4.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 4.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'Further to the southeast about two miles [from Salt Pond battery] is the ruins of another battery on which there are no cannon fit for service. It is called Cuckolds Harbour battery'.

20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'Further to the southeast about two miles [from Salt Pond battery] is the ruins of another battery on which there are no cannon fit for service. It is called Cuckolds Harbour battery'.

C 4.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 4.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 4.8 Archaeological evidence:

The length of coast from Long Point to Whitehall estate was walked systematically but no evidence of a battery could be located. Difficulties of access did not allow any examination further east along the coast.

C 4.9 Artefactual evidence:

Although no military activity could be detected along the southern coast between Long Point and Indian Castle, two cannon, now at Montpelier Hotel, were retrieved from Coxheath Estate (Fig. C4a) (Gaskell 2000b). The cannon are a pair of 9lbbers dating to 1696. The first is marked 22-3-12, and has 'IF' marked on the trunnion: the mark of John Fuller, a cannon maker from the Weald in Sussex. The cypher of the rose and crown is also present (Trollope 2000).

C 4.10 Discussion:

The cannon almost certainly belong to a gun emplacement on this side of the island although the early date for the cannon makes Cuckolds Harbour battery unlikely, although not impossible. It is likely that these two cannon did not come from the Cuckolds Harbour position, but instead were from Salt Pond Gut (see Section C5.9). It is probable that Cuckolds Harbour battery was in fact only a cannon emplacement and was used only briefly. Little archaeological evidence for such a temporary feature would be expected to survive.

C 5 Salt Pond Gut

C 5.1 Notes:

This battery probably came into existence after the French attack of 1706. The limited number of cannon present suggests that the fort was only a small gun emplacement.

C 5.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (between Long Point and Indian Castle Forts)

C 5.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: 'An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores': 'Salt Pond Gut has one saker'.

31/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): 'An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island': 'Salt Pond Gutt guns dismounted one demi-culverin'.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...at Salt Pond Gutt is dismounted 6lber'.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/31/11): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Salt Pond Gut battery: six 6lbers in good condition.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/49/21): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Salt Pond Gut battery: six 6lbers in good condition.

1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'About two miles to the southward of this fort [Long Point] is a single gun battery in a most ruinous condition on which is a very good 6lber in a very bad carriage it is called Salt Pond Gut battery'.

20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'About two miles to the southward of this fort [Long Point] is a single gun battery in a most ruinous condition on which is a very good 6lber in a very bad carriage it is called Salt Pond Gut battery'.

C 5.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 5.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: 'An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores': 'Salt Pond Gut has one saker'.

31/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): 'An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island': 'Salt Pond Gutt guns dismounted one demi-culverin'.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...at Salt Pond Gutt is dismounted 6lber'.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/31/11): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Salt Pond Gut battery: six 6lbbers in good condition.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/49/21): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Salt Pond Gut battery: six 6lbbers in good condition.

1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'About two miles to the southward of this fort [Long Point] is a single gun battery in a most ruinous condition on which is a very good 6lber in a very bad carriage it is called Salt Pond Gut battery'.

20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'About two miles to the southward of this fort [Long Point] is a single gun battery in a most ruinous condition on which is a very good 6lber in a very bad carriage it is called Salt Pond Gut battery'.

C 5.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 5.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 5.8 Archaeological evidence:

The area between Long Point and Whitehall Estate was systematically walked but no military remains could be located.

C 5.9 Artefactual evidence:

Although no military activity could be detected along the southern coast between Long Point and Indian Castle, two cannon, now at Montpelier Hotel, were retrieved from Coxheath Estate (Gaskell 2000b). The cannon are a pair of 9lbbers dating to 1696. The first is marked 22-3-12, and has 'IF' marked on the trunnion: the mark of John Fuller, a cannon maker from the Weald in Sussex. The cypher of the rose and crown is also present (Trollope 2000).

C 5.10 Discussion:

The cannon almost certainly belong to a gun emplacement on this side of the island; however, it is uncertain whether this emplacement is Salt Pond Gut or Cuckolds Harbour (see Section C4.9). The late 17th century date for the cannon make it probable that the guns came from Salt Pond Gut. However, this cannot be proved with certainty. Whatever the case, it is probable that this battery was in fact only a cannon emplacement, which would have been built out of wood and turf. Little archaeological evidence for such a feature would be expected to survive.

C 6 Long Point/William's/William and Mary's Fort

C 6.1 Notes:

Long Point is the early name (first used in 1684) but in 1705, Johnson renames it as William's Fort. It is probable that the name 'William and Mary's' refers to this fort as Long Point and William's fort are missing from the c.1705 list of forts (see below) and it must be one of the forts listed, William and Mary's being the most obvious choice.

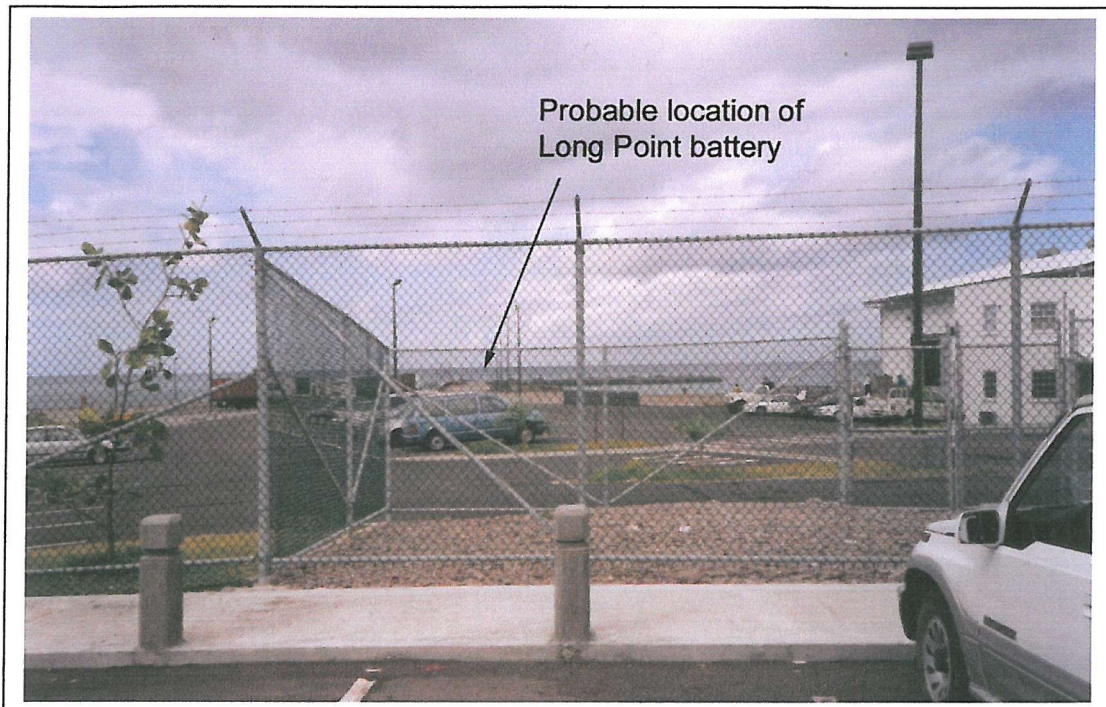


Figure C6a) Long Point port with probable location of Long Point battery

C 6.2 Grid ref: W 62° 37' 25", N 17° 06' 24"

C 6.3 Citations in Maps and documents, by date:

4/4/1684 (CSP1681-5, 1623): Assembly of Nevis Minutes: The Governor proposed '...the construction of a battery of five or six guns at Long Point'.

24/5/1684 (CSP1681-5, 1704): Assembly of Nevis Minutes: The Assembly refused to build '...a fort at Long Point at present'.

10/6/1689 (PRO CO153/3): Anonymous: 'For Nevis to be fixt at Long Point for the preventing any ships of warr or others from attacking our town, etc. five saker guns of 15ft long and three hundred good firelocks, fifty barrels of powder, match, rammers and ladles and scourers, etc. in proportion with flints and small bullets, two tunn of shot of whole culverin, demi-culverin and saker'.

- 10/8/1689 (CSP1689-1692, 331): 'Memorandum of stores required at Nevis: Five sacker guns of 15ft to be fixed at Long Point, three hundred good firelocks, fifty barrels of powder, match, rammers, etc. Two tons of cannon shot and other stores proportional'.
- 10/8/1689 (PRO CO152/37): Stores proposed to be sent to Nevis: '...Ffor Nevis to be fixt at Long Pointe for the preventing any shippes of warr or others from attacking our town, etc. five sacker guns of 15ft long and three hundred good firelocks, 50lbs powder, match, rammers and ladels...in proportion with flints, small bullets, two tunns of shot of whole culverin, demi-culverin and saker'.
- 19/9/1689 (CSP1689-1692, 377): Ordnance Office Report: There are no 15ft sackers but eighteen of the ordinary length can be supplied.
- 7/1701 (PRO CO152/4): Council of Nevis Minutes: 'Upon motion of the Lt. Governor that a list of artillery stores that are wanting to be drawn and deliver'd him to send to his Excellency...the following list was accordingly drawn; two hundred good firelocks, four very long sackers, six 12lbbers and six 18lbbers of the longest size to lye in the forts as followeth: three guns for Long Point fort, four for Charles Fort, two for Black Rock fort, two for Old Road fort three for James fort, two for Round Hill platform. A sufficient quantity of shot fit for them'.
- 25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'There is at Long Point four sacker guns, two wants new carriages the iron work will serve again. The battlements and platforms want repairing. A guardhouse of fourteen foot square made with lime and stone wanting at the said place to be built just behind the fort'.
- ?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P 5): French Intelligence Map: 'Battery of three cannon' shown (Fig. C1c).
- ?1703 (NARCH): 'Par Beauvilliers' French Intelligence Map: 'Battery of three cannon' shown (Fig. C1d).
- c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): 'A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty's island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty's Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereign lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep': 'William and Marys fort made to hold sixteen guns, with seven 6lbbers, 1½ barrels powder, twenty six 6lb shot, four rammers, one ladle, one wad hook, one powder horn'.
- 15/9/1705 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1704-5, 1344): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...B. A platform erected (by me) of twelve guns stands upon a clift it is call'd William's Fort, commonly known by ye name of Long Point, its not quitt finisht has a good stone guardhouse and by side ye standing guard has fifty spare arms all in order it commands a great way...The ambusers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'.
- 15/9/1705 (PRO CO700 ST.CHRISTOPHER AND NEVIS/2): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: Johnson's fort plans show a five sided battery with twelve embrasures on the western sides (Fig. C6b). Within the fort a guardhouse is shown. The wall is 4 yards thick with an 8-yard

wide platform. The dimensions of the structure are c.39 yards by 119 yards. A step 'entrance' is shown on the eastern side.

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'An accompt of what new forts wee have lately built and where, what old ones repaired and the changes wee have beene at to doe the same': 'At Long Point the ffort repaired, a new guardhouse, cisterne and platforme built of stone and lime £110'.

19/3/1706 (PRO CO153/9): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...B. A platform erected (by me) of twelve guns stands upon a clift it is call'd William's Fort, commonly known by ye name of Long Point, its not quitt finisht has a good stone guardhouse and by side ye standing guard has fifty spare arms all in order it commands a great way...The ambusers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'

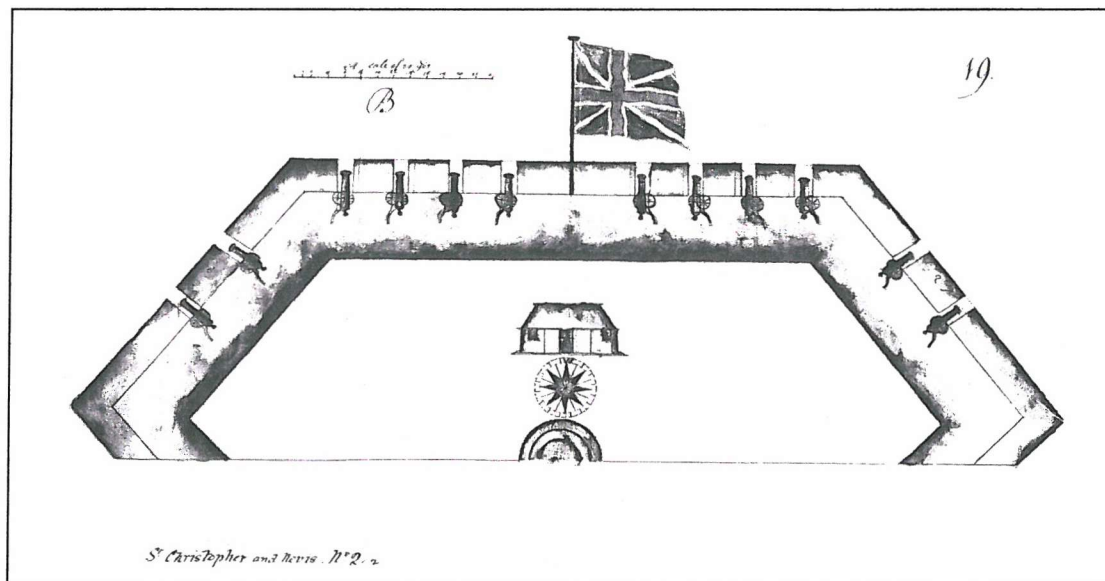


Figure C6b) Governor Johnson's plan of Long Point Fort, 1705

22/4/1706 (PRO CO184/1/19, CSP1706-8, 282): Richard Abbott to Sir C. Hedges: 'The enemy stole a landing at Green Bay where was posted Col. Burt and thirty men at Long Point and Lt. Col. Butler and forty men at Gualdings Point: the former leaving his post and the latter not taking that due care as became him...platforms will not fight themselves'.

15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: 'An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores': 'Long Point has two sakers'.

1/9/1715 (PRO CO152/11): Fort Inventory: 'Long Point two seakers, one cannon of all sizes'.

14/1/1723 (PRO CO186/1): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: '...this island to be put in the best posture of defence...we therefore have ordered four guards out of His Majesty's regular troops viz. at Long Point, Pelican Point, Black Rock and Musquitta Point and since these troops cannot subsist without provisions...supply each man with 1lb beef and 1lb bread per day'.

3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): 'An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island': 'Long Point fort guns dismounted, two demi-culverin and two sakers'.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...At Long Point fort are two 9lbers and a 6lber dismounted'.

1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin': 'Battery of three pieces' shown at position N (Fig. (Fig. C1f). This map appears to be a copy of the earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/31/11): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Long Point battery one 6lber fit for service.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/49/21): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Long Point battery one 6lber fit for service.

1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'About three miles to the southward of Fort Charles is the ruins of a fort called Long Point Fort there are six good cannon on it, four of which have been lately carried there - are part of twelve cannon that the late General Woodley obtained from Government none of which are yet mounted the sizes of them are two 12lbers, two 9lbers and two 6lbers'.

20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'About three miles to the southward of Fort Charles is the ruins of a fort called Long Point Fort there are six good cannon on it, four of which have been lately carried there - are part of twelve cannon that the late General Woodley obtained from Government none of which are yet mounted the sizes of them are two 12lbers, two 9lbers and two 6lbers'.

C 6.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 6.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

4/4/1684 (CSP1681-5, 1623): Assembly of Nevis Minutes: The Governor proposed '...the construction of a battery of five or six guns at Long Point'.

10/6/1689 (PRO CO153/3): Anonymous: 'For Nevis to be fixt at Long Point for the preventing any ships of warr or others from attacking our town, etc. five saker guns of 15ft long and three hundred good firelocks, fifty barrels of powder, match, rammers and ladles and scourers, etc. in proportion with flints and small bullets, two tunns of shot of whole culverin, demi-culverin and saker'.

10/8/1689 (CSP1689-1692, 331): 'Memorandum of stores required at Nevis: Five sacker guns of 15ft to be fixed at Long Point, three hundred good firelocks, fifty barrels of powder, match, rammers, etc. Two tons of cannon shot and other stores proportional'.

10/8/1689 (PRO CO152/37): Stores proposed to be sent to Nevis: '...Ffor Nevis to be fixt at Long Pointe for the preventing any shipps of warr or others from attacking our town, etc. five sacer guns of 15ft long and three hundred good firelocks, 50lbs powder, match, rammers and ladels...in proportion with flints, small bulls, two tunns of shot of whole culverin, demi-culverin and saker'.

- 19/9/1689 (CSP1689-1692, 377): Ordnance Office Report: There are no 15ft sackers but eighteen of the ordinary length can be supplied.
- 7/1701 (PRO CO152/4): Council of Nevis Minutes: 'Upon motion of the Lt. Governor that a list of artillery stores that are wanting to be drawn and deliver'd him to send to his Excellency...the following list was accordingly drawn; two hundred good firelocks, four very long sakers, six 12lbbers and six 18lbbers of the longest size to lye in the forts as followeth: three guns for Long Point fort, four for Charles Fort, two for Black Rock fort, two for Old Road fort three for James fort, two for Round Hill platform. A sufficient quantity of shot fit for them'.
- 25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'There is at Long Point four saker guns, two wants new carriages the iron work will serve again. The battlements and platforms want repairing. A guardhouse of fourteen foot square made with lime and stone wanting at the said place to be built just behind the fort'.
- ?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P 5): 'Battery of three cannon' shown (Fig. C1c).
- ?1703 (NARCH): 'Par Beauvilliers' French Intelligence Map: 'Battery of three cannon' shown (Fig. C1d).
- c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): 'A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty's island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty's Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereigne lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep': 'William and Marys fort made to hold sixteen guns, with seven 6lbbers, 1½ barrels powder, twenty six 6lb shot, four rammers, one ladle, one wad hook, one powder horn'.
- 15/9/1705 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1704-5, 1344): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...B. A platform erected (by me) of twelve guns stands upon a clift it is call'd William's Fort, commonly known by ye name of Long Point, its not quitt finisht has a good stone guardhouse and by side ye standing guard has fifty spare arms all in order it commands a great way...The ambusers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'.
- 19/3/1706 (PRO CO153/9): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...B. A platform erected (by me) of twelve guns stands upon a clift it is call'd William's Fort, commonly known by ye name of Long Point, its not quitt finisht has a good stone guardhouse and by side ye standing guard has fifty spare arms all in order it commands a great way...The ambusers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'.
- 15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: 'An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores': 'Long Point has two sakers'.

- 1/9/1715 (PRO CO152/11): Fort Inventory: 'Long Point two seakers, one cannon of all sizes'.
- 3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): 'An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island': 'Long Point fort guns dismounted, two demi-culverin and two sakers'.
- 31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...At Long Point fort are two 9lbers and a 6lber dismounted'.
- 1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin': 'Battery of three pieces' shown at position N (Fig. C1f).
- 23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/31/11): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Long Point battery one 6lber fit for service.
- 23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/49/21): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Long Point battery one 6lber fit for service.
- 1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'About three miles to the southward of Fort Charles is the ruins of a fort called Long Point Fort there are six good cannon on it, four of which have been lately carried there - are part of twelve cannon that the late General Woodley obtained from Government none of which are yet mounted the sizes of them are two 12lbers, two 9lbers and two 6lbers'.
- 20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'About three miles to the southward of Fort Charles is the ruins of a fort called Long Point Fort there are six good cannon on it, four of which have been lately carried there - are part of twelve cannon that the late General Woodley obtained from Government none of which are yet mounted the sizes of them are two 12lbers, two 9lbers and two 6lbers'.

C 6.6 Evidence for manning:

- 15/9/1705 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1704-5, 1344): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...B. A platform erected (by me) of twelve guns stands upon a clift it is call'd William's Fort, commonly known by ye name of Long Point, its not quitt finisht has a good stone guardhouse and by side ye standing guard has fifty spare arms all in order it commands a great way...The ambusiers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'.
- 19/3/1706 (PRO CO153/9): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...B. A platform erected (by me) of twelve guns stands upon a clift it is call'd William's Fort, commonly known by ye name of Long Point, its not quitt finisht has a good stone guardhouse and by side ye standing guard has fifty spare arms all in order it commands a great way...The

ambushers upon each of the platforms, although the figures do not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without’.

22/4/1706 (PRO CO184/1/19, CSP1706-8, 282): Richard Abbott to Sir C. Hedges: ‘The enemy stole a landing at Green Bay where was posted Col. Burt and thirty men at Long Point and Lt. Col. Butler and forty men at Gualdings Point: the former leaving his post and the latter not taking that due care as became him...platforms will not fight themselves’.

14/1/1723 (PRO CO186/1): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: ‘...this island to be put in the best posture of defence...we therefore have ordered four guards out of His Majesty’s regular troops viz. at Long Point, Pelican Point, Black Rock and Musquitta Point and since these troops cannot subsist without provisions...supply each man with 1lb beef and 1lb bread per day’.

C 6.7 The fort at war:

22/4/1706 (PRO CO184/1/19, CSP1706-8, 282): Richard Abbott to Sir C. Hedges: ‘The enemy stole a landing at Green Bay where was posted Col. Burt and thirty men at Long Point and Lt. Col. Butler and forty men at Gualdings Point: the former leaving his post and the latter not taking that due care as became him...platforms will not fight themselves’.

C 6.8 Archaeological evidence:

The fort appears to have been destroyed by the construction of a deep-water, sea-port and ancillary buildings, on the site in 1998/9 (Fig. C6a). The site was visited in May 1999 and February 2000, and no archaeological remains could be located. Two cannon were apparently dredged from the sea during the construction work, and it is planned to exhibit them, at the port, at a later date. The precise type (one is thought to be a 6lber) and current location of the cannon are unknown (Hubbard 2000).

C 6.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A. See above.

C 6.10 Discussion:

The location of Long Point Fort has, in the absence of archaeological evidence, been achieved using documentary evidence alone. The fort is shown on several plans from the early 18th century and, from contemporary descriptions and the current name and topography of the area, this promontory seems the most likely location for the fort. This interpretation is further supported by the retrieval of two cannon during the port work. Unfortunately, a precise location is not possible due to the presence of almost complete development over the whole promontory.

C 7 Soldiers Gutt

C 7.1 Notes:

This site is probably a temporary gun emplacement, in use for only a few months.

C 7.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (between Long Point and Charles Fort)

C 7.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations:
‘...at Soldiers Gutt is a dismounted 6lber’.

C 7.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 7.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations:
‘...at Soldiers Gutt is a dismounted 6lber’.

C 7.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 7.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 7.8 Archaeological evidence:

Despite systematic walking over the area between Fort Charles and Long Point, no evidence for any military structures could be identified.

C 7.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 7.10 Discussion:

The site was almost certainly a temporary gun emplacement with cannon mounted on open ground on wooden platforms. No evidence of such structures would be expected to survive.

C 8 Callaghanes Bay (to the south of Fort Charles)

C 8.1 Notes:

Callaghanes Bay appears to have been a gun emplacement rather than a battery. This emplacement was probably a temporary structure built around 1701: if permanent it would have merited mention in other documents.

C 8.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (to the south of Fort Charles)

C 8.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'Callaghanes Bay to the South of Fort Charles requires two small guns...the Worlds End, two large minion guns. Of no use there, but proper ones to be placed at Callaghanes Bay, they wanting carriages'.

C 8.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 8.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'Callaghanes Bay to the South of Fort Charles requires two small guns...the Worlds End, two large minion guns. Of no use there but proper ones to be placed at Callaghanes Bay, they wanting carriages'.

C 8.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 8.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 8.8 Archaeological evidence:

The area between Fort Charles and Long Point was examined systematically in 1996, but no evidence of military activity was located.

C 8.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 8.10 Discussion:

It is likely that Callaghanes Bay was used as a temporary gun emplacement, and had a short life span. The battery is likely to have made of wooden platforms, of which there is unlikely to be any trace remaining.

C 9 Charles Fort/Pellican Point Fort

C 9.1 Notes:

Pellican Point fort is known to have existed from the earliest period of English settlement in the late 1620s. In the 1670s the fort was rebuilt in stone as the largest fort on Nevis and was renamed Charles Fort in honour of Charles II. It continued in use until the 1870s, ending its life as a customs fort.

C 9.2 Grid ref.: W 62° 38' 03", N 17° 07' 57"

C 9.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

1629 (BL): Colonising Expeditions to the West Indies and Guiana, 1623-1667 by V.T. Harlow, 1925,

Hakluyt Society, London: In '...1629 a Spanish armado of twenty two men of war and fifteen frigates...suddenly appeared off the coast of Nevis. While some of the ships in the harbour made good their escape, the fort on Pelican Point opened fire'.

1666 (BL): A history of the Caribby Islands, Translated by John Davies, London: '...for the security of the vessels that are in the Road and to prevent the invasion of an enemy there is a fort built, wherein are several great pieces which command as far as the sea. It secures also the publick storehouses into which all the commodities that are imported and necessary for the subsistence of the inhabitants are disposed'.

1671 (NARCH): 'America being the latest and most accurate description of the new world': 'Nevis...the harbor call'd Bath Bay and the storehouse built about the same are secured by a great fort full of great guns'.

1671 (PRO CO1/27): Sir Charles Wheler to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'Pellican Point Fort...all that promontory is high rocky land upon the which is a scurvy platforme not soe good as I shall make it with twenty spades in a weeks time...if the king would be graciously pleased to cast the foundation of it, I know they will spare their negro hands to do very much of it themselves. I fixt upon this place rather than the old ffort (although you see some waters there which might be drawn together with some advantage) for ye reasons following: 1. Because it commands the principal roade which is called Bath Bay soe that the island may always be relieved by it and it is a feature in the case that all the French who make St. Christopher must hall close under this point and strike to the King's Pavillion or else they will be drove to Leeward. 2. Because it will be less expense in regard the sea washes soe much of it. 3. Because the towne, which at my coming was called the Old Redstorehouse, which I have now honoured with the King's name, begins to increase and will shortly have five hundred men able to bear arms which will be secured under the fort. 4. But lastly and chiefly my reason is because under the north side of the highland is the Bath which coming from a hot spring takes that name and falls into the sea in such a sort of ditch or brooke that I persuade myself it is possible to make a harbour for shallops and ketches and vessels of seventy or eighty tonne if not better chiefly because the tract of land you see between the Bath and Charles Towne is marish and boggish and full of water and springs which may be gathered together and drawn into the Bath channel or brooke'.

- 1672 (PRO CO154/1/114, CSP1669-1674, 1013): 'Laws Regulations and orders in force at the Leeward Islands, 1668-1672: Bath Bay, Ould Road, Morton's Bay, New Windward and Indian Castle should be lawful shipping places for any goods'.
- 1672 (PRO CO154/2/60): Nevis Act: 'Act for having stone or brick chimneys in the cook rooms of Charles Town and Morton's Bay'.
- 14/12/1672 (PRO CO1/29/161, CSP987): 'The present state of the Leeward Islands' by Sir Charles Wheler: 'From Pellicans Point to Musketi Bay is all the leeward side of the island about five English mile in length, for the defence of which there are about thirty pieces of cannon mounted upon the platforms of Pellicans Point, the old rock, the old fort, Duke's Sconce, Morton's Bay and if I had stayed I would have raised one at Musketi Bay it being the best landing of the leeward side especially from St. Christopher...In the time of the warr the inhabitants did by the hands of their slaves run a line all along the coast, but I had persuaded them to make little redoubts, shut up as well to the land as to the sea that they might doe with the same expense of hands as their long line, because their line being very slight and without a trench (for I saw the ruins of it) an enemy would passe it anywhere which would endanger the losse of ye island, in regard their men were extended five mile in length and that an enemy might be landing at ye same time all along; but since my coming away I think they are distracted from it and will runne their slight line without any fastness except that of Pellican Point, by reason it is on high land, in a kinde of promontory all the other platformes being open'.
- 18/6/1673 (PRO CO1/30/102, CSP1669-1674, 1109): William Stapleton to Council of Plantations: 'they [the Dutch] came insight of this island [Nevis] with French colours...they came in faire with Pellican Point Fort putting out their Dutch colours...fired only half a score shott, wee fired severall at them and so smartly that we could perceive people going overboard with plugs to stop their leakes'.
- 10/5/1676 (PRO CO153/2): 'An Account of the Caribbee Islands' by Thomas Warner: 'Nevis: Fort at Morton's Bay with five guns, Duke's Sconce with four guns, Old Road fort with nine guns, Black Rock fort with five guns, A platform at Charles Town with three guns, Pelican Point fort with seven guns'.
- 22/11/1676 (PRO CO1/38/152, CSP1675-6, 1152): Answers to enquiries about Leeward Islands by William Stapleton: 'There are neither fforts nor castles in any part of my government which may properly deserve that denomination, but such as are called soe and are but platformes. The first is Pellican Poynt, the windward poynt of ye road. There are mounted thirteen pieces of ordnance vizt. One 18lber, two 12lbers, two 8lbers, seven 6lbers, one 4lber; thirty one 18lb shot, forty two 12lb shot, forty two 8lb shot, eighty nine 6lb shot, eighteen 2 ½lb shot; powder two whole barrel, fifteen saker cartridges ready filled make 200lb powder besides is nine guns laden, with sponges, ladles, rammers and other things thought belonging...from Pellican Poynt fort to Morton's Bay it is but one bay very good ground for anchoring'.
- 15/3/1679 (CSP1677-1680, 933): William Stapleton to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...sends plans of a fort which is to command all ships riding at anchor in the port. As yet the work is gone little further than the design, the purses of the people being weak. Begs that the necessity of having a good fort may be pressed upon his Majesty or the island may fall into the hands of the French...the rampart

of the new fort is cast up and nothing wanting but the interior and exterior walls; would be well enough satisfied to erect the second, or that which the French engineers term cordon'.

15/3/1679 (NARCH): William Stapleton to the Lords of Trade and Plantations: "The forme of the fortifications at Pellican Poynt fort nere Charlestown in Nevis" (Fig. C9a). Annotated plan sent with above letter.

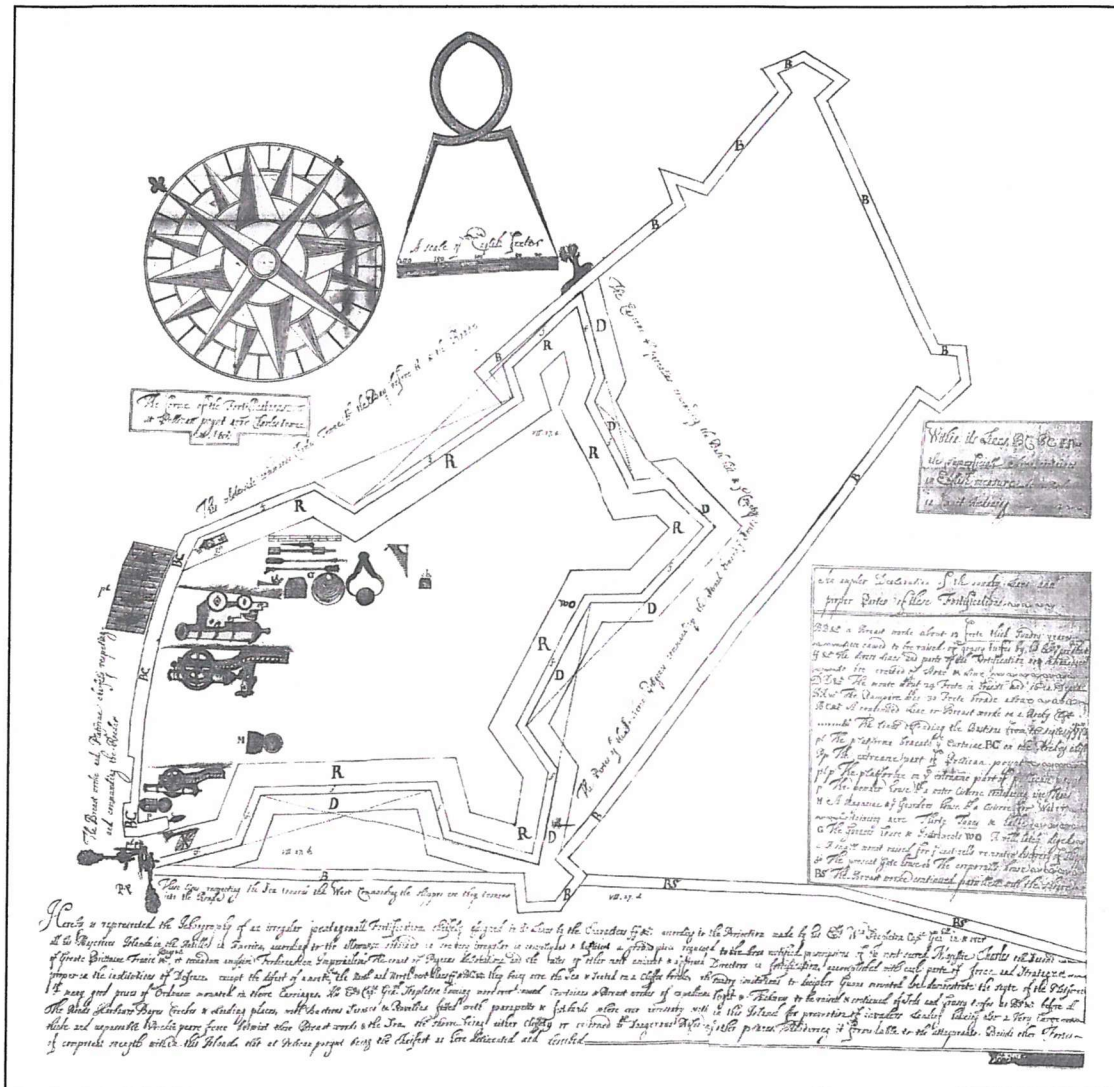


Figure C9a) Plan of Charles Fort 1679.

In a small box to the right of the plan:

' Within the lines BC, BC, ff, ff, etc the superficiall area contains in English measure Acres [?] in exact reckoning'

At the base of the plan:

'Hereby is represented the ichonography of an irregular pentagonal fortification chiefly assigned in its lines by the characters ff, etc, according to the projection made by his excellency William Stapleton Captain Generall in and over all His Majesties islands in the Antilles in America, according to the allowance obtained in soe very irregular in compliant and deficient a ground plots regulated to the here rectified prescriptions of His Most sacred Majestie Charles the Second of

Greate Brittain, France etc, Kinge etc, et secundum amussim Ferdinandem Imperialem. The count of Peganes [?] delineations and the tales of other most eminent and approved Directors in fortification accomplished with each part of force and stratagem proper in the institutions of defence, except the defect of a moate to the north and north west lines ff and BC, etc they being nere the sea and seated on a cliffs brinke, the sundry imitations to decipher guns mounted doe demonstrate the seyte of the platformes and many good pieces of ordnance mounted in their carriages. His Excellency Captain Generall Stapleton having more over caused curtaines and breast workes of expedient height and thickness to be raised and continued of sods and grassy turfs at BS, etc before all the roads harbours bayes creekes and landing places with bastions sconces and ravelins fitted with parapets and foot banks where ever necessary with in this island for preventing of invaders landing takeing also a very large thicke and unpassable prickly pear fence betwixt those breastworks and the sea, the shoare being either cliffety or environed with dangerous rises in the other places, rendering it formidable to the attaquants. Besides other forces of competent strength within this island that at Pelican Poynt being the chieftest as here delineated and described'

In a larger box to the right of the plan:

'An expler declaration of the sundry lines and proper partes of these fortifications:

BB, etc: A breast worke about 12 feete thick sundry yeares since caused to be raised of grassy turfs by his Excellency Generall present.

ff, etc: the divers lines and parts of the fortification now in manadgent to be erected of stone and lime.

DD, etc: The moate without 24 feete in breadth and 16 in depth.

RR, etc: The rampire within 30 feete broad above

BC, etc: A continued line or breast worke on a rocky cliff

....., etc: the Lines defending the bastions from the angles of ye guns

pl: The platforme beneath the ye curtaine BC on the rocky cliff.

Pp: The extreame part of Pellican Poynt

plp: The platforme on ye extreame part of Pellican Poynt

p: The powder house with a water cisterne containing 9 tunns

M: A magazine and guarders house with a cisterne for water containeing 30 tuns and ease.

G: The gunners house and instruments.

W●: A well lately diged.

c.: A small mount raised for ye centinells remoater discovery of shippes.

gh: The present gate house.

ch: The corporals house.

BS: The Breast worke continued parallel with the shoare.

25/5/1680 (CSP1677-1680, 1364): assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'It is proposed by the Governor that the fort on Pelican Point should be continued'.

24/7/1680 (CSP1677-1680, 1461): Assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'A file of men to be added to the standing guard at Charles Fort (formerly Pelican's Point) in consideration of the great number of guns there...agreed on proposal of the Governor that the battlements of Charles Fort be built in stone and lime'.

- 14/10/1682 (CSP1681-5, 750): assembly of Nevis Minutes: '...the Negroes should be taken off the work at Charles Fort and Pelican's Point'.
- 1687 (BL): The present state of his Majesties Isles and territories in America by Richard Blome, London:
 '...it hath a fort whereon are mounted several great guns, that command at a great distance, for the security of the ships in the Road or Harbour, which likewise secure their storehouses into which all the commodities imported for the use of the inhabitants are disposed'.
- 1687 (BL Sloane 45/35): William Hack: 'A chart of the west end of Nevis and part of St. Christopher, originally described by Mr. John Jenifer, drawn in 1687 by William Hack': Charles Fort is shown at position 2, with twenty-six cannon (Fig. C1a).
- 24/11/1688 (PRO CO155/1): Sir Nathaniel Johnson to the Committee: '...the battlements [of Charles Fort] there are no manner of use but may be very prejudicial and therefore you have my free consent...to make use of those stones to raise a flanker towards the land which I believe may be of a good use to prevent a surprisall of it by night'.
- 8/5/1697 (CSP1696-7, 1003): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: A committee is to be appointed '...to choose a room in Charles Fort for a gaol'.
- 22/3/1699 (CSP1699, 201): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'The Assembly esteeming the Gunner's account of powder irregular proposed that he should not be paid till he had presented a proper account and should be dismissed...if he did not do so within ten days'.
- 24/8/1699 (CSP1699, 741): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: '...by the late act ships trading here were to pay arms as well as powder, so that the supply would rapidly increase, to write to Richard Carey [Agent for Nevis] to procure an armourer to live in the fort at an annual salary'.
- 1700 (PRO ADM7/833): Robert Thompson, Master of HMS Gloucester: 'Admiral Benbows voyage to the West Indies': A map entitled 'Thus sheweth ye island Neves as you ride in ye roades' shows 'Pillican Fort' to the south of Charles Town (Fig. C1b).
- 7/1701 (PRO CO152/4): Council of Nevis Minutes: 'Upon motion of the Lt. Governor that a list of artillery stores that are wanting to be drawn and deliver'd him to send to his Excellency...the following list was accordingly drawn; two hundred good firelocks, four very long sakers, six 12lbers and six 18lbers of the longest size to lye in the forts as followeth: three guns for Long Point fort, four for Charles Fort, two for Black Rock fort, two for Old Road fort three for James fort, two for round hill platform. A sufficient quantity of shot fit for them'
- 25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'Charles Fort, fifteen guns, several of them very indifferent, some ill mounted'.
- 1702 (PRO CO185/2/42): Nevis Act: 'An act for better securing this island against all assaults alarms, etc.'
 The gunner at Charles Fort will direct the number of fuses and cartridges that each Captain in the militia is required to possess.
- ?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P 5): French Intelligence Map: 'Grand fort of twenty-two cannon' shown (Fig. C1c).
- ?1703 (NARCH): 'Par Beauvilliers' French Intelligence Map: 'Grand Fort of twenty-two cannon' shown (Fig. C1d).
- c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): 'A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty's island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty's Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the

reigne of our sovereigne lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep': 'Charles Fort made to hold thirty guns, with twenty guns, one 24lber, one 18lber, five 12lbers, six 9lbers, seven 6lbers, eighty barrels powder, nine hundred 18lb shot, eight hundred and forty 12lb shot, one thousand three hundred and seventy 9lb shot, five hundred and twenty 6lb shot, twenty 3lb shot, five reams of paper royal, five hundred weight of match, seven hundred and eighty hand grenades, thirty cases of partridge shot, six hundred weight of mussquett shott, sixty bullet moulds, forty rammers, five ladles, seven wad hooks, thirty sheepskins, three thousand five hundred flints, eight iron crows, one hundred shovels, one hundred spades, one hundred pick axes, fourteen powder horns, and seven lanthorns'.

15/9/1705 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1704-5, 1344): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't... C. Charles Fort repaired (by me) with the adition of a little platform that lyes low by ye sea side (No. J) this fort stands upon a clift and commands the road of Charles Town where all shipping rides within which stands a guardhouse a large magazine and a cestern, its called Charles Fort commonly known by ye name of Pelican Point... to the sea stone work, to the land with sodd work... The ambusiers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'.

15/9/1705 (PRO CO700 ST.CHRISTOPHER AND NEVIS/2): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: Johnson's fort plans show an irregular fort with three diamond bastions (see Fig. C9b). Platform J is shown to the north of the main structure. The fort measures 229 yards by 195 yards, and has a wall thickness of 5 yards. The platform is 9 yards wide. Twenty-nine embrasures are shown at the northern end of the fort with a further eight embrasures on platform J. Lookout posts are shown on the bastions. One large guardhouse is shown, along with another smaller building (probably the magazine). Between the two buildings a circular cistern/well is shown. The entrance is shown on the eastern wall.

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'An accompt of what new forts wee have lately built and where, what old ones repaired and the changes wee have beene at to doe the same': 'Pelican Point ffort repairs £859.13.4'.

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis: 'An account of the proceeding of the French fleet against Nevis February 1706': The French comprised '...in all thirty six sayle'. On 9/2/1706 '...one or two of their men of warr and some sloops came within shott of our guns and wee fired at them from Johnson's Fort, Black Rock Ffort and Pelican Point ffort and placed as we heard afterwards nine shott in the hull of one of them four of which were between wind and water which caused her to toe with her boates'.

19/3/1706 (PRO CO153/9): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't... C. Charles Fort repaired (by me) with the adition of a little platform that lyes low by ye sea

side (No. J) this fort stands upon a clift and commands the road of Charles Town where all shipping rides within which stands a guardhouse a large magazine and a cestern, its called Charles Fort commonly known by ye name of Pelican Point... to the sea stone work, to the land with sodd work...The ambusers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'.

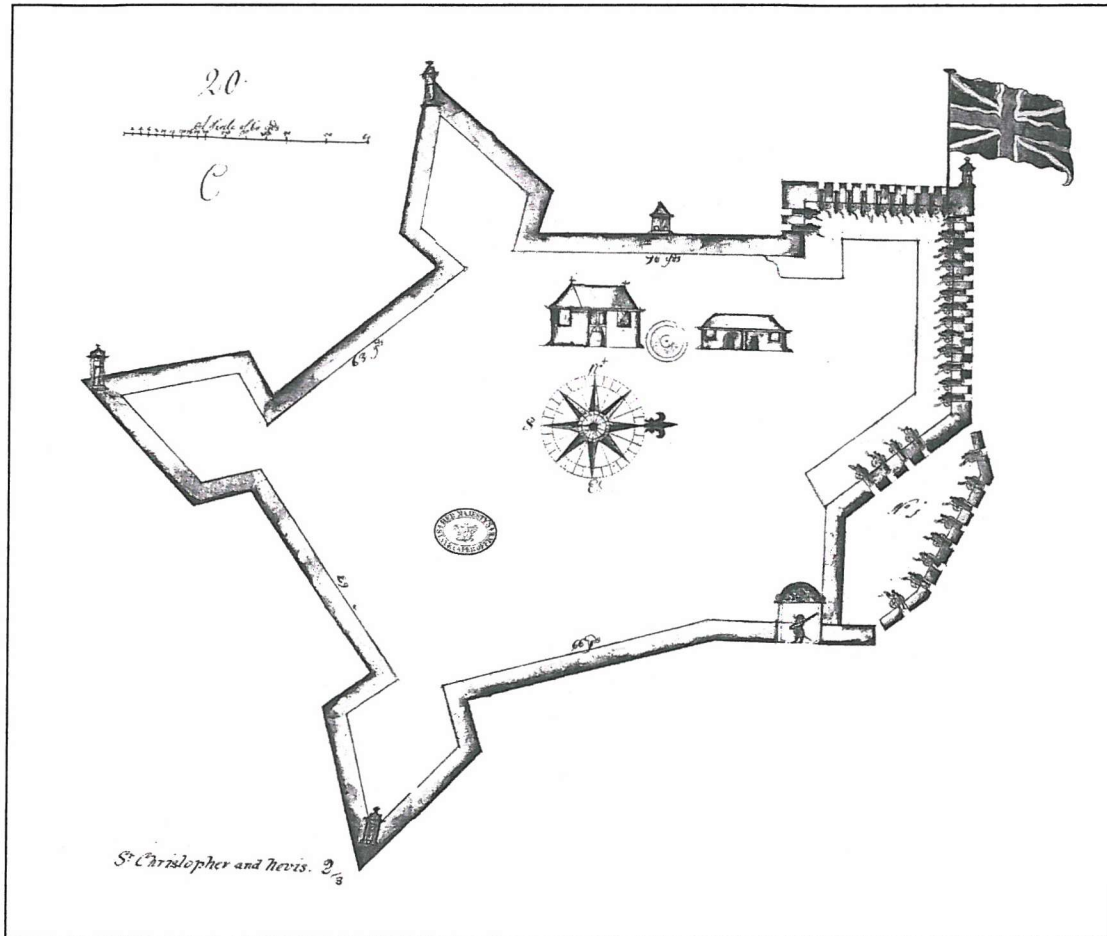


Figure C9b) Governor Johnson's plan of Charles Fort, 1705

- 16/4/1706 (PRO CO184/1/17, CSP1706-8, 270) Mr. Stanley to Mr John Tonstall: The French advanced '...almost to Pellican Point fort which brought guns to bear and fired upon them in their march...upon the hill above Bath plain our handful of men engaged them'.
- 22/5/1706 (PRO CO152/6/46, CSP1706-8, 318): Extract from the Paris Gazette: The French '...turned the enemy out of several advantageous positions and from the fort of the point, where they had retired to with the greater part of their artillery and seized twenty-two ships which were anchored under the fort'.
- 19/10/1706 (PRO CO155/3): Council of Nevis Minutes: The powder magazine at Charles Fort is to be repaired.
- 13/1/1707 (PRO CO155/3): Council of Nevis Minutes: $\frac{2}{3}$ of 'dutiable slaves, masons and carpenters' are to work on Charles Fort and Black Rock fort. Ten 'mantrosses' and a Corporal are allotted for Charles Fort.

- 21/2/1707 (PRO CO153/9, CSP1706-8, 776): Lt. Gov. Walter Hamilton to Lords of Trade and Plantations:
 ‘...the sending of an engineer, which if I had for some time, I would engage to make Charles Fort with the hill call’d Bath and Wignall’s Hill tenable longer than an enemy would be willing to stay...Sir John Jennings landed here in December last twenty pieces of ordnance which are all mounted in Charles and Black Rock Forts with powder, ball etc. proportional. Cartridge Paper excepted, which he had none to spare nor can I get none for any money likewise one hundred and fifty muskets’.
- 21/2/1707 (PRO CO152/7, CSP1706-8, 76): Lt. Gov. Walter Hamilton to Lords of Trade and Plantations:
 ‘...the sending of an engineer, which if I had for some time, I would engage to make Charles Fort with the hill call’d Bath and Wignall’s Hill (and if well provided) tenable longer than an enemy would be willing to stay’.
- 11/12/1707 (PRO155/3/225): Council of Nevis Minutes: The ‘...platforme at Charles Fort to be repaired and have a gate made’. Sixty slaves and masons are to carry out the work.
- 15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: ‘An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores’: ‘Charles Fort twenty four culverings of the largest size or 24lbers, five ordinary culverings or 18lbers, two elder sort of demi-culvering or 12lber, two lowest demi-culvering or 9lber and one saker’.
- 4/2/1708 (PRO CO155/3): Council of Nevis Minutes: ‘Sixty negroes to work on Pellican Point platforme’.
- 9/3/1711 (PRO CO155/4): Council of Nevis Minutes: An account of the slaves detached to work on Charles Fort is requested.
- 28/11/1711 (PRO CO152/9, CSP1711-2, 194): Sir Walter Douglas to Lords of Trade and Plantations:
 Douglas has removed Milliken, the Fort Major at Nevis, for embezzling stores.
- 28/11/1711 (PRO CO153/11, CSP1711-2, 194): Sir Walter Douglas to Lords of Trade and Plantations:
 Douglas has removed Milliken, the Fort Major at Nevis, for embezzling stores. John Butler has been sworn in his place.
- 3/3/1715 (PRO CO155/4): Council of Nevis Minutes: The people of Nevis want to raise a tax to pay off debts and repair forts, in particular Charles Fort and Black Rock Fort.
- 1/9/1715 (PRO CO152/11): Fort Inventory: ‘Charles Fort, four demi-cannon, two culverin, three ordinary culverin, three lowest culverin, three seakers, fifteen cannon of all sizes, fifty two barrels powder, one thousand five hundred cannon ball, 400lbs match, seven quires of paper royal, three priming horns, fifteen ladles and rammers, five worms, three lanthorns, one flagg, five cases of cartridge, five iron crows, twelve formers, two bouch barrels, three tanned hides, 200lbs lead, one shovel/spade’.
- 1/3/1716 (PRO CO152/10/82, CSP1716-7, 66): J. Thornton: ‘The magazine and gate house of Charles Fort were fired and the fort blown up the day after the date of the said articles’.
- 21/12/1721 (PRO CO186/1): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: ‘We therefore desire your concurrence...the charge of flooring a small room in Charles Fort (with boards) wherein the gunner now dwells for want of which the gunner complains may prejudice his health’.
- 20/3/1722 (PRO CO186/1): Petition of John Johnston: Johnston is ‘Gunner of the Nevis forts and platforms’.

- 23/4/1722 (PRO CO186/1): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: A vault is proposed for Charles Fort to be used as a powder magazine. The present magazine could then be fitted out as a guardhouse.
- 25/4/1722 (PRO CO 155/6): Council of Nevis to Assembly of Nevis: The Council propose to build ‘...a vault in Charles Fort for a magazine not only for the greater security of the powder but that the present powder house may be fitted for the accommodation of the troops’.
- 11/7/1722 (PRO CO152/14, CSP1722-3, 220): John Hart to Lords of Trade and Plantations: ‘...very good anchorage off of Charles Town defended by a battery of eleven guns’.
- 14/1/1723 (PRO CO186/1): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: ‘...this island to be put in the best posture of defence...we therefore have ordered four guards out of His Majesty’s regular troops viz. at Long Point, Pelican Point, Black Rock and Musquitta Point and since these troops cannot subsist without provisions...supply each man with 1lb beef and 1lb bread per day’.
- 11/1723 (PRO CO186/1): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: Work on the vault and guardhouse at Charles Fort has not started.
- 1724 (PRO CO152/42): John Hart: ‘...at the island of Nevis there is one old ruined fort at the only road in it that has fifteen guns mounted provided only with powder and ball’.
- 10/7/1724 (PRO CO152/14, CSP1724-5, 260): John Hart: ‘...at the island of Nevis there is one old ruined fort at the only road in it that has fifteen guns mounted provided only with powder and ball’.
- 17/9/1725 (PRO CO186/1/30): Assembly to President and Council of Nevis: The Assembly agree that the guardhouse should be refitted on the condition that someone be appointed to oversee the work and that 18d per day, per slave be paid to their owners’.
- 17/9/1725 (PRO CO186/1): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: Work on the vault and guardhouse has still not started. However, the Assembly have agreed to carry out the work and the slave owners will be paid 18d per day for their slaves.
- 17/9/1725 (PRO CO186/1/30): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: There are only three ‘montrosses’ on the fort to raise the flag. The Council want the guardhouse refitted for some of the King’s Troops ‘...until provision be made to hire montrosses’. The Council requests fifty slaves to carry out the work.
- 17/9/1725 (PRO CO186/1/30): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: The Council agree to the proposal and agree to pay for the montrosses and the King’s Troops for two months.
- 1726 (PRO CO152/6): Yearly expenses for Nevis: ‘Gunner for the fort £50, ten montrosses at £20 each £500; July 25th, ¼ years sallary paid to day of next September to montrosses, £5 each to: Lawrence Ely, James Sutton, James Creeve, John Tunnell, Isaac Bond, William Poole, George Graves, Thomas Marshall. 14th August, ¼ sallary to gunner Mr. Hopkey £12.10.0, 25th September, ¼ sallary to the seven montrosses above’.
- 23/2/1727 (PRO CO186/1, CSP1726-7, 503): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: Mr. Hopkey is Gunner at Charles Fort.
- 10/4/1727 (PRO CO186/1, CSP1726-7, 503): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: Hopkey has been firing at ships that are a long way from the shore. The Council and Assembly disapprove as they think it will discourage ships from trading at Nevis.
- 2/6/1727 (PRO CO152/16): ‘Account of the charges upon the fort’: Repairs to Fort Charles include a new roof for the gun house (thatch), padlocks for the magazine and gun house, new doors and windows

for the magazine, the underpinning of the gun house and various areas of masonry and carpentry work. Cost: £102.2.3.

3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): 'An Accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island':

'Charles Fort, out of repair. Guns mounted and what stores in the magazine: one union flag, one platform, one demi-cannon royal, four demi-cannon ordinary, five whole culverin, two quarter cannon ordinary, four demi-culverin, two sakers, 4004lbs powder, 1400 cannon ball, twenty casks of musket ball, five small armes, four priming horns, 20lb match, four linstocks, nine formers, three tann'd hides, two hand screws, two muscovy lights, eleven shovels and spades, three pick axes, seven iron crowes, five hand barrows, seven sponges fixt, eight sponge heads, eight rammer heads, ten ladles fixt, six ladles unfixt, seven worms, 12lbs tallow, two mattock hoes, ten hand spikes, one sledge, one gynne, twelve quires cartridge paper. Guns Dismounted, one saker and six minions. Lbs of powder received from sundry ships since 14/6/1727: 931lbs. Powder and ball expended in firing at sundry vessels passing the fort, in contempt of the King's Union Flag and answering salutes from several vessels: 81lbs powder and seven cannon balls. Powder expended to proclaim the Honourable Lt. Gen. Mathew, Esq. Commander in Chief, one shot from a demi-cannon ordinary, three from whole culverin, two from quarter cannon ordinary, four from demi-culverin and one from saker using 81lbs powder. Ditto expended when his honour arrived here from St. Christopher: one shot from a demi-cannon ordinary, three from whole culverin, two from quarter cannon ordinary, four from demi-culverin and one from saker using 81lbs powder. Ditto when he went off to St. Christopher: one shot from a demi-cannon ordinary, three from whole culverin, two from quarter cannon ordinary, four from demi-culverin and one from saker using 81lbs powder. Ditto expended to celebrate the King's accession: three shot from a demi-cannon ordinary, three from whole culverin, two from quarter cannon ordinary, four from demi-culverin and one from saker using 405lbs powder. Ditto expended in firing 68 minute guns to condole the death of our late sovereign Lord King George: three shot from a demi-cannon royal, fifteen shot from demi-cannon ordinary, eighteen from whole culverin, eight from quarter cannon ordinary, sixteen from demi-culverin, five from saker, three from minions, using 561lbs powder. Ditto expended in proclaiming his Majesty King George II: three shot from a demi-cannon ordinary, three from whole culverin, two from quarter cannon ordinary, four from demi-culverin and one from saker using 105lbs powder. Ditto expended for the Prince and all the Royal Family: three shot from a demi-cannon ordinary, three from whole culverin, two from quarter cannon ordinary, four from demi-culverin, and one from saker using 105lbs powder. Ditto for the Honourable the Lt. General's health: one shot from a demi-cannon royal, four shot from a demi-cannon ordinary, three from whole culverin, two from quarter cannon ordinary, and one from demi-culverin using 105lbs powder'.

13/1/1730 (PRO CO186/1/121): council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: A committee comprising Col. Charles Bridgwater and Major William's, is appointed to check the stores at Charles Fort. Alexander de Cubillo is appointed as Gunner.

29/1/1730 (PRO CO152/18, CSP1730, 326): Inventory of stores: 'Charles Fort: 5045 barrels of powder, one thousand five hundred flints, two hundred and forty nine 12lb shot, three hundred and eighty nine 18lb shot, six hundred and ninety three 24lb shot, one old jack, one old pennant, one old flag, forty four fusers useless, four hand barrows, three pick axes, one quire cartridge paper, seven skeems match, one cagg of tallow, one hand screw, forty four cross bar shot, sixty six new rammers and

spunges, eleven spunges, eleven old hand spikes, five crows, two melting ladles, six worms, ten ladles fixt, eight spare ladles, four old spikes, seventeen new hand spikes, two halliards, seventeen sponge staffs’.

1/6/1731 (PRO CO186/2): Anonymous: ‘The Committee appointed to inspect and examine into the stores at Charles Fort accordingly met this 1/6/1731 and have taken an accompt of the same which vizt. five quarter barrells of powder, fifty four half barrells of powder, twenty whole barrells of powder, four caggs bullets of one hundred and fifteen gross each, two large chests with four rounds cartridge for nineteen guns, twelve rammer staffs, three half pikes old, twelve cartridge boxes, one wooden mallet, fifty sponge heads, twenty-four rammer heads, five iron crows, one sledge, ten ladles, eight worms, three powder horns, four prickers, six lows, one hand screw, two double blocks, one old lanthorn, one small cask tallow, six formers for cartridges, forty old guns good for nothing, eighteen guns serviceable, 27lbs match, three quires cartridge paper, five hand barrows one of which broken, one hand saw, one old flagg Jack and pendant, seven spunges, twelve hand spikes, ten cut lashes. Signed Carew Brodbelt, Daniel Smith, Thomas Pym and Thomas Stewart’.

3/3/1732 (PRO CO186/2): Council of Nevis Minutes: ‘Memoriall of Charles Bridgwater, Commander of His Majesty’s forts and fortifications in this island’: ‘I thought it proper to lay before you the present state of the forts and fortifications as they now are. Charles Fort in a very bad condition, the montrosses have not any manner of cover to keep themselves, guns and ammunition out of the rains only a few little hutts that are thatcht which they are suffer’d to put up for shelter being just to windward of the magazine if any of those hutts by accident should take fire the magazine roof being boards and shingles may prove the destruction of the whole fortification. I hope you’ll be of opinion that the present powder house is not a proper place to hold the quantity of powder that is always lodged there for the reason before mentioned. The next is should a warr happen that powder house lying so open and exposed a shott from a ship into it will destroy the whole fortification and all in it, if it could be thought so proper to build a vault that would contain to hold the powder the roome that now contains it would be a good and sufficient place to accommodate the montrosses and the other to hold all the stores, there wants two guns in each flanker to secure the country part as well as a detachment of negroes to clear the fort within and without and to open the gutt side trench round the fort, it would be a very great service to the ffortification to have the cesterne mended and put in order there not being any thing to hold water for the use of the ffortification that being of great service if an accident of ffire should happen. Black Rock ffort has in it six good guns which as they are cannot be of service which it were put in order would be of great safe guard to the towne as well to the vessels in the road, from that there is a better discovery of vessels coming out and going in being all open to the sea which cannot be soe well discovered by the other ffort, St. Christophers and the salt pond takeing off the sight from Charles ffort in the night if it was thought proper to keep Black Rock ffort in order and keep a standing guard it may be done with little expence by the addition of three men more at the country charge there being twelve allow’d Charles Ffort and as those fforts are so near each other two may be drafted from thence which will make the number five which would be sufficient to keep a standing guard but that I hope will be consider’d that in time of alarms or any invasion that the two ffortifications may be reinforced with such a number of guns without an addition, in Charles Ffort are severall old small arms which are fitt for

no manner of service nor worth mending if it thought agreeable I would dispose of them and provide others that may be of service to the fortification and country'.

3/3/1732 (PRO CO186/2): Assembly to Council and President of Nevis: 'We readily concur with you that the efforts should be kept in good repair and that those things mentioned in the abstract should be done, when the levy is raised we will take care to appropriate a summe sufficient for that purpose'. The Gunner at Charles Fort is firing at ships that come near the fort and the Assembly believe this is stopping ships coming in to trade.

6/7/1733 (PRO CO186/2): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: The work at Charles Fort has started, but thirty more slave have been requested whilst '...the Negroes belonging to Charles Fort go off to repair the breastworks'. The planters will be paid 18d per slave per day.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...so little concern for what the next warr may produce against them except keeping the one fort they have in tolerable order...

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 14): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...beyond Long Point at a little more than half a mile distance westward is the chief fortress of the island call'd Charles Fort. It stands on the south west point of the island. The road for the shipping is under the cannon of this fort and the town call'd Charles Town is in the bottom of this bay easterly from it the north point of this bay is call'd Black Rock...Charles Fort was laid out on a larger plan than the forts usually are in these islands. I imagine the whole circumference to contain near six acres, it is commanded by an eminence within half musket shot of it to landward on two sides it is an old ruinous rampart and ditch, the other two sides are to seaward and well fac'd with stone, the platforms well pav'd and a low parapet wall but no merlons. There are in it the following cannon: three 36lbers, two 32lbers, five 30lbers, two 18lbers, four 12lbers, one 8lber, two 6lbers, all these are well mounted and for these they have about 1260 rounds cannon shott, sixty chain and thirty six cross barr shott but for this battery and for all the other batteries in this island as well for the militia there is in the magazine but fifty four half barrels of powder and 4160 weight of musket ball, a very small quantity of match and a few gunners stores, seventeen small arms in tolerable order and forty nine spoilt for want of care. The fort is under a master gunner and twelve montrosses and the company of Brig. Jones regiment station'd in this island keep a small guard there'.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO186/2): Committee for Forts and Fortifications Minutes: 'We the Committee appointed to inspect and examine into the stores at Charles Fort have accordingly met this 31st August 1734 and have taken an account of the same which is as followeth, vizt: 29 whole barrells of powder full and 2 not full, 39 half barrells of powder full and 7 not full, 2 quarter barrells full and 1 not full, 15 keggss of powder, 1 great chest of 66 cartridges from 29lbers to 4lbers, 38 keggss bullets of 155 groce each, 1 large chest, 1 rammer staff, 3 half pikes old, 12 cartridge boxes, 1 wood mallet, 27 sponge heads and rammer heads, 5 iron crows, 1 sledge, 19 ladles some of which without handles, 9 worms, 3 powder horns, 3 prickers, 5 hows, 1 hand screw, 1 double block, 1 lanthorn not good, 1/4 cask tallow, 9 formers for cartridges, 46 old gunns good for nothing, 36 guns scarce fit for use, 73lbs match, 17 quire of cartridge paper, 5 rheam of cartridge paper, 4 hand barrows, 1 hand saw good for nothing, 2 flaggs: 1 Jack and 1 pendant, 12 sponges, 17 hand spikes, 7 cutlasses, 1 compleat ginn and a new ginn rope and 1 hammer'.

- 14/1/1735 (CSP1734-5, 457): Council of Trade and Plantations to Lords Spiritual and Temporal in Parliament: 'There is only one old fort in the island of Nevis, mounted with nineteen guns'.
- 14/4/1735 (CSP1734-5, 530): William Mathew to Mr. Popple: The gunner used to receive the powder duty, but embezzled it due to poverty. The Treasurer now receives the duty instead.
- 5/6/1736 (PRO CO186/2): Committee for Forts and Fortifications to Assembly of Nevis: 'We the Committee appointed to inspect and examine into the stores at Charles Fort have accordingly met this 5th day of June 1736 and have taken an account of the same which is as followeth vizt: 13 whole and 67 half barrels powder, 3 quarter barrels powder, 12 small caske of powder, 1 great chest containing 167 cartridges for 24lbars to 3lbars, 18 fire arms fit for service and 4 not fit for service, 6 copper ladles with heads and 3 with staffs but no heads and 6 with no staffs or heads, 1 copper ladles with a staff and worm, 9 worms on staffs, 21 sponge heads and rammer heads, 6 long and 3 short tarr brushes, 15 formers for cartridges, 2 spare worms, 54 cross barr shot, 3 cross barr double head shot, 10 sponges hardly fit for use, 11 hand spickes good for nothing, 1240 great shott, 19 great guns on carriages very much out of repair, 1 compleat ginn and new ginn rope and a block, 1 Flagg, Jack and pendant very bad, halliards to the flagg very bad, 281lb match, 4 1/4 rheam cartridge paper, 3 hand barrows, 12 wooden cartridge boxes for the great guns, 35 keggs bullets, 100 hand granadoes, 40 iron wheels for carriages and 2 pair hand screws, Great shott: 590 x 18lb shot, 140 x 112lb shot and 56 cross bar and chain shot'.
- 10/3/1740 (PRO CO153/16): 'Instructions to William Mathew': 'To stop embezzlement a salaried storekeeper should be got'. The storekeeper should send copies of his accounts to Britain every six months.
- 16/10/1742 (PRO CO152/24/145): William Mathew: 'A state of the Leeward Islands for their defence': 'At Nevis: The chief fortress call'd Charles Fort has on it 19 pieces of cannon and about 1200 shot, a large quantity of musquet ball and in the magazine hardly 60 barrels of powder and yet is husbanded with greatest economy and round the island are about 20 pieces of cannon but few of them mounted'.
- 15/4/1746 (PRO CO152/25/156): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: ' There are 19 pieces of cannon in Charles Fort and around the island about 20 pieces of cannon more but a few of these are mounted except 7 at Black Rock'.
- 20/6/1755 (PRO CO152/28): Charles Payne: 'An account of ordnance their condition, the condition of the carriages, quantity of shot, powder and all other military stores': 'Nevis: Charles Fort: Mounted the carriages in very indifferent order: 3 x 24lbars, 3 x 18lbars, 2 x 12lbars, 4 x 9lbars and 1 x 4lber. Dismounted and without carriages but good cannon: 2 x 24lbars, 2 x 18lbars, 2 x 6lbars and 6 x 3lbars. 310 x 24lb shot, 479 x 18lb shot, 9 x 12lb shot, 102 x 9lb shot, 244 x 4lb shot. Rammers and sponges: 13 for 24lbars, 13 for 18lbars, 9 for 12lbars, 14 for 9lbars, 4 for 6lbars, 4 for 4lbars. 15 hand spikes, 5 barrels turpentine, a flag staff and 2 old flags. The magazine to have a new roof, new door and window frames and its walls new pointed. The gunners house so bad that it will be much cheaper to rebuild than repair it, the room over the gate wants repairing thoroughly. A pair of new gates wanting. The gin to be repaired. The gunner has reported to us that there are 2 pair more of iron wheels belonging to the fort, but sent to Mr. Vincent at Indian Castle by order of the Honourable the President...23 useless cannon in the 2 forts. We the committee appointed to inspect into the forts and fortifications of this island do make the above report of their condition'.

1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin':

'The town is defended by Fort Charles or the big fort, built to the south of the town, on a height that stretches out into the sea. This fort is very sound and is equipped with twenty-two cannon...when anchoring in front of the town, one should not approach the south west point on which the large fort is built any closer than a good cannon shot's length, because of a rocky key'. 'Fort Charles where there are twenty-two pieces' shown at position M (Fig. C1f). This map appears to be a copy of the earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.

31/3/1768 (PRO CO186/5): President and Council of Nevis Minutes: 'We the committee appointed for inspecting the forts and all other publick buildings in this island did meet and inspect the 2 following forts: Charles Fort and Black Rock Fort and find that the number of cannon in Charles Fort is very sufficient provided there were new carriages for said cannon that there are not above 4 in any tolerable condition that the platform and breast work are in a ruinous condition that the very lime to repair these and to make an alteration to the platform which is necessary will amount to 100 hogsheads at least, that the guardhouses for the matrosses are scarcely tenantable, that the magazine (in which there is not exceeding 8 hundred weight of powder and 80 fuzees many useless) is a very weak one badly constructed and in no way answers the end or intention of a magazine. That there are in said fort a sufficient quantity of ball, matches and paper. It is the opinion of your Committee that to put these forts into tenable condition will requires £1200 currency and we are of opinion that this great expence may be funded by applying to our most gracious Sovereign for such carriages as may be wanted, nor do your Committee doubt but that upon a proper application such will be granted'.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/31/11): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': 'Nevis: Upon Charles Fort: five 24lbbers, five 18lbbers, two 12lbbers, four 9lbbers, two 6lbbers and three 4lbbers, Condition: in general pretty good'.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/49/21): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': 'Nevis: Upon Charles Fort: five 24lbbers, five 18lbbers, two 12lbbers, four 9lbbers, two 6lbbers and three 4lbbers, Condition: in general pretty good'.

9/12/1772 (PRO CO186/5): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: Another request is made to the Gunner at Charles Fort to stop firing at far off ships.

30/12/1772 (PRO CO186/6): Ralph Payne to Council and Assembly of Nevis: Refers to the Gunner at Charles Fort: 'The Captain Gunner of Fort Charles, you will find an a more accurate enquiry is in possession of no orders from me 'to fire at every trading vessel that comes within gun shot and does not pay a literal obedience to them' nor has he received any from me which if properly and discreetly executed can possibly be interpreted as distressing and injurious to the commerce of your island. My 7th instruction to him directs that every topsail [underlined] vessel coming within reach of the fort, shall salute the King's flag by lowering her topsail or firing guns; on neglect of which coercive means are to be pursu'd to compell the commander of her to the obedience of this duty...it is an instruction immemorially observed in every part of my government with precision and without complaint...I am perfectly aware of the dangerous consequences which may arise to trade from a

gunner's licentious abuse of his instructions'. The Gunner will be told to provide regular accounts of the powder and shot the he has used and will be given a warning.

1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'In Fort Charles: eighty small arms in the armory, a parcel of bad flints and a ½ barrel of musket balls. Cannon and shot: The carriages in general want great repair. One hundred and eighty one 24lb shot and five cannon carrying that size shot mounted, three hundred and thirty one 18lb shot and five cannon carrying that size shot mounted, three hundred and sixty five 12lb shot and two cannon carrying that size shot mounted, one hundred and thirty 9lb shot and four cannon carrying that size shot mounted, two hundred and seven 6lb shot and two cannon carrying that size shot mounted, sixty five 4lb shot and fifteen cannon carrying that size shot not mounted. Forty eight rammers and sponge heads with staves for the above cannon, thirty different models for making cartridges for the above cannon, twelve worms and twelve copper ladles with staves for the above cannon, thirty six handseeks, one ginn with rope compleat, two iron crows, one sledge hammer, one speaking trumpet, two half moon flags with spare butting for mending them, three priming horns, three buckets, four copper and one tin measure for measuring powder, 30lbs match, eleven reams of cartridge paper, 100lb of junk for wadding, one bell, 1twelve hour glasses, a small parcel of turpentine, tar, paint, lamblack and linseed oil, eight muskets, eight cartridge boxes in use of the matrosses, quantity of powder will appear in the powder account hereunto annexed. The fort officers house and offices in good order, the matrosses barracks, armory and magazine in very bad order. The parapit walls, platform and fflag staff in a most ruinous condition'.

30/6/1774 (PRO CO186/8): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: Robert Thompson is Captain of the forts.

26/9/1778 (PRO CO153/24): William Burt to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'In order that I might not be surprized, I had given orders to the island of Nevis on the appearance of a fleet, which they do not know, by day to fire three guns at five minutes distance from each other if by night to make two large fires; the one on Saddle Hill, the other at Pelican point'.

24/11/1778 (PRO CO186/7): William Mathew Burt to Council of Nevis: Mathew Burt wants them to use Saddle Hill and Pelican Point for alarm beacons.

15/4/1779 (PRO CO186/7): William Burt Weekes to Council and Assembly of Nevis: Burt Weekes is the Fort Major. There are not enough handspikes in the forts to be able to operate the guns. The Council and Assembly agree to provide forty-eight immediately.

10/7/1779 (PRO CO186/7): William Mathew Burt to Council of Nevis: 'Under this cover you have returned the rough out lines of fort Charles, I have marked out the merlines and embrasures as they strike me to be the most beneficial for the fort, you will observe ten guns mounted on the face next to the sea; here I would recommend placing the five 24lbbers and the five 18lbbers; the embrasures are so marked that any cannon will bear on an object placed at sixty yards distance; I have also marked two embrasures on the line which runs to the barracks, here I would recommend placing your two 12lbbers; on the line to the southward of your flagg staff; I have marked six embrasures you have four good 9lbbers (1 indeed wants a carriages) these I would recommend placing on this, before any vessel comes abreast of the fort you might always make use of the two 18lbbers next to the flag staff, of the line facing the sea and when the vessels have passed the southern line those two 18lbbers may be run out in front and thus answer two purposes. Your two 6lbbers I wou'd advise being placed one

on each side of your gate, it is now quite naked and defenceless. Your seven 4lbbers may be carried on the lines of the fort which command the country and prevent the approach of an enemy on those sides, which are at present naked and defenceless. They will serve equally well for salutes there as they now do where they are, or if you moved only four and left three to support the Custom House when called on where they now are places they would answer every purpose. You will be pleased to observe in the embrasures at each angle there is a dotted line that widens the embrasures on that side, more than it would otherways be and wou'd be in my opinion advantageous. I would beg to recommend to the person who builds your merlins that he first strikes the center line of the embrasures and also the center line of the merlins and from these build each embrasure is 12ft wide in the outer openings, 4ft in the center and 8ft in the expanse within...P.S. The merlins are not all the same size this is owing to the different lengths of the lines. I have measured and marked them'.

17/4/1780 (PRO CO153/24): William Mathew Burt to Lords of Trade and Plantations: Burt went to Nevis and '...urged putting their principal fort immediately into order, the Assembly assured me they would'.

1782 (NARCH): 'An accurate map of the islands of St. Christophers and Nevis in the West Indies by an Officer with the positions of the English and French fleets': 'The Great Fort' is shown (Fig. C1g).

16/2/1782 (PRO CO152/62/190): John R. Herbert to General Shirley: 'On 11/2/1782 '...the French fleet consisting of twenty six two-decked ships and twenty small craft passed our fort in a line a head...the headmost ships were certainly near enough for some of our guns to have reached them, but on taking the advice of the Privy Council which I had convened at the fort house, I thought that any attack from us would be the height of folly and would inevitably bring their whole line of fire on an open and defenceless battery of a few old and very indifferent cannon with a single artillery man to manage them. I have however the pleasure to assure your excellency that on this occasion there was every appearance of ardour and spirit both in the officers and privates in our small band of militia...On maturely considering our situation that our whole force consisted in less than 300 militia, indifferently armed and trained; that we had no post of any strength to retire to and that if we had time enough to throw up a redoubt it must be defended by the planters and inhabitants who would of course be thereby obliged to abandon their wives, families and estates to the mercy of soldiery irritated by an ill judged resistance and that the militia were already nearly worn out with fatigue and watching. It was therefore thought that any opposition would be little better than madness; and that it would be more adviseable to propose articles of capitulation for ourselves'. They then sent terms of their own to the French. On 18/2/1782 the French took possession of Nevis: the fire arms were surrendered but were returned after the oaths had been sworn. The French wanted to leave '...a serjeant with a small party in the fort but on our representing that some unfortunate broils had happened at St. Kitts and that so small a body would be insufficient to protect themselves against any insolence of the negroes, he agreed to leave no troops at all'.

1793 (BL): The history civil and commercial of the British Colonies in the West Indies by Bryan Edwards. Dublin: 'the principal fortification is at Charles Town and is called Charles Fort'.

3/4/1794 (PRO CO152/75): George Lord Forbes: 'The cannon at Charles Fort in the island of Nevis (which commands the bay) were either taken away or rendered unserviceable by the French in 1783 and we have now only two guns that can be depended upon to defend a road where a large property is afloat every season. The Council and Assembly of that island petitioned General Woodley last year

to this purpose. But his death prevented the matter being further moved since that time'. Nevis will pay for the powder, carriages, ammunition and mattrasses. Forbes requests '10 iron 12lbbers, side arms for the same, 150 round shot for each and 200 paper cartridges for them. N.B. Probably the quantity of artillery may be spared from that already supplied to the Leeward Islands'.

1797 (PRO CO152/78): 'Orders to be observ'd by the Captain and Master Gunner of His Majesty's Chief fort in the island of Nevis called Charles Fort': 'Article 4th: Every topsail vessel...coming within reach of your battery shall salute the King's Flag by lowering her topsails or firing guns, which if she neglects to do you are to fire a shot to the head of her, if hereon she does not bring to and send her boat on shore to the fort at this first shot, you are to fire a second astern of her, if hereon she does not comply and continues obstinate you are to fire a third shot into her and you are to endeavour with all the guns you can bring to bear to make her submit or to disable her. Article 5th: Any vessel whatsoever coming within gun shot of the fort not shewing colours...must be fired at as directed in the preceeding article'. Ships are not allowed to fly the Union Jack or the pendant as these are reserved for use by the Royal Navy, therefore: Article 6th: ...if any vessel shall presume so to do contrary...you shall cause those colours to be seized and you are to see the said proclamation complied with by firing shot as in the 4th article. Article 7th: You are not to suffer any vessel to come into the road of Charles Town or to anchor within reach of the guns of the fort after sunset, unless she send her boat on shore to the fort...you are to prevent this by firing shot as in the 4th Article. Article 8th: On notice in writing from any officer in the Custom House...alleging good and sufficient reason to detain a vessel you are to prevent her departing the road by firing shot as in article 4th'. Vessels also have to be shot at if they haven't presented their pass at the Fort. Ships that have been fired on have to pay to the gunner for his '...own use and benefit', 9s for the first shot and 18s for every shot afterwards provided that he does '...not presume on any pretext at your peril to fire shot contrary to the true intent and meaning of these orders'.

14/7/1801 (PRO CO152/82): Peter Butler to Council and Assembly of Nevis: Ships stopping at Nevis can now pay money in lieu of powder duty. Butler mentions a gunner at Charles Fort and a powder officer.

1810 (PRO CO700/ST. CHRISTOPHER AND NEVIS/6): 'Nevis by Sir Thomas Jeffreys'. The 'Great Fort' is shown at Charlestown (Fig. C1h).

6/1812 (PRO CO186/10): John Peterson: 'Guns fired in Fort Charles, weight of metal powder, shot and fuses received, expended or delivered from'. From January-June 1812, Peterson has fired salutes of several guns on five occasions, has fired alarm shots twice and fired four times at ships for lack of passes, not saluting, acting suspiciously, etc.

4/12/1812 (PRO CO186/10): John Peterson: 'State of Fort Charles': 'Ordnance: two long and two short heavy 8lbbers out of repair, four long light 12lbbers on good new carriages, three long light 12lbbers one damaged and another almost useless, one short heavy 12lbber on a disabled carriage, one long heavy 18lbber on a disabled carriage and almost useless, two large heavy 18lbbers old and dismounted, one long heavy 24lbber on a bad carriage. Side Arms: two copper ladles with staves and one without a staff, two wadhooks or worms with staves and to without, two wad hooks with sponges and staves, five rammers with staves and sponge heads, three spare rammer heads, five old and three new handspikes, three priming horns with wires, six packets tall cartridges, four formers for cartridges, one Union flag, one pair halyards, one trumpet, sixty rounds ready made paper

cartridges. Ammunition: 612lbs of gun powder, nineteen 9lber shot, seven hundred and fifty seven 12lber shot, thirty nine 18lber shot, one 24lber shot. Small arms: fifty five muskets. And some side boxes and other articles belonging to the Militia Artillery, six matrosses at £6.12.0 per month. N.B. there is no cartridge paper in the fort, the flag staff is insufficient and merely a temporary one. The magazine, barracks, cistern and gate require to be immediately repaired. The roof of the magazine is leaky and the powder and stores wherein are in imminent danger of being spoilt or damaged and the barracks are not habitable there are no signal flags (nor buntin to make them) for exchanging the island signals with His Majesty's ships and those together with a full seized for fflag, flag staff, halyards, carriages for all the guns except four handspikes, sheep skins and Jacks for the sponge heads, side arms for the heavy guns, oil and paint for the guns and carriages, sheet lead for aprons, new locks for the magazine and store room, a new gate, lanterns, hour glasses, old junk for wadding, cartridge paper and sundry other necessary articles much wanted'.

1/1/1813 (PRO CO186/10): John Peterson: 'State of Fort Charles': 'one long heavy double fortified 24lber old the vent worn to nearly $\frac{3}{4}$ inch diameter and upon a bad carriage, one long heavy double fortified 18lber in the same state as the above, the carriage half decayed and disabled and two more long double fortified 18lbers in the same state as the above but dismantled and honeycombed. four long light 12lbers, new, and upon excellent new hardwood carriages, three more of the same the same as above, but entirely without a carriage, one short double fortified 12lber an old but serviceable gun upon a disabled carriage, two short heavy 9lbers the same as the last and the carriages in the same state two very long light pounders, very old guns honey combed and the vents worn to nearly an inch diameter upon bad carriages, seventeen. Side Arms: one copper ladle with a staff and three without staves. one wadhook or worm with a staff and rammer head for 18lbers, two for 18lbers. two sponges with worms and staves and four rammers with staves and sponge heads for 12lbers. one rammer with a staff and sponge head for 9lber, five old and new hand spikes, three priming horns with wires. Round shot: one 24lb shot, thirty nine 18lb shot, seven hundred and fifty five 12lb shot and seventy six 9lb shot. Powder: 5544lbs in four barrels and ninety one half barrels, 405 $\frac{1}{2}$ lb in cartridges ready filled for guns, 5949 $\frac{1}{2}$ lb loaded drawn from guns and saved. Small arms: fifty six muskets. Laboratory and other stores: five packets of musket ball cartridges, thirty empty cannon cartridges of paper, four formers for cannon cartridges, one small Union flag, one pair old halyards, one trumpet, three side boxes and other small articles belonging to the field pieces of the militia Artillery. Six matrosses at £6.12.0 per month. N.B. The condition of the magazine and buildings, etc. and the general wants of the fort remain the same as per last report'.

14/1/1813 (PRO CO186/10): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: 'We herewith send you the report of the Committee of fortifications. Upon the subjects particularly recommended to their consideration on the 17/9/1813 and call your attention to necessity of immediately building magazine, mounting the other 4 x 12lbers, erecting a flag staff and providing materials for signal flags and request your house to concur with this Board in authorizing the said Committee to receive proposals for the above purposes'.

14/1/1813 (PRO CO186/10): Council of Nevis Minutes: In Charles Fort: Cannon: one old 24, 18 and 12lber, four new 12lbers with good carriages and three with bad carriages and one without a carriage. Two old 9lbers and two old long 9lbers with bad carriages. There are four whole and nine half barrels of powder. 'The magazine is greatly out of repair and by no means safe. The barracks and cistern are

wanting repair. A new gate is wanting and a new flagstaff. Some signal flags, handspikes, wadding and cartridge paper'.

4/1813 (PRO CO186/10): John Peterson: 'Guns fired in Fort Charles, weight of metal powder, shot and fuses received, expended or delivered from'. From January-March 1813, Peterson has fired alarm shots twice and has fired 4 times on ships for lack of passes, not having colours, not saluting, acting suspiciously, etc.

15/2/1815 (PRO CO152/105): Daniel Ware: Ware is the Lloyds Agent at Nevis: 'I think it incumbent upon me to state to you the very inadequate protection offered to shipping at anchor in this road as the fort which ought to be a protection is left in such a situation that it holds out a temptation to the enemy rather than a terror'. There are 7-9000lbs of powder in the fort and '...5 or 6 hired men are all they have to defend it, and being I may almost say without a Captain, it is more than probable that one 1/2 of them are generally absent and I have no hesitation in saying that 6 men might at any time take possession of it, destroy the powder, or take it away, turn the guns on the shipping or the town and totally destroy both'.

1/6/1816 (PRO CO186/11): F. J. Galpine: 'Guns fired in Fort Charles, weight of metal powder, shot and fuses received, expended or delivered from'. From March-June 1816, Galpine has fired seven salutes of several guns, has fired an alarm twice and has fired twice on ships passing without colours.

1/7/1816 (PRO CO186/11): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: F. J. Galpine is the Captain Gunner at Fort Charles. He reports that there is a great danger of the powder exploding (due to improper storage and the large amount of it) and destroying the fort. The cistern needs repairs and the gate is falling apart.

18/11/1819 (PRO CO186/11): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: Report on Charles Fort: The house requires '...new window shutters and outer doors with new stilings and water tables'. The steps have been repaired and the walls repainted. The roof in some places needs patching with shingles. 'The building comprising the stables and negro rooms is in a sad ruinous state'. They want the building pulled down and a new one built from the materials. The spouts from the magazine to the cistern need to be replaced and the roof of the cistern needs repairing. The sleeper in the magazine and part of the floor above needs repairing. The wall of the kitchen and the chimney need replacing. The cheeks or pillars at the gate require repair. The platform needs to be new laid and the embrasures repaired. Four carriages for the new 12lbbers need to be made, as do carriages for the short 12lber and two for the two short 9lbbers. The flagstaff and other carriages need painting. The fort is overgrown and the bushes need cutting down and the ditch needs clearing.

10/4/1820 (PRO CO186/11): John Peterson to Council and Assembly of Nevis: Peterson is Captain Gunner at Charles Fort. The matrosses at the fort are old: one has lost the use of his right hand and one is lame. The gun carriages are bad and the house and offices are falling apart: Peterson does not believe they will survive the next rainy season and he does not want his family there if the house, etc. are not repaired by then.

1821 (PRO CO187/3): Blue Book: Charges: 'Capt. Gunner at Fort Charles £200, Matrosses £316.16.0, Powder, cartridges, etc. £121.16.1 1/2, Repairs at Fort Charles £399.18.0, Barracks in part payment of expenses £831.1.6, supervisor to ditto £300. There are 2 small batteries or signal posts which yield no salary or emolument to the officers in charge and are merely repaired as signal posts. The

barracks was built at the expense of the colony for the occupation of His Majesty's troops and are of the following dimensions: 217ft length by 44ft broad'.

1826 (PRO CO187/4): Blue Book: Charges: Capt. Gunner John Peterson at Fort Charles £56, Sergeant at Arms Hobson Webbe £46.

24/4/1827 (PRO CO186/13): Assembly to President and Council of Nevis: The Assembly want to buy a flagstaff for Fort Charles for £29.18.0. They want the Captain Gunner to pay for it.

24/4/1827 (PRO CO186/13): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: The Council disagree that the flagstaff should be bought, as this price is far too expensive and, anyway, the cost should be borne by the (Assembly based) Board for forts and fortifications.

24/4/1827 (PRO CO186/13): Assembly to President and Council of Nevis: It turns out that the Assembly had actually already bought the flag staff and put it up in Charles Fort, before they asked the Council if they could get one.

24/4/1827 (PRO CO186/13): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: The Council demands the Assembly take the flag staff down and '...that they do advertise the same for sale in consequence of the honourable board of Council having refused their sanction to the payment of the costs'.

1/7/1829 (PRO CO186/13): John Peterson to Council of Nevis: The Council were supposed to give £400 for fort repairs. This has not yet happened. The barracks have blown down, the magazine has a 'decaying' roof and the cistern leaks. The house and offices are in a 'state of great dillapidation'. Peterson says he will take down half of the magazine and use the materials to repair the other half. He will also build four room barracks across the fort and will repair the house, offices and cistern.

6/9/1832 (PRO CO186/14): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: The Board of Forts and Fortifications report: Fort Charles, the walls are '...much out of repair, moat is grown up with bushes, the platform is rugged and uneven'. Four matrosses are needed. The carriages are unfit and should either be repaired or replaced with spares from Brimstone Hill. The barracks are totally destroyed and '...not a vestige remains'. The cistern is out of repair and the one matross is living in the magazine. The '...dwelling house and outbuildings are in disrepair' and the doors and windows of the outbuildings have fallen off. The three matrosses will be paid \$8 a month.

1833 (PRO CO187/7): Blue Book: Phillip Prothero Claxton is Capt. Gunner at Fort Charles.

1834 (PRO CO187/8): Blue Book: Military charges: A '...dwelling house kept in repair at Charles Fort at the expence of the colony. An annual sum of £50 paid by the colony for rent of a house for use as barracks by Jason's detachment at Nevis'. There are 82 officers and 157 rank and file (including 13 gunners) in 4 companies in the Nevis militia. Thomas Duke is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is given a house to live in.

1835 (PRO CO187/9): Blue Book: Military charges: A '...dwelling house kept in repair at Charles Fort at the expence of the colony. An annual sum of £50 paid by the colony for rent of a house for use as barracks by Jason's detachment at Nevis'. Thomas Duke is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles.

1836 (PRO CO187/10): Blue Book: Military charges: A '...dwelling house kept in repair at Charles Fort at the expence of the colony. An annual sum of £50 paid by the colony for rent of a house for use as barracks by Jason's detachment at Nevis. There are 35 men (including 3 artillery men) in the Nevis militia. W. J. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles.

1837 (PRO CO187/11): Blue Book: Military charges: A '...dwelling house kept in repair at Charles Fort at the expence of the colony. An annual sum of £50 paid by the colony for rent of a house for use as

- barracks by Jason's detachment at Nevis. There are 29 men in the Nevis militia. W. J. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is paid £24 p.a.
- 1838 (PRO CO187/12): Blue Book: Military charges: A '...dwelling house kept in repair at Charles Fort at the expence of the colony. An annual sum of £50 paid by the colony for rent of a house for use as barracks by Jason's detachment at Nevis. There are 25 men in the Nevis militia. W. J. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is paid £24 p.a.
- 1839 (PRO CO187/13): Blue Book: No military expenditure. The militia has 25 men. W. J. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. Nicholson gets £8 'in fees'.
- 1840 (PRO CO187/14): Blue Book: No military expenditure. The militia has 23 men. W. J. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. Nicholson gets £9 'in fees'.
- 1841 (PRO CO187/15): Blue Book: £34 spent on forts. The militia has 20 men. W. J. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. A matross, Benjamin Sampson, has been employed at Fort Charles on a salary of £24 p.a. and a house.
- 1842 (PRO CO187/16): Blue Book: £24 spent on forts. The militia has 20 men. W. J. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles.
- 1843 (PRO CO187/17): Blue Book: £10 spent on forts. There are no men in the militia. W. J. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. Nicholson is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid from the Treasury.
- 1844 (PRO CO187/18): Blue Book: £27.10.1 1/2 spent on forts. W. J. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles and is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £24 p.a. and a house.
- 1845 (PRO CO187/19): Blue Book: £328.16.0 (with an additional expenditure of £117.6.2 1/2 on Fort Charles) spent on the forts. The additional expense was due to dwelling house at Fort Charles needing repair. This has been finished and was paid for from the Public Treasury. W. J. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles and is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £21.6.8 p.a. and has a house. Militia has not been called since 1839.
- 1846 (PRO CO187/20): Blue Book: £71.6.8 spent on forts. W. J. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles and is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £21.6.8 p.a. and a house. 'The 2 military posts for the defence of the town of Charlestown and its harbour are Fort Charles and Black Fort. One situated on the south side and the other on the north side of the bay. The sum of £50 sterling was during the year 1846 voted by the legislature for the repairs of Fort Charles, which repairs consisted of the re-erection of a new flag staff, the previous one having been blown down. On this staff is hoisted nightly a light for the guidance of the steamers and other vessels coming into the harbour. A new gate was likewise placed at the entrance to the fort; the balance of the grant was next expended in repairing the magazine, but which sum was not sufficient to put it in a perfect state of repair and a further sum is required for this purpose; say about £25 sterling. All the guns require to be remounted an new carriages, the old ones being entirely decayed and the guns being on the ground, unserviceable. These forts are under the control of the colony and not of the ordnance department'.
- 1847 (PRO CO187/21): Blue Book: L. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles and is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £21.6.8 p.a. and a house.

- 1848 (PRO CO187/22): Blue Book: L. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles and is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £21.6.8 p.a. and a house.
- 1849 (PRO CO187/23): Blue Book: No expenditure on forts. L. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £21.6.8 p.a. and a house.
- 1850 (PRO CO187/24): Blue Book: No expenditure on forts. L. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £21.6.8 p.a. and a house.
- 1851 (PRO CO187/25): Blue Book: No expenditure on forts. L. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £21.6.8 p.a. and a house.
- 1852 (PRO CO187/26): Blue Book: No expenditure on forts. W. C. Lamond is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £21.6.8 p.a. and a house.
- 1853 (PRO CO187/27): Blue Book: No expenditure on forts. W. C. Lamond is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles.
- 1854 (PRO CO187/28): Blue Book: £8.7.6 spent on the forts. There has been an outbreak of cholera in the jail. W. C. Lamond is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £8.17.10 p.a.
- 1855 (PRO CO187/29): Blue Book: £10.7.11 spent on the forts. W. C. Lamond is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £8.17.10 p.a. but no house.
- 1856 (PRO CO187/30): Blue Book: No expenditure on forts. W. C. Lamond is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £8.17.10 p.a.
- 1857 (PRO CO187/31): Blue Book: W. C. Lamond is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £8.17.10 p.a.
- 1858 (PRO CO187/32): Blue Book: Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, the Capt. Gunner's position has gone.
- 1859 (PRO CO187/33): Blue Book: Lamond died in April 1858 and Sampson died August 1849.
- 1860 (PRO CO187/34): Blue Book: James Maynard is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. Matthew Huggins is Matross of Fort Charles.
- 1861 (PRO CO187/35): Blue Book: James D. Maynard is Capt. Gunner at Fort Charles. He gets a house. William Washington is Matross at Fort Charles (appointed 1861).
- 1862 (PRO CO187/36): Blue Book: James D. Maynard is Capt. Gunner at Fort Charles. He gets a house. William Washington is Matross at Fort Charles (appointed 1861).
- 1863 (PRO CO187/37): Blue Book: £10.14.9 spent on the forts. James D. Maynard is Capt. Gunner at Fort Charles. He gets a house. William Washington is Matross at Fort Charles. He gets paid £8.17.9.
- 1864 (PRO CO187/38): Blue Book: 'There is no militia in Nevis at present, the last force was disbanded in 1837. No moneys have been expended for the support of any force other than the police. No moneys have been expended for arms, equipments, clothing, ammunition or for pay but for the

- police service'. James D. Maynard is Capt. Gunner at Fort Charles. William Washington is Matross at Fort Charles. He gets paid £8.17.9 from the Colonial Treasury.
- 1865 (PRO CO 187/39): Blue Book: John Alexander Iles is Capt. Gunner at Charles Fort. William Washington is Matross at Fort Charles. He gets paid £8.17.9.
- 1866 (PRO CO187/40): Blue Book: John Alexander Iles is Capt. Gunner at Charles Fort. He gets a house. William Washington is Matross at Fort Charles. He gets paid £8.17.9.
- 1867 (PRO CO187/41): Blue Book: John Alexander Iles is Capt. Gunner at Charles Fort. He gets a house. William Washington is Matross at Fort Charles. He gets paid £8.17.9.
- 1868 (PRO CO700 ST.CHRISTOPHERANDNEVIS/14): Map of St. Christopher and Nevis: Fort Charles shown (Fig. C1j).
- 1868 (PRO CO187/42): Blue Book: Fort 'wages' are £8.17.0 plus incidental expenses of £12.6.1. John Alexander Iles is Capt. Gunner at Charles Fort. He gets a house. William Washington is Matross at Fort Charles. He gets paid £8.17.9. 'Forts and Batteries: There are 4 detached parcels of land in this island dedicated to the purposes of fortification. The first is called Fort Charles, which comprises a area of about 7 acres; the battery itself which is within the enclosure only 1 acre. It contains 8 usable guns, none of which are mounted; there is a house used as a magazine in extreme dilapidation; also a House for the officer denominated as Captain but not available on account of decay'.
- 1869 (PRO CO187/43): Blue Book: Position of Capt. Gunner at Fort Charles has now gone. William Washington is Matross at Fort Charles. He gets paid £8.17.9. 'Fort Charles is situated on the southern side of the town Charlestown and covers an area of about 8 acres. The buildings sometimes used for quarantine purposes, are in bad order. There are 8 serviceable, but dismounted guns on the battery'.
- 1870 (PRO CO187/44): Blue Book: William Washington is Matross at Fort Charles. He gets paid £8.17.0. Iles has retired and gets a pension from the island.
- 1/1/1871 (NARCH): John Alexander Burke Isles: 'Map of the Island of Nevis': Fort Charles is shown (Fig. C1k).
- 1871 (PRO CO187/45): Blue Book: Charles Herbert is matross at Charles Fort. He is paid £8.17.0.
- 1872 (PRO CO187/46): Blue Book: £5.4.6 spent on fort repairs. Charles Herbert is matross at Charles Fort. He is paid £8.17.0.
- 1873 (PRO CO187/47): Blue Book: Richard Herbert is matross at Charles Fort. He is paid £8.17.0.
- 1874 (PRO CO187/48): Blue Book: John Forbes is matross at Charles Fort. He is paid £8.17.0.
- 1875 (PRO CO187/49): Blue Book: John Forbes is matross at Charles Fort. He is paid £8.17.0.
- 1876 (PRO CO187/50): Blue Book: John Forbes is matross at Charles Fort. He is paid £8.17.0.

C 9.4 Descriptions from other sources:

- 1/1987 (NARCH): *Fort Charles, Nevis, West Indies*: A report to the Nevis Historical and Conservation Society by Victor Smith.

C 9.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

- 1666 (BL): A history of the Caribby Islands. Translated by John Davies, London: ‘...for the security of the vessels that are in the Road and to prevent the invasion of an enemy there is a fort built, wherein are several great pieces which command as far as the sea. It secures also the publick storehouses into which all the commodities that are imported and necessary for the subsistence of the inhabitants are disposed’.
- 1671 (NARCH): ‘America being the latest and most accurate description of the new world’: ‘Nevis...the harbor call’d Bath Bay and the storehouse built about the same are secured by a great fort full of great guns’.
- 14/12/1672 (PRO CO1/29/161, CSP987): ‘The present state of the Leeward Islands’ by Sir Charles Wheler: ‘From Pellicans Point to Musketi Bay is all the leeward side of the island about five English mile in length, for the defence of which there are about thirty pieces of cannon mounted upon the platforms of Pellicans Point, the old rock, the old fort, Duke’s Sconce, Morton’s Bay and if I had stayed I would have raised one at Musketi Bay it being the best landing of the leeward side especially from St. Christopher...In the time of the warr the inhabitants did by the hands of their slaves run a line all along the coast, but I had persuaded them to make little redoubts, shut up as well to the land as to the sea that they might doe with the same expense of hands as their long line, because their line being very slight and without a trench (for I saw the ruins of it) an enemy would passe it anywhere which would endanger the losse of ye island, in regard their men were extended five mile in length and that an enemy might be landing at ye same time all along; but since my coming away I think they are distracted from it and will runne their slight line without any fastness except that of Pellican Point, by reason it is on high land, in a kinde of promontary all the other platformes being open’.
- 18/6/1673 (PRO CO1/30/102, CSP1669-1674, 1109): William Stapleton to Council of Plantations: ‘they [the Dutch] came insight of this island [Nevis] with French colours...they came in faire with Pellican Point Fort putting out their Dutch colours...fired only half a score shott, wee fired severall at them and so smartly that we could perceive people going overboard with plugs to stop their leakes’.
- 10/5/1676 (PRO CO153/2): ‘An Account of the Caribbee Islands’ by Thomas Warner: ‘Nevis: Fort at Morton’s Bay with five guns, Duke’s Sconce with four guns, Old Road fort with nine guns, Black Rock fort with five guns, A platform at Charles Town with three guns, Pelican Point fort with seven guns’.
- 22/11/1676 (PRO CO1/38/152, CSP1675-6, 1152): Answers to enquiries about Leeward Islands by William Stapleton: ‘There are neither fforts nor castles in any part of my government which may properly deserve that denomination, but such as are called soe and are but platformes. The first is Pellican Poynt, the windward poynt of ye road. There are mounted thirteen pieces of ordnance vizt. One 18lber, two 12lbers, two 8lbers, seven 6lbers, one 4lber; thirty one 18lb shot, forty two 12lb shot, forty two 8lb shot, eighty nine 6lb shot, eighteen 2 ½lb shot; powder two whole barrel, fifteen saker cartridges ready filled make 200lb powder besides is nine guns laden, with sponges, ladles, rammers and other things thought belonging...from Pellican Poynt fort to Morton’s Bay it is but one bay very good ground for anchoring’.

- 1687 (BL): The present state of his Majesties Isles and territories in America by Richard Blome, London:
 ‘...it hath a fort whereon are mounted several great guns, that command at a great distance, for the security of the ships in the Road or Harbour, which likewise secure their storehouses into which all the commodities imported for the use of the inhabitants are disposed’.
- 1687 (BL Sloane 45/35): William Hack: ‘A chart of the west end of Nevis and part of St. Christopher, originally described by Mr. John Jenifer, drawn in 1687 by William Hack’: Charles Fort is shown at position 2 with twenty-six cannon (Fig. C1a).
- 7/1701 (PRO CO152/4): Council of Nevis Minutes: ‘Upon motion of the Lt. Governor that a list of artillery stores that are wanting to be drawn and deliver’d him to send to his Excellency...the following list was accordingly drawn; two hundred good firelocks, four very long sakers, six 12lbbers and six 18lbbers of the longest size to lye in the forts as followeth: three guns for Long Point fort, four for Charles Fort, two for Black Rock fort, two for Old Road fort three for James fort, two for round hill platform. A sufficient quantity of shot fit for them’.
- 25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: ‘Charles Fort, fifteen guns, several of them very indifferent, some ill mounted’.
- ?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P 5): ‘Grand fort of twenty-two cannon’ shown (Fig. C1c).
- ?1703 (NARCH): ‘Par Beauvilliers’ French Intelligence Map: ‘Grand Fort of twenty-two cannon’ shown (Fig. C1d).
- c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): ‘A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty’s island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty’s Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereigne lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep’: ‘Charles Fort made to hold thirty guns, with twenty guns, one 24lber, one 18lber, five 12lbbers, six 9lbbers, seven 6lbbers, eighty barrels powder, nine hundred 18lb shot, eight hundred and forty 12lb shot, one thousand three hundred and seventy 9lb shot, five hundred and twenty 6lb shot, twenty 3lb shot, five reams of paper royal, five hundred weight of match, seven hundred and eighty hand grenades, thirty cases of partridge shot, six hundred weight of mussquett shott, sixty bullet moulds, forty rammers, five ladles, seven wad hooks, thirty sheepskins, three thousand five hundred flints, eight iron crows, one hundred shovels, one hundred spades, one hundred pick axes, fourteen powder horns, and seven lanthorns’.
- 21/2/1707 (PRO CO153/9, CSP1706-8, 776): Lt. Gov. Walter Hamilton to Lords of Trade and Plantations: ‘...the sending of an engineer, which if I had for some time, I would engage to make Charles Fort with the hill call’d Bath and Wignall’s Hill tenable longer than an enemy would be willing to stay...Sir John Jennings landed here in December last twenty pieces of ordnance which are all mounted in Charles and Black Rock Forts with powder, ball etc. proportional. Cartridge Paper excepted, which he had none to spare nor can I get none for any money likewise one hundred and fifty muskets’.
- 15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: ‘An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores’: ‘Charles Fort twenty four culverings of the largest size or 24lbbers, five

ordinary culverings or 18lbbers, two elder sort of demi-culvering or 12lbber, two lowest demi-culvering or 9lbber and one saker’.

1/9/1715 (PRO CO152/11): Fort Inventory: ‘Charles Fort, four demi-cannon, two culverin, three ordinary culverin, three lowest culverin, three seakers, fifteen cannon of all sizes, fifty two barrels powder, one thousand five hundred cannon ball, 400lbs match, seven quires of paper royal, three priming horns, fifteen ladles and rammers, five worms, three lanthorns, one flagg, five cases of cartridge, five iron crows, twelve formers, two bouch barrels, three tanned hides, 200lbs lead, one shovel/spade’.

11/7/1722 (PRO CO152/14, CSP1722-3, 220): John Hart to Lords of Trade and Plantations: ‘...very good anchorage off of Charles Town defended by a battery of eleven guns’.

1724 (PRO CO152/42): John Hart: ‘...at the island of Nevis there is one old ruined fort at the only road in it that has fifteen guns mounted provided only with powder and ball’.

10/7/1724 (PRO CO152/14, CSP1724-5, 260): John Hart: ‘...at the island of Nevis there is one old ruined fort at the only road in it that has fifteen guns mounted provided only with powder and ball’.

3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): ‘An Accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island’:
‘Charles Fort, out of repair. Guns mounted and what stores in the magazine: one union flag, one platform, one demi-canon royal, four demi-canon ordinary, five whole culverin, two quarter cannon ordinary, four demi-culverin, two sakers, 4004lbs powder, 1400 cannon ball, twenty casks of musket ball, five small armes, four priming horns, 20lb match, four linstocks, nine formers, three tann’d hides, two hand screws, two muscovy lights, eleven shovels and spades, three pick axes, seven iron crowes, five hand barrows, seven sponges fixt, eight sponge heads, eight rammer heads, ten ladles fixt, six ladles unfixt, seven worms, 12lbs tallow, two mattock hoes, ten hand spikes, one sledge, one gynne, twelve quires cartridge paper. Guns Dismounted, one saker and six minions. Lbs of powder received from sundry ships since 14/6/1727: 931lbs. Powder and ball expended in firing at sundry vessels passing the fort, in contempt of the King’s Union Flag and answering salutes from several vessels: 81lbs powder and seven cannon balls. Powder expended to proclaim the Honourable Lt. Gen. Mathew, Esq. Commander in Chief, one shot from a demi-cannon ordinary, three from whole culverin, two from quarter cannon ordinary, four from demi-culverin and one from saker using 81lbs powder. Ditto expended when his honour arrived here from St. Christopher: one shot from a demi-cannon ordinary, three from whole culverin, two from quarter cannon ordinary, four from demi-culverin and one from saker using 81lbs powder. Ditto when he whent off to St. Christopher: one shot from a demi-cannon ordinary, three from whole culverin, two from quarter cannon ordinary, four from demi-culverin and one from saker using 81lbs powder. Ditto expended to celebrate the King’s accession: three shot from a demi-cannon ordinary, three from whole culverin, two from quarter cannon ordinary, four from demi-culverin and one from saker using 405lbs powder. Ditto expended in firing 68 minute guns to condole the death of our late sovereign Lord King George: three shot from a demi-cannon royal, fifteen shot from demi-cannon ordinary, eighteen from whole culverin, eight from quarter cannon ordinary, sixteen from demi-culverin, five from saker, three from minions, using 561lbs powder. Ditto expended in proclaiming his Majesty King George II: three shot from a demi-cannon ordinary, three from whole culverin, two from quarter cannon ordinary, four from demi-culverin and one from saker using 105lbs powder. Ditto expended for the Prince and all the Royal Family: three shot from a demi-cannon

ordinary, three from whole culverin, two from quarter cannon ordinary, four from demi-culverin, and one from saker using 105lbs powder. Ditto for the Honourable the Lt. General's health: one shot from a demi-cannon royal, four shot from a demi-cannon ordinary, three from whole culverin, two from quarter cannon ordinary, and one from demi-culverin using 105lbs powder'.

29/1/1730 (PRO CO152/18, CSP1730, 326): Inventory of stores: ' Charles Fort: 5045 barrels of powder, one thousand five hundred flints, two hundred and forty nine 12lb shot, three hundred and eighty nine 18lb shot, six hundred and ninety three 24lb shot, one old jack, one old pennant, one old flag, forty four fusers useless, four hand barrows, three pick axes, one quire cartridge paper, seven skeems match, one cagg of tallow, one hand screw, forty four cross bar shot, sixty six new rammers and sponges, eleven sponges, eleven old hand spikes, five crows, two melting ladles, six worms, ten ladles fixt, eight spare ladles, four old spikes, seventeen new hand spikes, two halliards, seventeen sponge staffs'.

1/6/1731 (PRO CO186/2): Anonymous: 'The Committee appointed to inspect and examine into the stores at Charles Fort accordingly met this 1/6/1731 and have taken an accompt of the same which vizt. five quarter barrells of powder, fifty four half barrels of powder, twenty whole barrels of powder, four caggs bullets of one hundred and fifteen gross each, two large chests with four rounds cartridge for nineteen guns, twelve rammer staffs, three half pikes old, twelve cartridge boxes, one wooden mallet, fifty sponge heads, twenty-four rammer heads, five iron crows, one sledge, ten ladles, eight worms, three powder horns, four prickers, six lows, one hand screw, two double blocks, one old lanthorn, one small cask tallow, six formers for cartridges, forty old guns good for nothing, eighteen guns serviceable, 27lbs match, three quires cartridge paper, five hand barrows one of which broken, one hand saw, one old flagg Jack and pendant, seven sponges, twelve hand spikes, ten cut lashes. Signed Carew Brodbelt, Daniel Smith, Thomas Pym and Thomas Stewart'.

3/3/1732 (PRO CO186/2): Council of Nevis Minutes: 'Memoriall of Charles Bridgwater, Commander of His Majesty's forts and fortifications in this island': 'I thought it proper to lay before you the present state of the forts and fortifications as they now are. Charles Fort in a very bad condition, the montrosses have not any manner of cover to keep themselves, guns and ammunition out of the rains only a few little hutts that are thatcht which they are suffer'd to put up for shelter being just to windward of the magazine if any of those huts by accident should take fire the magazine roof being boards and shingles may prove the destruction of the whole fortification. I hope you'll be of opinion that the present powder house is not a proper place to hold the quantity of powder that is always lodged there for the reason before mentioned. The next is should a warr happen that powder house lying so open and exposed a shott from a ship into it will destroy the whole fortification and all in it, if it could be thought so proper to build a vault that would contain to hold the powder the roome that now contains it would be a good and sufficient place to accommodate the montrosses and the other to hold all the stores, there wants two guns in each flanker to secure the country part as well as a detachment of negroes to clear the fort within and without and to open the gutt side trench round the fort, it would be a very great service to the ffortification to have the cesterne mended and put in order there not being any thing to hold water for the use of the ffortification that being of great service if an accident of ffire should happen. Black Rock ffort has in it six good guns which as they are cannot be of service which it were put in order would be of great safe guard to the towne as well to the vessels in the road, from that there is a better discovery of vessels coming out

and going in being all open to the sea which cannot be so well discovered by the other fort, St. Christophers and the salt pond taking off the sight from Charles fort in the night if it was thought proper to keep Black Rock fort in order and keep a standing guard it may be done with little expence by the addition of three men more at the country charge there being twelve allow'd Charles Fort and as those forts are so near each other two may be drafted from thence which will make the number five which would be sufficient to keep a standing guard but that I hope will be consider'd that in time of alarms or any invasion that the two fortifications may be reinforced with such a number of guns without an addition, in Charles Fort are severall old small arms which are fitt for no manner of service nor worth mending if it thought agreeable I would dispose of them and provide others that may be of service to the fortification and country'.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP31734-5, 14): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations:

'...beyond Long Point at a little more than half a mile distance westward is the chief fortress of the island call'd Charles Fort. It stands on the south west point of the island. The road for the shipping is under the cannon of this fort and the town call'd Charles Town is in the bottom of this bay easterly from it the north point of this bay is call'd Black Rock...Charles Fort was laid out on a larger plan than the forts usually are in these islands. I imagine the whole circumference to contain near six acres, it is commanded by an eminence within half musket shot of it to landward on two sides it is an old ruinous rampart and ditch, the other two sides are to seaward and well fac'd with stone, the platforms well pav'd and a low parapet wall but no merlons. There are in it the following cannon: three 36lbbers, two 32lbbers, five 30lbbers, two 18lbbers, four 12lbbers, one 8lber, two 6lbbers, all these are well mounted and for these they have about 1260 rounds cannon shott, sixty chain and thirty six cross barr shott but for this battery and for all the other batteries in this island as well for the militia there is in the magazine but fifty four half barrels of powder and 4160 weight of musket ball, a very small quantity of match and a few gunners stores, seventeen small arms in tolerable order and forty nine spoilt for want of care. The fort is under a master gunner and twelve montrosses and the company of Brig. Jones regiment station'd in this island keep a small guard there'.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO186/2): Committee for Forts and Fortifications Minutes: 'We the Committee appointed to inspect and examine into the stores at Charles Fort have accordingly met this 31st August 1734 and have taken an account of the same which is as followeth, vizt: 29 whole barrells of powder full and 2 not full, 39 half barrells of powder full and 7 not full, 2 quarter barrells full and 1 not full, 15 keggss of powder, 1 great chest of 66 cartridges from 29lbbers to 4lbbers, 38 keggss bullets of 155 groce each, 1 large chest, 1 rammer staff, 3 half pikes old, 12 cartridge boxes, 1 wood mallet, 27 sponge heads and rammer heads, 5 iron crows, 1 sledge, 19 ladles some of which without handles, 9 worms, 3 powder horns, 3 prickers, 5 hows, 1 hand screw, 1 double block, 1 lanthorn not good, 1/4 cask tallow, 9 formers for cartridges, 46 old gunns good for nothing, 36 guns scarce fit for use, 73lbs match, 17 quire of cartridge paper, 5 rheam of cartridge paper, 4 hand barrows, 1 hand saw good for nothing, 2 flaggs: 1 Jack and 1 pendant, 12 sponges, 17 hand spikes, 7 cutlasses, 1 compleat ginn and a new ginn rope and 1 hammer'.

14/1/1735 (CSP1734-5, 457): Council of Trade and Plantations to Lords Spiritual and Temporal in Parliament: 'There is only one old fort in the island of Nevis, mounted with nineteen guns'.

- 5/6/1736 (PRO CO186/2): Committee for Forts and Fortifications to Assembly of Nevis: 'We the Committee appointed to inspect and examine into the stores at Charles Fort have accordingly met this 5th day of June 1736 and have taken an account of the same which is as followeth vizt: 13 whole and 67 half barrels powder, 3 quarter barrels powder, 12 small caske of powder, 1 great chest containing 167 cartridges for 24lbars to 3lbars, 18 fire arms fit for service and 4 not fit for service, 6 copper ladles with heads and 3 with staffs but no heads and 6 with no staffs or heads, 1 copper ladles with a staff and worm, 9 worms on staffs, 21 sponge heads and rammer heads, 6 long and 3 short tarr brushes, 15 formers for cartridges, 2 spare worms, 54 cross barr shot, 3 cross barr double head shot, 10 sponges hardly fit for use, 11 hand spickes good for nothing, 1240 great shott, 19 great guns on carriages very much out of repair, 1 compleat ginn and new ginn rope and a block, 1 Flagg, Jack and pendant very bad, halliards to the flagg very bad, 281lb match, 4 1/4 rheam cartridge paper, 3 hand barrows, 12 wooden cartridge boxes for the great guns, 35 keggs bullets, 100 hand granadoes, 40 iron wheels for carriages and 2 pair hand screws, Great shott: 590 x 18lb shot, 140 x 112lb shot and 56 cross bar and chain shot'.
- 16/10/1742 (PRO CO152/24/145): William Mathew: 'A state of the Leeward Islands for their defence': 'At Nevis: The chief fortress call'd Charles Fort has on it 19 pieces of cannon and about 1200 shot, a large quantity of musquet ball and in the magazine hardly 60 barrels of powder and yet is husbanded with greatest economy and round the island are about 20 pieces of cannon but few of them mounted.'
- 15/4/1746 (PRO CO152/25/156): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'There are 19 pieces of cannon in Charles Fort and around the island about 20 pieces of cannon more but a few of these are mounted except 7 at Black Rock'.
- 20/6/1755 (PRO CO152/28): Charles Payne: 'An account of ordnance their condition, the condition of the carriages, quantity of shot, powder and all other military stores': 'Nevis: Charles Fort: Mounted the carriages in very indifferent order: 3 x 24lbars, 3 x 18lbars, 2 x 12lbars, 4 x 9lbars and 1 x 4lber. Dismounted and without carriages but good cannon: 2 x 24lbars, 2 x 18lbars, 2 x 6lbars and 6 x 3lbars. 310 x 24lb shot, 479 x 18lb shot, 9 x 12lb shot, 102 x 9lb shot, 244 x 4lb shot. Rammers and sponges: 13 for 24lbars, 13 for 18lbars, 9 for 12lbars, 14 for 9lbars, 4 for 6lbars, 4 for 4lbars. 15 hand spikes, 5 barrels turpentine, A flag staff and 2 old flags. The magazine to have a new roof, new door and window frames and its walls new pointed. The gunners house so bad that it will be much cheaper to rebuild than repair it, the room over the gate wants repairing thoroughly. A pair of new gates wanting. The gin to be repaired. The gunner has reported to us that there are 2 pair more of iron wheels belonging to the fort, but sent to Mr. Vincent at Indian Castle by order of the Honourable the President...23 useless cannon in the 2 forts. We the committee appointed to inspect into the forts and fortifications of this island do make the above report of their condition'.
- 1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin': 'The town is defended by Fort Charles or the big fort, built to the south of the town, on a height that stretches out into the sea. This fort is very sound and is equipped with twenty-two cannon...when anchoring in front of the town, one should not approach the south west point on which the large fort is built any closer than a good cannon shot's length, because of a rocky key'. 'Fort Charles where there are twenty two pieces' shown at position M (Fig. C1f).

31/3/1768 (PRO CO186/5): President and Council of Nevis Minutes: 'We the committee appointed for inspecting the forts and all other publick buildings in this island did meet and inspect the 2 following forts: Charles Fort and Black Rock Fort and find that the number of cannon in Charles Fort is very sufficient provided there were new carriages for said cannon that there are not above 4 in any tolerable condition that the platform and breast work are in a ruinous condition that the very lime to repair these and to make an alteration to the platform which is necessary will amount to 100 hogsheads at least, that the guardhouses for the matrosses are scarcely tenantable, that the magazine (in which there is not exceeding 8 hundred weight of powder and 80 fuzees many useless) is a very weak one badly constructed and in no way answers the end or intention of a magazine. That there are in said fort a sufficient quantity of ball, matches and paper. It is the opinion of your Committee that to put these forts into tenable condition will requires £1200 currency and we are of opinion that this great expence may be funded by applying to our most gracious Sovereign for such carriages as may be wanted, nor do your Committee doubt but that upon a proper application such will be granted'.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/31/11): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': 'Nevis: Upon Charles Fort: five 24lbbers, five 18lbbers, two 12lbbers, four 9lbbers, two 6lbbers and three 4lbbers, Condition: in general pretty good'.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/49/21): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': 'Nevis: Upon Charles Fort: five 24lbbers, five 18lbbers, two 12lbbers, four 9lbbers, two 6lbbers and three 4lbbers, Condition: in general pretty good'.

1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'In Fort Charles: eighty small arms in the armory, a parcel of bad flints and a ½ barrel of musket balls. Cannon and shot: The carriages in general want great repair. One hundred and eighty one 24lb shot and five cannon carrying that size shot mounted, three hundred and thirty one 18lb shot and five cannon carrying that size shot mounted, three hundred and sixty five 12lb shot and two cannon carrying that size shot mounted, one hundred and thirty 9lb shot and four cannon carrying that size shot mounted, two hundred and seven 6lb shot and two cannon carrying that size shot mounted, sixty five 4lb shot and fifteen cannon carrying that size shot not mounted. Forty eight rammers and sponge heads with staves for the above cannon, thirty different models for making cartridges for the above cannon, twelve worms and twelve copper ladles with staves for the above cannon, thirty six handseeks, one ginn with rope compleat, two iron crows, one sledge hammer, one speaking trumpet, two half moon flags with spare butting for mending them, three priming horns, three buckets, four copper and one tin measure for measuring powder, 30lbs match, eleven reams of cartridge paper, 100lb of junk for wadding, one bell, 1twelve hour glasses, a small parcel of turpentine, tar, paint, lamblack and linseed oil, eight muskets, eight cartridge boxes in use of the matrosses, quantity of powder will appear in the powder account hereunto annexed. The fort officers house and offices in good order, the matrosses barracks, armory and magazine in very bad order. The parapit walls, platform and fflag staff in a most ruinous condition'.

15/4/1779 (PRO CO186/7): William Burt Weekes to Council and Assembly of Nevis: Burt Weekes is the Fort Major. There are not enough handspikes in the forts to be able to operate the guns. The Council and Assembly agree to provide forty-eight immediately.

10/7/1779 (PRO CO186/7): William Mathew Burt to Council of Nevis: 'Under this cover you have returned the rough out lines of fort Charles, I have marked out the merlines and embrasures as they strike me to be the most beneficial for the fort, you will observe ten guns mounted on the face next to the sea; here I would recommend placing the five 24lbbers and the five 18lbbers; the embrasures are so marked that any cannon will bear on an object placed at sixty yards distance; I have also marked two embrasures on the line which runs to the barracks, here I would recommend placing your two 12lbbers; on the line to the southward of your flag staff; I have marked six embrasures you have four good 9lbbers (1 indeed wants a carriages) these I would recommend placing on this, before any vessel comes abreast of the fort you might always make use of the two 18lbbers next to the flag staff, of the line facing the sea and when the vessels have passed the southern line those two 18lbbers may be run out in front and thus answer two purposes. Your two 6lbbers I would advise being placed one on each side of your gate, it is now quite naked and defenceless. Your seven 4lbbers may be carried on the lines of the fort which command the country and prevent the approach of an enemy on those sides, which are at present naked and defenceless. They will serve equally well for salutes there as they now do where they are, or if you moved only four and left three to support the Custom House when called on where they now are places they would answer every purpose. You will be pleased to observe in the embrasures at each angle there is a dotted line that widens the embrasures on that side, more than it would otherwise be and would be in my opinion advantageous. I would beg to recommend to the person who builds your merlins that he first strikes the center line of the embrasures and also the center line of the merlins and from these build each embrasure is 12ft wide in the outer openings, 4ft in the center and 8ft in the expanse within...P.S. The merlins are not all the same size this is owing to the different lengths of the lines. I have measured and marked them'.

16/2/1782 (PRO CO152/62/190): John R. Herbert to General Shirley: 'On 11/2/1782 '...the French fleet consisting of twenty six two-decked ships and twenty small craft passed our fort in a line a head...the headmost ships were certainly near enough for some of our guns to have reached them, but on taking the advice of the Privy Council which I had convened at the fort house, I thought that any attack from us would be the height of folly and would inevitably bring their whole line of fire on an open and defenceless battery of a few old and very indifferent cannon with a single artillery man to manage them. I have however the pleasure to assure your excellency that on this occasion there was every appearance of ardour and spirit both in the officers and privates in our small band of militia...On maturely considering our situation that our whole force consisted in less than 300 militia, indifferently armed and trained; that we had no post of any strength to retire to and that if we had time enough to throw up a redoubt it must be defended by the planters and inhabitants who would of course be thereby obliged to abandon their wives, families and estates to the mercy of soldiery irritated by an ill judged resistance and that the militia were already nearly worn out with fatigue and watching. It was therefore thought that any opposition would be little better than madness; and that it would be more advisable to propose articles of capitulation for ourselves'. They then sent terms of their own to the French. On 18/2/1782 the French took possession of Nevis: the fire arms were surrendered but were returned after the oaths had been sworn. The French

wanted to leave '...a serjeant with a small party in the fort but on our representing that some unfortunate broils had happened at St. Kitts and that so small a body would be insufficient to protect themselves against any insolence of the negroes, he agreed to leave no troops at all'.

3/4/1794 (PRO CO152/75): George Lord Forbes: 'The cannon at Charles Fort in the island of Nevis (which commands the bay) were either taken away or rendered unserviceable by the French in 1783 and we have now only two guns that can be depended upon to defend a road where a large property is afloat every season. The Council and Assembly of that island petitioned General Woodley last year to this purpose. But his death prevented the matter being further moved since that time'. Nevis will pay for the powder, carriages, ammunition and mattresses. Forbes requests '10 iron 12lbbers, side arms for the same, 150 round shot for each and 200 paper cartridges for them. N.B. Probably the quantity of artillery may be spared from that already supplied to the Leeward Islands'.

4/12/1812 (PRO CO186/10): John Peterson: 'State of Fort Charles': 'Ordnance: two long and two short heavy 8lbbers out of repair, four long light 12lbbers on good new carriages, three long light 12lbbers one damaged and another almost useless, one short heavy 12lber on a disabled carriage, one long heavy 18lber on a disabled carriage and almost useless, two large heavy 18lbbers old and dismounted, one long heavy 24lber on a bad carriage. Side Arms: two copper ladles with staves and one without a staff, two wadhooks or worms with staves and to without, two wad hooks with sponges and staves, five rammers with staves and sponge heads, three spare rammer heads, five old and three new handspikes, three priming horns with wires, six packets tall cartridges, four formers for cartridges, one Union flag, one pair halyards, one trumpet, sixty rounds ready made paper cartridges. Ammunition: 612lbs of gun powder, nineteen 9lber shot, seven hundred and fifty seven 12lber shot, thirty nine 18lber shot, one 24lber shot. Small arms: fifty five muskets. And some side boxes and other articles belonging to the Militia Artillery, six mattresses at £6.12.0 per month. N.B. there is no cartridge paper in the fort, the flag staff is insufficient and merely a temporary one. The magazine, barracks, cistern and gate require to be immediately repaired. The roof of the magazine is leaky and the powder and stores wherein are in imminent danger of being spoilt or damaged and the barracks are not habitable there are no signal flags (nor buntin to make them) for exchanging the island signals with His Majesty's ships and those together with a full seized for fflag, flag staff, halyards, carriages for all the guns except four handspikes, sheep skins and Jacks for the sponge heads, side arms for the heavy guns, oil and paint for the guns and carriages, sheet lead for aprons, new locks for the magazine and store room, a new gate, lanterns, hour glasses, old junk for wadding, cartridge paper and sundry other necessary articles much wanted'.

1/1/1813 (PRO CO186/10): John Peterson: 'State of Fort Charles': 'one long heavy double fortified 24lber old the vent worn to nearly $\frac{3}{4}$ inch diameter and upon a bad carriage, one long heavy double fortified 18lber in the same state as the above, the carriage half decayed and disabled and two more long double fortified 18lbbers in the same state as the above but dismounted and honeycombed. four long light 12lbbers, new, and upon excellent new hardwood carriages, three more of the same the same as above, but entirely without a carriage, one short double fortified 12lber an old but serviceable gun upon a disabled carriage, two short heavy 9lbbers the same as the last and the carriages in the same state two very long light pounders, very old guns honey combed and the vents worn to nearly an inch diameter upon bad carriages, seventeen. Side Arms: one copper ladle with a staff and three without staves. one wadhook or worm with a staff and rammer head for 18lbbers, two

for 18lbers. two spunges with worms and staves and four rammers with staves and sponge heads for 12lbers. one rammer with a staff and sponge head for 9lber, five old and new hand spikes, three priming horns with wires. Round shot: one 24lb shot, thirty nine 18lb shot, seven hundred and fifty five 12lb shot and seventy six 9lb shot. Powder: 5544lbs in four barrels and ninety one half barrels, 405½ lb in cartridges ready filled for guns, 5949½ lb loaded drawn from guns and saved. Small arms: fifty six muskets. Laboratory and other stores: five packets of musket ball cartridges, thirty empty cannon cartridges of paper, four formers for cannon cartridges, one small Union flag, one pair old halyards, one trumpet, three side boxes and other small articles belonging to the field pieces of the militia Artillery. Six matrosses at £612.0 per month. N.B. The condition of the magazine and buildings, etc. and the general wants of the fort remain the same as per last report'.

14/1/1813 (PRO CO186/10): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: "We herewith send you the report of the Committee of fortifications. Upon the subjects particularly recommended to their consideration on the 17/9/1813 and call your attention to necessity of immediately building magazine, mounting the other 4 x 12lbers, erecting a flag staff and providing materials for signal flags and request your house to concur with this Board in authorizing the said Committee to receive proposals for the above purposes'.

14/1/1813 (PRO CO186/10): Council of Nevis Minutes: In Charles Fort: Cannon: one old 24, 18 and 12lber, four new 12lbers with good carriages and three with bad carriages and one without a carriage. Two old 9lbers and two old long 9lbers with bad carriages. There are four whole and nine half barrels of powder. 'The magazine is greatly out of repair and by no means safe. The barracks and cistern are wanting repair. A new gate is wanting and a new flagstaff. Some signal flags, handspikes, wadding and cartridge paper'.

15/2/1815 (PRO CO152/105): Daniel Ware: Ware is the Lloyds Agent at Nevis: 'I think it incumbent upon me to state to you the very inadequate protection offered to shipping at anchor in this road as the fort which ought to be a protection is left in such a situation that it holds out a temptation to the enemy rather than a terror'. There are 7-9000lbs of powder in the fort and '...5 or 6 hired men are all they have to defend it, and being I may almost say without a Captain, it is more than probable that one 1/2 of them are generally absent and I have no hesitation in saying that 6 men might at any time take possession of it, destroy the powder, or take it away, turn the guns on the shipping or the town and totally destroy both'.

18/11/1819 (PRO CO186/11): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: Report on Charles Fort: The house requires '...new window shutters and outer doors with new stilings and water tables'. The steps have been repaired and the walls repainted. The roof in some places needs patching with shingles. 'The building comprising the stables and negro rooms is in a sad ruinous state'. They want the building pulled down and a new one built from the materials. The spouts from the magazine to the cistern need to be replaced and the roof of the cistern needs repairing. The sleeper in the magazine and part of the floor above needs repairing. The wall of the kitchen and the chimney need replacing. The cheeks or pillars at the gate require repair. The platform needs to be new laid and the embrasures repaired. Four carriages for the new 12lbers need to be made, as do carriages for the short 12lber and two for the two short 9lbers. The flagstaff and other carriages need painting. The fort is overgrown and the bushes need cutting down and the ditch needs clearing.

C 9.6 Evidence for manning:

1671 (PRO CO1/27): Sir Charles Wheler to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'Pellican Point Fort...all that promontary is high rocky land upon the which is a scurvy platforme not soe good as I shall make it with twenty spades in a weeks time...if the king would be graciously pleased to cast the foundation of it, I know they will spare their negro hands to do very much of it themselves. I fixt upon this place rather than the old ffort (although you see some waters there which might be drawn together with some advantage) for ye reasons following: 1. Because it commands the principal roade which is called Bath Bay soe that the island may always be relieved by it and it is a feature in the case that all the French who make St. Christopher must hall close under this point and strike to the King's Pavilion or else they will be drove to leeward. 2. Because it will be less expense in regard the sea washes soe much of it. 3. Because the towne, which at my coming was called the Old Redstorehouse, which I have now honoured with the King's name, begins to increase and will shortly have five hundred men able to bear arms which will be secured under the fort. 4. But lastly and chiefly my reason is because under the north side of the highland is the Bath which coming from a hot spring takes that name and falls into the sea in such a sort of ditch or brooke that I persuade myself it is possible to make a harbour for shallops and ketches and vessels of seventy or eighty tonne if not better chiefly because the tract of land you see between the Bath and Charles Towne is marish and boggish and full of water and springs which may be gathered together and drawn into the Bath channel or brooke'.

24/7/1680 (CSP1677-1680, 1461): Assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'A file of men to be added to the standing guard at Charles Fort (formerly Pelican's Point) in consideration of the great number of guns there...agreed on proposal of the Governor that the battlements of Charles Fort be built in stone and lime'.

22/3/1699 (CSP1699, 201): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'The Assembly esteeming the Gunner's account of powder irregular proposed that he should not be paid till he had presented a proper account and should be dismissed...if he did not do so within ten days'.

24/8/1699 (CSP1699, 741): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: '...by the late act ships trading here were to pay arms as well as powder, so that the supply would rapidly increase, to write to Richard Carey [Agent for Nevis] to procure an armourer to live in the fort at an annual salary'.

1702 (PRO CO185/2/42): Nevis Act: 'An act for better securing this island against all assaults alarms, etc.' The gunner at Charles Fort will direct the number of fuses and cartridges that each Captain in the militia is required to possess.

13/1/1707 (PRO CO155/3): Council of Nevis Minutes: $\frac{2}{3}$ of 'dutiable slaves, masons and carpenters' are to work on Charles Fort and Black Rock fort. Ten 'mantrosses' and a Corporal are allotted for Charles Fort.

21/2/1707 (PRO CO153/9, CSP1706-8, 776): Lt. Gov. Walter Hamilton to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...the sending of an engineer, which if I had for some time, I would engage to make Charles Fort with the hill call'd Bath and Wignall's Hill tenable longer than an enemy would be willing to stay...Sir John Jennings landed here in December last twenty pieces of ordnance which are all mounted in Charles and Black Rock Forts with powder, ball etc. proportional. Cartridge Paper

excepted, which he had none to spare nor can I get none for any money likewise one hundred and fifty muskets’.

21/2/1707 (PRO CO152/7, CSP71706-8, 76): Lt. Gov. Walter Hamilton to Lords of Trade and Plantations:

‘...the sending of an engineer, which if I had for some time, I would engage to make Charles Fort with the hill call’d Bath and Wignall’s Hill (and if well provided) tenable longer than an enemy would be willing to stay’.

28/11/1711 (PRO CO152/9, CSP1711-2, 194): Sir Walter Douglas to Lords of Trade and Plantations:

Douglas has removed Milliken, the Fort Major at Nevis, for embezzling stores.

28/11/1711 (PRO CO153/11, CSP1711-2, 194): Sir Walter Douglas to Lords of Trade and Plantations:

Douglas has removed Milliken, the Fort Major at Nevis, for embezzling stores. John Butler has been sworn in his place.

21/12/1721 (PRO CO186/1): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: ‘We therefore desire your

concurrence...the charge of flooring a small room in Charles Fort (with boards) wherein the gunner now dwells for want of which the gunner complains may prejudice his health’.

20/3/1722 (PRO CO186/1): Petition of John Johnston: Johnston is ‘Gunner of the Nevis forts and platforms’.

23/4/1722 (PRO CO186/1): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: A vault is proposed for Charles

Fort to be used as a powder magazine. The present magazine could then be fitted out as a guardhouse.

25/4/1722 (PRO CO 155/6): Council of Nevis to Assembly of Nevis: The Council propose to build ‘...a

vault in Charles Fort for a magazine not only for the greater security of the powder but that the present powder house may be fitted for the accommodation of the troops’.

14/1/1723 (PRO CO186/1): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: ‘...this island to be put in the best

posture of defence...we therefore have ordered four guards out of His Majesty’s regular troops viz. at Long Point, Pelican Point, Black Rock and Musquitta Point and since these troops cannot subsist without provisions...supply each man with 1lb beef and 1lb bread per day’.

11/1723 (PRO CO186/1): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: Work on the vault and guardhouse at

Charles Fort has not started.

17/9/1725 (PRO CO186/1/30): Assembly to President and Council of Nevis: The Assembly agree that the

guardhouse should be refitted on the condition that someone be appointed to oversee the work and that 18d per day, per slave be paid to their owners’.

17/9/1725 (PRO CO186/1): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: Work on the vault and guardhouse has

still not started. However, the Assembly have agreed to carry out the work and the slave owners will be paid 18d per day for their slaves.

17/9/1725 (PRO CO186/1/30): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: There are only three

‘montrosses’ on the fort to raise the flag. The Council want the guardhouse refitted for some of the King’s Troops ‘...until provision be made to hire montrosses’. The Council requests fifty slaves to carry out the work.

17/9/1725 (PRO CO186/1/30): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: The Council agree to the

proposal and agree to pay for the montrosses and the King’s Troops for two months.

1726 (PRO CO152/6): Yearly expenses for Nevis: ‘Gunner for the fort £50, ten montrosses at £20 each

£500; July 25th, ¼ years sallery paid to day of next September to montrosses, £5 each to: Lawrence

Ely, James Sutton, James Creeve, John Tunnell, Isaac Bond, William Poole, George Graves, Thomas Marshall. 14th August, ¼ sallery to gunner Mr. Hopkey £12.10.0, 25th September, ¼ sallery to the seven montrosses above’.

23/2/1727 (PRO CO186/1, CSP1726-7, 503): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: Mr. Hopkey is Gunner at Charles Fort.

10/4/1727 (PRO CO186/1, CSP1726-7, 503): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: Hopkey has been firing at ships that are a long way from the shore. The Council and Assembly disapprove as they think it will discourage ships from trading at Nevis.

13/1/1730 (PRO CO186/1/121): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: A committee comprising Col. Charles Bridgwater and Major Williams, is appointed to check the stores at Charles Fort. Alexander de Cubillo is appointed as Gunner.

3/3/1732 (PRO CO186/2): Council of Nevis Minutes: ‘Memoriall of Charles Bridgwater, Commander of His Majesty’s forts and fortifications in this island’: ‘I thought it proper to lay before you the present state of the forts and fortifications as they now are. Charles Fort in a very bad condition, the montrosses have not any manner of cover to keep themselves, guns and ammunition out of the rains only a few little hutts that are thatcht which they are suffer’d to put up for shelter being just to windward of the magazine if any of those hutts by accident should take fire the magazine roof being boards and shingles may prove the destruction of the whole fortification. I hope you’ll be of opinion that the present powder house is not a proper place to hold the quantity of powder that is always lodged there for the reason before mentioned. The next is should a warr happen that powder house lying so open and exposed a shott from a ship into it will destroy the whole fortification and all in it, if it could be thought so proper to build a vault that would contain to hold the powder the roome that now contains it would be a good and sufficient place to accommodate the montrosses and the other to hold all the stores, there wants two guns in each flanker to secure the country part as well as a detachment of negroes to clear the fort within and without and to open the gutt side trench round the fort, it would be a very great service to the ffortification to have the cesterne mended and put in order there not being any thing to hold water for the use of the ffortification that being of great service if an accident of ffire should happen. Black Rock ffort has in it six good guns which as they are cannot be of service which it were put in order would be of great safe guard to the towne as well to the vessels in the road, from that there is a better discovery of vessels coming out and going in being all open to the sea which cannot be soe well discovered by the other ffort, St. Christophers and the salt pond takeing off the sight from Charles ffort in the night if it was thought proper to keep Black Rock ffort in order and keep a standing guard it may be done with little expence by the addition of three men more at the country charge there being twelve allow’d Charles Ffort and as those fforts are so near each other two may be drafted from thence which will make the number five which would be sufficient to keep a standing guard but that I hope will be consider’d that in time of alarms or any invasion that the two ffortifications may be reinforced with such a number of guns without an addition, in Charles Ffort are severall old small arms which are fitt for no manner of service nor worth mending if it thought agreeable I would dispose of them and provide others that may be of service to the ffortification and country’.

3/3/1732 (PRO CO186/2): Assembly to Council and President of Nevis: ‘We readily concur with you that the fforts should be kept in good repair and that those things mentioned in the abstract should be

done, when the levy is raised we will take care to appropriate a summe sufficient for that purpose'. The Gunner at Charles Fort is firing at ships that come near the fort and the Assembly believe this is stopping ships coming in to trade.

6/7/1733 (PRO CO186/2): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: The work at Charles Fort has started, but thirty more slave have been requested whilst '...the Negroes belonging to Charles Fort go off to repair the breastworks'. The planters will be paid 18d per slave per day.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP31734-5, 14): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...beyond Long Point at a little more than half a mile distance westward is the chief fortress of the island call'd Charles Fort. It stands on the south west point of the island. The road for the shipping is under the cannon of this fort and the town call'd Charles Town is in the bottom of this bay easterly from it the north point of this bay is call'd Black Rock... Charles Fort was laid out on a larger plan than the forts usually are in these islands. I imagine the whole circumference to contain near six acres, it is commanded by an eminence within half musket shot of it to landward on two sides it is an old ruinous rampart and ditch, the other two sides are to seaward and well fac'd with stone, the platforms well pav'd and a low parapet wall but no merlons. There are in it the following cannon: three 36lbbers, two 32lbbers, five 30lbbers, two 18lbbers, four 12lbbers, one 8lber, two 6lbbers, all these are well mounted and for these they have about 1260 rounds cannon shott, sixty chain and thirty six cross barr shott but for this battery and for all the other batteries in this island as well for the militia there is in the magazine but fifty four half barrels of powder and 4160 weight of musket ball, a very small quantity of match and a few gunners stores, seventeen small arms in tolerable order and forty nine spoilt for want of care. The fort is under a master gunner and twelve montrosses and the company of Brig. Jones regiment station'd in this island keep a small guard there'.

14/4/1735 (CSP1734-5, 530): William Mathew to Mr. Popple: The gunner used to receive the powder duty, but embezzled it due to poverty. The Treasurer now receives the duty instead.

10/3/1740 (PRO CO153/16): 'Instructions to William Mathew': 'To stop embezzlement a salaried storekeeper should be got'. The store keeper should send copies of his accounts to Britain every six months.

9/12/1772 (PRO CO186/5): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: Another request is made to the Gunner at Charles Fort to stop firing at far off ships.

30/12/1772 (PRO CO186/6): Ralph Payne to Council and Assembly of Nevis: Refers to the Gunner at Charles Fort: 'The Captain Gunner of Fort Charles, you will find an a more accurate enquiry is in possession of no orders from me 'to fire at every trading vessel that comes within gun shot and does not pay a literal obedience to them' nor has he received any from me which if properly and discreetly executed can possibly be interpreted as distressing and injurious to the commerce of your island. My 7th instruction to him directs that every topsail [underlined] vessel coming within reach of the fort, shall salute the King's flag by lowering her topsail or firing guns; on neglect of which coercive means are to be pursu'd to compell the commander of her to the obedience of this duty...it is an instruction immemorially observed in every part of my government with precision and without complaint...I am perfectly aware of the dangerous consequences which may arise to trade from a gunner's licentious abuse of his instructions'. The Gunner will be told to provide regular accounts of the powder and shot the he has uses and will be given a warning.

- 1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'In Fort Charles: eighty small arms in the armory, a parcel of bad flints and a ½ barrel of musket balls. Cannon and shot: The carriages in general want great repair. One hundred and eighty one 24lb shot and five cannon carrying that size shot mounted, three hundred and thirty one 18lb shot and five cannon carrying that size shot mounted, three hundred and sixty five 12lb shot and two cannon carrying that size shot mounted, one hundred and thirty 9lb shot and four cannon carrying that size shot mounted, two hundred and seven 6lb shot and two cannon carrying that size shot mounted, sixty five 4lb shot and fifteen cannon carrying that size shot not mounted. Forty eight rammers and sponge heads with staves for the above cannon, thirty different models for making cartridges for the above cannon, twelve worms and twelve copper ladles with staves for the above cannon, thirty six handseeks, one ginn with rope compleat, two iron crows, one sledge hammer, one speaking trumpet, two half moon flags with spare butting for mending them, three priming horns, three buckets, four copper and one tin measure for measuring powder, 30lbs match, eleven reams of cartridge paper, 100lb of junk for wadding, one bell, twelve hour glasses, a small parcel of turpentine, tar, paint, lamblack and linseed oil, eight muskets, eight cartridge boxes in use of the matrosses, quantity of powder will appear in the powder account hereunto annexed. The fort officers house and offices in good order, the matrosses barracks, armory and magazine in very bad order. The parapit walls, platform and flag staff in a most ruinous condition'.
- 30/6/1774 (PRO CO186/8): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: Robert Thompson is Captain of the forts.
- 26/9/1778 (PRO CO153/24): William Burt to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'In order that I might not be surprized, I had given orders to the island of Nevis on the appearance of a fleet, which they do not know, by day to fire three guns at five minutes distance from each other if by night to make two large fires; the one on Saddle Hill, the other at Pelican point'.
- 15/4/1779 (PRO CO186/7): William Burt Weekes to Council and Assembly of Nevis: Burt Weekes is the Fort Major. There are not enough handspikes in the forts to be able to operate the guns. The Council and Assembly agree to provide forty-eight immediately.
- 16/2/1782 (PRO CO152/62/190): John R. Herbert to General Shirley: 'On 11/2/1782 '...the French fleet consisting of twenty six two-decked ships and twenty small craft passed our fort in a line a head...the headmost ships were certainly near enough for some of our guns to have reached them, but on taking the advice of the Privy Council which I had convened at the fort house, I thought that any attack from us would be the height of folly and would inevitably bring their whole line of fire on an open and defenceless battery of a few old and very indifferent cannon with a single artillery man to manage them. I have however the pleasure to assure your excellency that on this occasion there was every appearance of ardour and spirit both in the officers and privates in our small band of militia...On maturely considering our situation that our whole force consisted in less than 300 militia, indifferently armed and trained; that we had no post of any strength to retire to and that if we had time enough to throw up a redoubt it must be defended by the planters and inhabitants who would of course be thereby obliged to abandon their wives, families and estates to the mercy of soldiery irritated by an ill judged resistance and that the militia were already nearly worn out with fatigue and watching. It was therefore thought that any opposition would be little better than madness; and that it would be more adviseable to propose articles of capitulation for ourselves'.

They then sent terms of their own to the French. On 18/2/1782 the French took possession of Nevis: the fire arms were surrendered but were returned after the oaths had been sworn. The French wanted to leave '...a serjeant with a small party in the fort but on our representing that some unfortunate broils had happened at St. Kitts and that so small a body would be insufficient to protect themselves against any insolence of the negroes, he agreed to leave no troops at all'.

1797 (PRO CO152/78): 'Orders to be observ'd by the Captain and Master Gunner of His Majesty's Chief fort in the island of Nevis called Charles Fort': 'Article 4th: Every topsail vessel...coming within reach of your battery shall salute the King's Flag by lowering her topsails or firing guns, which if she neglects to do you are to fire a shot to the head of her, if hereon she does not bring to and send her boat on shore to the fort at this first shot, you are to fire a second astern of her, if hereon she does not comply and continues obstinate you are to fire a third shot into her and you are to endeavour with all the guns you can bring to bear to make her submit or to disable her. Article 5th: Any vessel whatsoever coming within gun shot of the fort not shewing colours...must be fired at as directed in the preceeding article'. Ships are not allowed to fly the Union Jack or the pendant as these are reserved for use by the Royal Navy, therefore: 'Article 6th: ...if any vessel shall presume so to do contrary...you shall cause those colours to be seized and you are to see the said proclamation complied with by firing shot as in the 4th article. Article 7th: You are not to suffer any vessel to come into the road of Charles Town or to anchor within reach of the guns of the fort after sunset, unless she send her boat on shore to the fort...you are to prevent this by firing shot as in the 4th Article. Article 8th: On notice in writing from any officer in the Custom House...allegding good and sufficient reason to detain a vessel you are to prevent her departing the road by firing shot as in article 4th'. Vessels also have to be shot at if they haven't presented their pass at the Fort. Ships that have been fired on have to pay to the gunner for his '...own use and benefit', 9s for the first shot and 18s for every shot afterwards provided that he does '...not presume on any pretext at your peril to fire shot contrary to the true intent and meaning of these orders'.

14/7/1801 (PRO CO152/82): Peter Butler to Council and Assembly of Nevis: Ships stopping at Nevis can now pay money in lieu of powder duty. Butler mentions a gunner at Charles Fort and a powder officer.

6/1812 (PRO CO186/10): John Peterson: 'Guns fired in Fort Charles, weight of metal powder, shot and fusies received, expended or delivered from'. From January-June 1812, Peterson has fired salutes of several guns on five occasions, has fired alarm shots twice and fired four times at ships for lack of passes, not saluting, acting suspiciously, etc'.

4/12/1812 (PRO CO186/10): John Peterson: 'State of Fort Charles': 'Ordnance: two long and two short heavy 8lbars out of repair, four long light 12lbars on good new carriages, three long light 12lbars one damaged and another almost useless, one short heavy 12lbar on a disabled carriage, one long heavy 18lbar on a disabled carriage and almost useless, two large heavy 18lbars old and dismounted, one long heavy 24lbar on a bad carriage. Side Arms: two copper ladles with staves and one without a staff, two wadhooks or worms with staves and to without, two wad hooks with sponges and staves, five rammers with staves and sponge heads, three spare rammer heads, five old and three new handspikes, three priming horns with wires, six packets tall cartridges, four formers for cartridges, one Union flag, one pair halyards, one trumpet, sixty rounds ready made paper cartridges. Ammunition: 612lbs of gun powder, nineteen 9lbar shot, seven hundred and fifty seven

12lber shot, thirty nine 18lber shot, one 24lber shot. Small arms: fifty five muskets. And some side boxes and other articles belonging to the Militia Artillery, six matrosses at £6.12.0 per month. N.B. there is no cartridge paper in the fort, the flag staff is insufficient and merely a temporary one. The magazine, barracks, cistern and gate require to be immediately repaired. The roof of the magazine is leaky and the powder and stores wherein are in imminent danger of being spoilt or damaged and the barracks are not habitable there are no signal flags (nor buntin to make them) for exchanging the island signals with His Majesty's ships and those together with a full seized for fflag, flag staff, halyards, carriages for all the guns except four handspikes, sheep skins and Jacks for the sponge heads, side arms for the heavy guns, oil and paint for the guns and carriages, sheet lead for aprons, new locks for the magazine and store room, a new gate, lanterns, hour glasses, old junk for wadding, cartridge paper and sundry other necessary articles much wanted'.

1/1/1813 (PRO CO186/10): John Peterson: 'State of Fort Charles': 'one long heavy double fortified 24lber old the vent worn to nearly $\frac{3}{4}$ inch diameter and upon a bad carriage, one long heavy double fortified 18lber in the same state as the above, the carriage half decayed and disabled and two more long double fortified 18lbers in the same state as the above but dismantled and honeycombed. four long light 12lbers, new, and upon excellent new hardwood carriages, three more of the same the same as above, but entirely without a carriage, one short double fortified 12lber an old but serviceable gun upon a disabled carriage, two short heavy 9lbers the same as the last and the carriages in the same state two very long light pounders, very old guns honey combed and the vents worn to nearly an inch diameter upon bad carriages, seventeen. Side Arms: one copper ladle with a staff and three without staves. one wadhook or worm with a staff and rammer head for 18lbers, two for 18lbers. two sponges with worms and staves and four rammers with staves and sponge heads for 12lbers. one rammer with a staff and sponge head for 9lber, five old and new hand spikes, three priming horns with wires. Round shot: one 24lb shot, thirty nine 18lb shot, seven hundred and fifty five 12lb shot and seventy six 9lb shot. Powder: 5544lbs in four barrels and ninety one half barrels, 405½ lb in cartridges ready filled for guns, 5949½ lb loaded drawn from guns and saved. Small arms: fifty six muskets. Laboratory and other stores: five packets of musket ball cartridges, thirty empty cannon cartridges of paper, four formers for cannon cartridges, one small Union flag, one pair old halyards, one trumpet, three side boxes and other small articles belonging to the field pieces of the militia Artillery. Six matrosses at £612.0 per month. N.B. The condition of the magazine and buildings, etc. and the general wants of the fort remain the same as per last report'.

4/1813 (PRO CO186/10): John Peterson: 'Guns fired in Fort Charles, weight of metal powder, shot and fuses received, expended or delivered from'. From January-March 1813, Peterson has fired alarm shots twice and has fired 4 times on ships for lack of passes, not having colours, not saluting, acting suspiciously, etc.

15/2/1815 (PRO CO152/105): Daniel Ware: Ware is the Lloyds Agent at Nevis: 'I think it incumbent upon me to state to you the very inadequate protection offered to shipping at anchor in this road as the fort which ought to be a protection is left in such a situation that it holds out a temptation to the enemy rather than a terror'. There are 7-9000lbs of powder in the fort and '...5 or 6 hired men are all they have to defend it, and being I may almost say without a Captain, it is more than probable that one 1/2 of them are generally absent and I have no hesitation in saying that 6 men might at any

time take possession of it, destroy the powder, or take it away, turn the guns on the shipping or the town and totally destroy both'.

1/6/1816 (PRO CO186/11): F. J. Galpine: 'Guns fired in Fort Charles, weight of metal powder, shot and fuses received, expended or delivered from'. From March-June 1816, Galpine has fired seven salutes of several guns, has fired an alarm twice and has fired twice on ships passing without colours.

1/7/1816 (PRO CO186/11): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: F. J. Galpine is the Captain Gunner at Fort Charles. He reports that there is a great danger of the powder exploding (due to improper storage and the large amount of it) and destroying the fort. The cistern needs repairs and the gate is falling apart.

10/4/1820 (PRO CO186/11): John Peterson to Council and Assembly of Nevis: Peterson is Captain Gunner at Charles Fort. The matrosses at the fort are old: one has lost the use of his right hand and one is lame. The gun carriages are bad and the house and offices are falling apart: Peterson does not believe they will survive the next rainy season and he does not want his family there if the house, etc. are not repaired by then.

1821 (PRO CO187/3): Blue Book: Charges: 'Capt. Gunner at Fort Charles £200, Matrosses £316.16.0, Powder, cartridges, etc. £121.16.1 1/2, Repairs at Fort Charles £399.18.0, Barracks in part payment of expenses £831.1.6, supervisor to ditto £300. There are 2 small batteries or signal posts which yield no salary or emolument to the officers in charge and are merely repaired as signal posts. The barracks was built at the expense of the colony for the occupation of His Majesty's troops and are of the following dimensions: 217ft length by 44ft broad'.

1826 (PRO CO187/4): Blue Book: Charges: Capt. Gunner John Peterson at Fort Charles £56, Sergeant at Arms Hobson Webbe £46.

24/4/1827 (PRO CO186/13): Assembly to President and Council of Nevis: The Assembly want to buy a flagstaff for Fort Charles for £29.18.0. They want the Captain Gunner to pay for it.

24/4/1827 (PRO CO186/13): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: The Council disagree that the flagstaff should be bought, as this price is far too expensive and, anyway, the cost should be borne by the (Assembly based) Board for forts and fortifications.

24/4/1827 (PRO CO186/13): Assembly to President and Council of Nevis: It turns out that the Assembly had actually already bought the flag staff and put it up in Charles Fort, before they asked the Council if they could get one.

24/4/1827 (PRO CO186/13): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: The Council demands the Assembly take the flag staff down and '...that they do advertise the same for sale in consequence of the honourable board of Council having refused their sanction to the payment of the costs'.

1/7/1829 (PRO CO186/13): John Peterson to Council of Nevis: The Council were supposed to give £400 for fort repairs. This has not yet happened. The barracks have blown down, the magazine has a 'decaying' roof and the cistern leaks. The house and offices are in a 'state of great dillapidation'. Peterson says he will take down half of the magazine and use the materials to repair the other half. He will also build four room barracks across the fort and will repair the house, offices and cistern'.

6/9/1832 (PRO CO186/14): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: The Board of Forts and Fortifications report: Fort Charles, the walls are '...much out of repair, moat is grown up with bushes, the platform is rugged and uneven'. Four matrosses are needed. The carriages are unfit and should

either be repaired or replaced with spares from Brimstone Hill. The barracks are totally destroyed and '...not a vestige remains'. The cistern is out of repair and the one matross is living in the magazine. The '...dwelling house and outbuildings are in disrepair' and the doors and windows of the outbuildings have fallen off. The three matrosses will be paid \$8 a month.

1833 (PRO CO187/7): Blue Book: Phillip Prothero Claxton is Capt. Gunner at Fort Charles.

1834 (PRO CO187/8): Blue Book: Military charges: A '...dwelling house kept in repair at Charles Fort at the expence of the colony. An annual sum of £50 paid by the colony for rent of a house for use as barracks by Jason's detachment at Nevis'. There are 82 officers and 157 rank and file (including 13 gunners) in 4 companies in the Nevis militia. Thomas Duke is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is given a house to live in.

1835 (PRO CO187/9): Blue Book: Military charges: A '...dwelling house kept in repair at Charles Fort at the expence of the colony. An annual sum of £50 paid by the colony for rent of a house for use as barracks by Jason's detachment at Nevis'. Thomas Duke is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles.

1836 (PRO CO187/10): Blue Book: Military charges: A '...dwelling house kept in repair at Charles Fort at the expence of the colony. An annual sum of £50 paid by the colony for rent of a house for use as barracks by Jason's detachment at Nevis. There are 35 men (including 3 artillery men) in the Nevis militia. W. J. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles.

1837 (PRO CO187/11): Blue Book: Military charges: A '...dwelling house kept in repair at Charles Fort at the expence of the colony. An annual sum of £50 paid by the colony for rent of a house for use as barracks by Jason's detachment at Nevis. There are 29 men in the Nevis militia. W. J. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is paid £24 p.a.

1838 (PRO CO187/12): Blue Book: Military charges: A '...dwelling house kept in repair at Charles Fort at the expence of the colony. An annual sum of £50 paid by the colony for rent of a house for use as barracks by Jason's detachment at Nevis. There are 25 men in the Nevis militia. W. J. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is paid £24 p.a.

1839 (PRO CO187/13): Blue Book: No military expenditure. The militia has 25 men. W. J. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. Nicholson gets £8 'in fees'.

1840 (PRO CO187/14): Blue Book: No military expenditure. The militia has 23 men. W. J. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. Nicholson gets £9 'in fees'.

1841 (PRO CO187/15): Blue Book: £34 spent on forts. The militia has 20 men. W. J. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. A matross, Benjamin Sampson, has been employed at Fort Charles on a salary of £24 p.a. and a house.

1842 (PRO CO187/16): Blue Book: £24 spent on forts. The militia has 20 men. W. J. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles.

1843 (PRO CO187/17): Blue Book: £10 spent on forts. There are no men in the militia. W. J. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. Nicholson is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid from the Treasury.

1844 (PRO CO187/18): Blue Book: £27.10.1 1/2 spent on forts. W. J. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles and is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £24 p.a. and a house.

1845 (PRO CO187/19): Blue Book: £328.16.0 (with an additional expenditure of £117.6.2 1/2 on Fort Charles) spent on the forts. The additional expense was due to dwelling house at Fort Charles

needing repair. This has been finished and was paid for from the Public Treasury. W. J. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles and is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £21.6.8 p.a. and a house. Militia has not been called since 1839.

1846 (PRO CO187/20): Blue Book: £71.6.8 spent on forts. W. J. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles and is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £21.6.8 p.a. and a house. 'the 2 military posts for the defence of the town of Charlestown and its harbour are Fort Charles and Black Fort. One situated on the south side and the other on the north side of the bay. The sum of £50 sterling was during the year 1846 voted by the legislature for the repairs of Fort Charles, which repairs consisted of the re-erection of a new flag staff, the previous one having been blown down. On this staff is hoisted nightly a light for the guidance of the steamers and other vessels coming into the harbour. A new gate was likewise placed at the entrance to the fort; the balance of the grant was next expended in repairing the magazine, but which sum was not sufficient to put it in a perfect state of repair and a further sum is required for this purpose; say about £25 sterling. All the guns require to be remounted an new carriages, the old ones being entirely decayed and the guns being on the ground, unserviceable. These forts are under the control of the colony and not of the ordnance department'.

1847 (PRO CO187/21): Blue Book: L. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles and is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £21.6.8 p.a. and a house.

1848 (PRO CO187/22): Blue Book: L. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles and is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £21.6.8 p.a. and a house.

1849 (PRO CO187/23): Blue Book: No expenditure on forts. L. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £21.6.8 p.a. and a house.

1850 (PRO CO187/24): Blue Book: No expenditure on forts. L. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £21.6.8 p.a. and a house.

1851 (PRO CO187/25): Blue Book: No expenditure on forts. L. Nicholson is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £21.6.8 p.a. and a house.

1852 (PRO CO187/26): Blue Book: No expenditure on forts. W. C. Lamond is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £21.6.8 p.a. and a house.

1853 (PRO CO187/27): Blue Book: No expenditure on forts. W. C. Lamond is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles.

1854 (PRO CO187/28): Blue Book: £8.7.6 spent on the forts. There has been an outbreak of cholera in the jail. W. C. Lamond is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £8.17.10 p.a.

1855 (PRO CO187/29): Blue Book: £10.7.11 spent on the forts. W. C. Lamond is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £8.17.10 p.a. but no house.



- 1856 (PRO CO187/30): Blue Book: No expenditure on forts. W. C. Lamond is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £8.17.10 p.a.
- 1857 (PRO CO187/31): Blue Book: W. C. Lamond is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. He is unsalaried but gets a house. Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, paid £8.17.10 p.a.
- 1858 (PRO CO187/32): Blue Book: Benjamin Sampson is still matross at Fort Charles, the Capt. Gunner's position has gone.
- 1859 (PRO CO187/33): Blue Book: Lamond died in April 1858 and Sampson died August 1849.
- 1860 (PRO CO187/34): Blue Book: James Maynard is Capt. Gunner of Fort Charles. Matthew Huggins is Matross of Fort Charles.
- 1861 (PRO CO187/35): Blue Book: James D. Maynard is Capt. Gunner at Fort Charles. He gets a house. William Washington is Matross at Fort Charles (appointed 1861).
- 1862 (PRO CO187/36): Blue Book: James D. Maynard is Capt. Gunner at Fort Charles. He gets a house. William Washington is Matross at Fort Charles (appointed 1861).
- 1863 (PRO CO187/37): Blue Book: £10.14.9 spent on the forts. James D. Maynard is Capt. Gunner at Fort Charles. He gets a house. William Washington is Matross at Fort Charles. He gets paid £8.17.9.
- 1864 (PRO CO187/38): Blue Book: 'There is no militia in Nevis at present, the last force was disbanded in 1837. No moneys have been expended for the support of any force other than the police. No moneys have been expended for arms, equipments, clothing, ammunition or for pay but for the police service'. James D. Maynard is Capt. Gunner at Fort Charles. William Washington is Matross at Fort Charles. He gets paid £8.17.9 from the Colonial Treasury.
- 1865 (PRO CO 187/39): Blue Book: John Alexander Iles is Capt. Gunner at Charles Fort. William Washington is Matross at Fort Charles. He gets paid £8.17.9.
- 1866 (PRO CO187/40): Blue Book: John Alexander Iles is Capt. Gunner at Charles Fort. He gets a house. William Washington is Matross at Fort Charles. He gets paid £8.17.9.
- 1867 (PRO CO187/41): Blue Book: John Alexander Iles is Capt. Gunner at Charles Fort. He gets a house. William Washington is Matross at Fort Charles. He gets paid £8.17.9.
- 1868 (PRO CO187/42): Blue Book: Fort 'wages' are £8.17.0 plus incidental expenses of £12.6.1. John Alexander Iles is Capt. Gunner at Charles Fort. He gets a house. William Washington is Matross at Fort Charles. He gets paid £8.17.9. 'Forts and Batteries: There are 4 detached parcels of land in this island dedicated to the purposes of fortification. The first is called Fort Charles, which comprises a area of about 7 acres; the battery itself which is within the enclosure only 1 acre. It contains 8 usable guns, none of which are mounted; there is a house used as a magazine in extreme dilapidation; also a House for the officer denominated as Captain but not available on account of decay'.
- 1869 (PRO CO187/43): Blue Book: Position of Capt. Gunner at Fort Charles has now gone. William Washington is Matross at Fort Charles. He gets paid £8.17.9. 'Fort Charles is situated on the southern side of the town Charlestown and covers an area of about 8 acres. The buildings sometimes used for quarantine purposes, are in bad order. There are 8 serviceable, but dismounted guns on the battery.
- 1870 (PRO CO187/44): Blue Book: William Washington is Matross at Fort Charles. He gets paid £8.17.0. Iles has retired and gets a pension from the island.

- 1871 (PRO CO187/45): Blue Book: Charles Herbert is matross at Charles Fort. He is paid £8.17.0.
- 1872 (PRO CO187/46): Blue Book: £5.4.6 spent on fort repairs. Charles Herbert is matross at Charles Fort. He is paid £8.17.0.
- 1873 (PRO CO187/47): Blue Book: Richard Herbert is matross at Charles Fort. He is paid £8.17.0.
- 1874 (PRO CO187/48): Blue Book: John Forbes is matross at Charles Fort. He is paid £8.17.0.
- 1875 (PRO CO187/49): Blue Book: John Forbes is matross at Charles Fort. He is paid £8.17.0.
- 1876 (PRO CO187/50): Blue Book: John Forbes is matross at Charles Fort. He is paid £8.17.0.

C 9.7 The fort at war:

- 1629 (BL): Colonising Expeditions to the West Indies and Guiana, 1623-1667 by V.T. Harlow, 1925.
Hakluyt Society: In '...1629 a Spanish armado of twenty two men of war and fifteen frigates...suddenly appeared off the coast of Nevis. While some of the ships in the harbour made good their escape, the fort on Pelican Point opened fire'.
- 18/6/1673 (PRO CO1/30/102, CSP1669-1674, 1109): William Stapleton to Council of Plantations: 'they [the Dutch] came insight of this island [Nevis] with French colours...they came in faire with Pellican Point Fort putting out their Dutch colours...fired only half a score shott, wee fired severall at them and so smartly that we could perceive people going overboard with plugs to stop their leakes'.
- 12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis: 'An account of the proceeding of the French fleet against Nevis February 1706': The French comprised '...in all thirty six sayle'. On 9/2/1706 '...one or two of their men of warr and some sloops came within shott of our guns and wee fired at them from Johnson's Fort, Black Rock Ffort and Pelican Point ffort and placed as we heard afterwards nine shott in the hull of one of them four of which were between wind and water which caused her to toe with her boates'.
- 16/4/1706 (PRO CO184/1/17, CSP1706-8, 270) Mr. Stanley to Mr John Tonstall: The French advanced '...almost to Pellican Point fort which brought guns to bear and fired upon them in their march...upon the hill above Bath plain our handful of men engaged them'.
- 22/5/1706 (PRO CO152/6/46, CSP1706-8, 318): Extract from the Paris Gazette: The French '...turned the enemy out of several advantageous positions and from the fort of the point, where they had retired to with the greater part of their artillery and seized twenty two ships which were anchored under the fort'.
- 16/2/1782 (PRO CO152/62/190): John R. Herbert to General Shirley: 'On 11/2/1782 '...the French fleet consisting of twenty six two-decked ships and twenty small craft passed our fort in a line a head...the headmost ships were certainly near enough for some of our guns to have reached them, but on taking the advice of the Privy Council which I had convened at the fort house, I thought that any attack from us would be the height of folly and would inevitably bring their whole line of fire on an open and defenceless battery of a few old and very indifferent cannon with a single artillery man to manage them. I have however the pleasure to assure your excellency that on this occasion there was every appearance of ardour and spirit both in the officers and privates in our small band of militia...On maturely considering our situation that our whole force consisted in less than 300 militia, indifferently armed and trained; that we had no post of any strength to retire to and that if

we had time enough to throw up a redoubt it must be defended by the planters and inhabitants who would of course be thereby obliged to abandon their wives, families and estates to the mercy of soldiery irritated by an ill judged resistance and that the militia were already nearly worn out with fatigue and watching. It was therefore thought that any opposition would be little better than madness; and that it would be more adviseable to propose articles of capitulation for ourselves'. They then sent terms of their own to the French. On 18/2/1782 the French took possession of Nevis: the fire arms were surrendered but were returned after the oaths had been sworn. The French wanted to leave '...a serjeant with a small party in the fort but on our representing that some unfortunate broils had happened at St. Kitts and that so small a body would be insufficient to protect themselves against any insolence of the negroes, he agreed to leave no troops at all'.

C 9.8 Archaeological evidence:

The fort walls remain upstanding with various phases of rebuilding visible. The remains of a guardhouse/magazine and well/cistern (Figs. C9c & C9f) are visible within the fort enclosure. Due to time constraints, it was not possible to carry out any further archaeological work, other than a brief walkover, at the fort, although a detailed photographic record and site plan, now held in the Nevis Archives, has been compiled by a Caribbean Volunteers expedition in 1997.

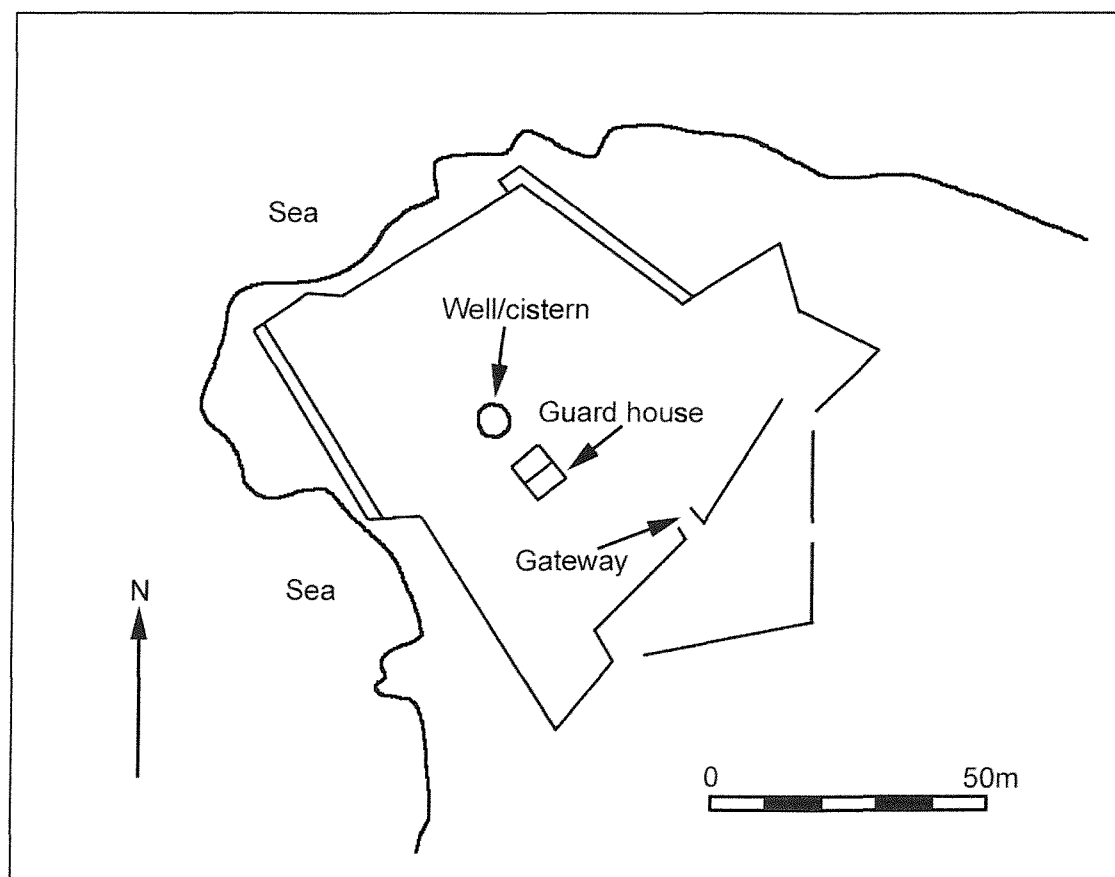


Figure C9c) Site plan of Fort Charles

The fort walls have been extensively robbed in places, causing the outer wall to collapse (Fig. C9d). At these points it is possible to see the method of construction of the walls. The southern walls appear to have been formed from squared blocks of local volcanic stone arranged in courses. The core of the walls comprises mortar and small stone chips. This stonework is almost certainly of late 18th/early 19th century date, and like the onshore building at Old Road fort (see Section C24), compares well with other late 18th/early 19th century buildings on the island (e.g. Bath Hotel).



Figure C9d) Southern wall and south-east demi-bastion of Charles Fort with wall collapse caused by robbing



Figure C9e) Western wall of Charles Fort with St. Kitts in the distance

However, the western and northern walls of the fort are constructed from irregular rounded stone facing (Fig. C9e) which compares well to the stonework seen at the 1704-6 dated forts at Mathew's, Old Road and Cotton Tree forts. It is therefore possible that the western and northern walls represent an earlier phase of the fort, possibly from Governor Johnson's time, and that the southern walls were built/rebuilt during the later 18th/19th centuries. The difference between the 1679 (Fig. C9a) and 1705 (Fig. C9b) plans and the present remains (Fig. C9c) would support such an interpretation, with a re-modelling of the fort, taking place in the later period (see Section 5.2.4.1).



Figure C9f) Cistern/well and guardhouse looking south



Figure C9g) Gateway in southern wall

Along the length of the southern face a ditch can be seen, with a causeway through the entranceway (Fig. C9g). This entranceway is further protected by a detached redan to the south-east (Fig. C9c). In the northern face, traces of embrasures survive, although it is likely that these relate to the later phases of the fort. At the north-west corner, Smith found a small posthole, suitable for a flagstaff (1987). Due to substantial vegetation, this posthole could not be re-located by the author.

C 9.9 Artefactual evidence:



Figure C9h) Detail of Charles Fort Cannon.

No excavations have been carried out in the interior of Fort Charles. However, eight iron cannon can be seen, lying dismounted, within the structure (Fig. C9h). These cannon, all consecutively numbered, 9 foot, 12lb of the Blomefield design, were made by Walker and Co. of Rotherham, Yorkshire in c.1800 (Trollope 2000). Two further cannon are known to have been on the site in 1987 (Smith 1987), partially buried behind the western gun line. These cannon could not be located by the author and have probably been overgrown and buried since this time. The possibility of further buried cannon cannot be ruled out.

C 9.10 Discussion:

Fort Charles is the largest and best preserved of all the Nevis forts and is in fact the only fort proper on the whole island. Due to its extended usage over some 250 years and its complex phasing, this structure is difficult to interpret without further, large-scale archaeological fieldwork. Such extended research was not within the bounds of the present study. However, general assumptions can be made from the extant remains and from the available documentary sources.

It would appear, from the stonework, that elements of the early 18th century fort still survive, with the southern side having been extensively rebuilt at a later date. Documentary records show that repairs were carried out on the fort during the late 18th/early 19th centuries, and from the stonework observable this date would apparently be correct for the remodelling of the fort. Comparison with the plans of 1679 and 1705 appears to confirm that elements of the 17th/early 18th century fort survived with various changes and additions in the later 18th and 19th centuries (see Section 5.2.4.1).

C 10 Battery below Christopher Hodgson's House

C 10.1 Notes:

This battery is only recorded in two documents from 1707 and 1708. It is possible that this battery is the same small platform added to Charles Fort, by John Johnson in 1704-6. Johnson describes this platform as position J.

C 10.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (to the north of Charles Fort)

C 10.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

15/9/1705 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1704-5, 1344): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't... C. Charles Fort repaired (by me) with the adition of a little platform that lyes low by ye sea side, No. J, (Fig. C9b) this fort stands upon a clift and commands the road of Charles Town where all shipping rides within which stands a guardhouse a large magazine and a cestern, its called Charles Fort commonly known by ye name of Pelican Point... to the sea stone work, to the land with sodd work...The ambusiers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'.

19/3/1706 (PRO CO153/9): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't... C. Charles Fort repaired (by me) with the adition of a little platform that lyes low by ye sea side, No. J, (Fig. C9b) this fort stands upon a clift and commands the road of Charles Town where all shipping rides within which stands a guardhouse a large magazine and a cestern, its called Charles Fort commonly known by ye name of Pelican Point... to the sea stone work, to the land with sodd work...The ambusiers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'.

23/6/1707 (PRO CO155/3): Council of Nevis Minutes: 'A small battery pitched with stone erected below Christopher Hodgson's house...the breastworks to be made of turf and the platform of stone'.

4/2/1708 (PRO CO155/3): Council of Nevis Minutes: 'Sixty negroes to work on Pellican Point platforme'. They will also finish '...a small battery below this at Christopher Hodgson's'.

C 10.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 10.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition: N/A

C 10.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 10.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 10.8 Archaeological evidence: N/A

C 10.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 10.10 Discussion:

From documentary evidence it would appear that the battery lay close to Charles Fort on the southern end of Bath Bay. It is likely that this is the small platform added to Charles Fort, and described by Johnson as letter J, in 1705/6. It is possible that this battery was located on the small ledge that can be seen beneath the north-west wall of Charles Fort. However, it is also possible that the platform was built on the low flat area to the north of Charles Fort. This site is now occupied by a private house and it is likely that, had the platform been in this area, the building has destroyed it.

C 11 Lower Platform (included after Charles Fort and before Worlds End platform)

C 11.1 Notes:

This platform is mentioned only once in a document from 1701. It is possible that this platform, with the Worlds End platform, is the first of two platforms ‘on each side the landing place’ described by Johnson in 1705 (PRO CO152/6: 15/9/1705).

C 11.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (to the north of Charles Fort and to the south of Black Rock Fort)

C 11.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: ‘Lower platform, three large minion guns, all want new carriages’.

C 11.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 11.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: ‘Lower platform, three large minion guns, all want new carriages’.

C 11.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 11.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 11.8 Archaeological evidence: N/A

C 11.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 11.10 Discussion:

This battery could not be located, archaeologically, by the author. Its location between Charles Fort to the south and Black Rock fort to the north is undisputed. However, a more definite location is impossible to ascertain, although a position close to the landing place at Charlestown, but to the south of Worlds End platform (i.e. slightly to the south of the centre of the bay) is likely. It is also possible that Lower Platform refers to the earliest phase of the later stone battery at Christopher Hodgson’s house below Charles Fort (see Section C10).

The modern pier and car park (which was reclaimed from the sea along its length) has almost certainly destroyed all remains of this structure. It is likely that the platform would have comprised only timber gun platforms, which would be unlikely to survive.

C 12 The Worlds End (included after Lower Platform and before Black Rock)

C 12.1 Notes:

This platform, like Lower Platform is only mentioned in one document from 1701. It is possible that this platform, along with Lower Platform, is the northern platform of the two platforms ‘on each side the landing place’ mentioned by Johnson in 1705 (PRO CO152/6: 15/9/1705).

It is also possible that this platform is the latest form of Sessions House Platform (see Section C15), located just to the south of Black Rock, although this appears unlikely.

C 12.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (to the north of Charles Fort and to the south of Black Rock Fort)

C 12.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: ‘The Worlds End, two large minion guns. Of no use there but proper ones to be placed at Callaghanes Bay, they wanting carriages’.

C 12.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 12.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: ‘The Worlds End, two large minion guns. Of no use there but proper ones to be placed at Callaghanes Bay, they wanting carriages’.

C 12.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 12.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 12.8 Archaeological evidence: N/A

C 12.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 12.10 Discussion:

This battery could not be located. Its siting, between Charles Fort and Black Rock Fort, is undisputed, but a more definite location is impossible to ascertain. A position slightly to the north of the bay is likely.

As with Lower Platform, the development of the pier and car park is likely to have destroyed the remains of this platform. Again, the fact that the platform was almost certainly built of timber makes this more likely.

C 13 Platform(s) at Charlestown II

C 13.1 Notes:

Johnson apparently constructed these platforms, in 1705. It is also possible that the platforms had an earlier form as Lower Platform and Worlds End platform (see Sections C11 and C12), which were then rebuilt by Johnson at this later date.

C 13.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (to the north of Charles Fort and to the south of Black Rock Fort)

C 13.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

15/9/1705 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1704-5, 1344): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...Charles Town where all our shipping anchor and load to which town I am now making two platforms on each side the landing place to secure the town which are marked (No 3 & 4)'.

19/3/1706 (PRO CO153/9): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...Charles Town where all our shipping anchor and load to which town I am now making two platforms on each side the landing place to secure the town which are marked (No 3 & 4)'.

15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: 'An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores': 'In the town bay, two lowest demi-culvering or 9lber'.

C 13.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 13.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: 'An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores': 'In the town bay, two lowest demi-culvering or 9lber'.

C 13.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 13.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 13.8 Archaeological evidence: N/A

C 13.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 13.10 Discussion:

These platforms could not be archaeologically identified. Their location, at each side of the landing place, suggests that they were originally built close to the current pier. It is likely they were destroyed during the construction of the modern pier and car park on the sea front. Their probable construction in timber also makes preservation unlikely.

C 14 Platform at Charlestown III or later versions of I or II (uncertain)

C 14.1 Notes:

The platform references from the 18th century may refer to Johnson's platforms (see Section C13) or to Sessions House (see Section C15) or may indeed relate to an entirely new platform built in the bay after the French attack of 1706.

C 14.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (to the north of Charles Fort and to the south of Black Rock Fort)

C 14.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

1/9/1715 (PRO CO152/11): Fort Inventory: 'Towne Platforme, two lowest culverin, eight cannon ball, one rammer/spunge'.

12/12/1721 (PRO CO186/1): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: 'His honour the President perceiving it necessary that the two guns at the landing place of this island ought to be mounted for the defence of this road and the place whereon they formerly stood being decayed and the carriages also, his Honour thought fit to order the Treasurer to repair the same and remount the said guns. We therefore desire your concurrence'.

3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): 'An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island': 'Charles Towne guns mounted: one platform with two demi-culverin'.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...At the town are two 12lbers mounted but the touch holes are stopt they must be new drilled'.

1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin': 'Battery of nineteen pieces' described and shown at position L (Fig. C1f). This battery has been confused with Black Rock and vice versa and should be correctly read as 'battery of eight pieces'. This map appears to be a copy of the earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/31/11): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Charlestown battery two 4lbers in bad condition.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/49/21): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Charlestown battery two 4lbers in bad condition.

C 14.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 14.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

1/9/1715 (PRO CO152/11): Fort Inventory: 'Towne Platforme, two lowest culverin, eight cannon ball, one rammer/spunge'.

12/12/1721 (PRO CO186/1): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: 'His honour the President perceiving it necessary that the two guns at the landing place of this island ought to be mounted for the defence of this road and the place whereon they formerly stood being decayed and the carriages also, his Honour thought fit to order the Treasurer to repair the same and remount the said guns. We therefore desire your concurrence'.

3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): 'An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island':

'Charles Towne guns mounted: one platform with two demi-culverin'.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations:

'...At the town are two 12lbers mounted but the touch holes are stopt they must be new drilled'.

1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin':

'Battery of nineteen pieces' shown at position L (Fig. C1f). This battery has been confused with Black Rock and vice versa and should be correctly read as 'battery of eight pieces'.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/31/11): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Charlestown battery two 4lbers in bad condition.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/49/21): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Charlestown battery two 4lbers in bad condition.

C 14.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 14.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 14.8 Archaeological evidence: N/A

C 14.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 14.10 Discussion:

The platform(s) could not be located, archaeologically, by the author. A location between Black Rock and Charles Forts is certain, but a more precise location cannot be established, although a position close to the landing place is likely (i.e. in the centre of the bay).

The platform(s), almost certainly built of timber, would be unlikely to survive and any remains are likely to have been destroyed by the construction of the pier and car park.

C 15 Platform at Charles Town I/Sessions House

C 15.1 Notes:

This platform, first mentioned in 1676, appears to have existed until the final years of the 17th century. It is possible that other, later, references to a platform at Charlestown (see C11-C14) may refer to this platform although this cannot be proved with certainty.

C 15.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (to the north of Charles Fort and to the south of Black Rock Fort)

C 15.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

10/5/1676 (PRO CO153/2): 'An Account of the Caribbee Islands' by Thomas Warner: 'Nevis: Fort at Morton's Bay with five guns, Duke's Sconce with four guns, Old Road fort with nine guns, Black Rock fort with five guns, A platform at Charles Town with three guns, Pelican Point fort with seven guns'.

22/11/1676 (PRO CO138/152, CSP1675-6, 1152): Answers to enquiries about Leeward Islands by William Stapleton: 'There are neither fforts nor castles in any part of my government which may properly deserve that denomination, but such as are called soe and are but platformes...Black Rock Fort vizt. One 18lber, one 8lber, four 6lbers; twenty eight 9lb shot, forty four 5lb shot, thirty 6lb shot; powder: thirty two saker cartridges ready filled, four [illegible] of cartridge, twenty cartridges for the little guns in the Sessions House, 1½ [illegible] cartridge makes it 138lbs of powder. Sessions House fort or platforme vizt. Two 18lbers, two 6lbers, five small field pieces, powder and shot for those is to be had or fetcht from Black Rock fort which is close at hand'.

1687 (BL Sloane 45/35): William Hack: 'A chart of the west end of Nevis and part of St. Christopher, originally described by Mr. John Jenifer, drawn in 1687 by William Hack' (Fig. C1a): At position 3, to the south of Black Rock, an unnamed position with five guns is shown.

20/11/1688 (PRO CO155/1, CSP1685-8, 1935): Assembly of Nevis Minutes: They request money '...being about to build with stone and lime three forts in this island: the platforms at the Sessions House, Black Rock and the Old Road forts which will cost us more than £1000'.

24/6/1693 (CSP1693-6, 426): Council of Nevis Minutes: 'Sessions House platform is to be repaired'.

C 15.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 15.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

10/5/1676 (PRO CO153/2): 'An Account of the Caribbee Islands' by Thomas Warner: 'Nevis: Fort at Morton's Bay with five guns, Duke's Sconce with four guns, Old Road fort with nine guns, Black Rock fort with five guns, A platform at Charles Town with three guns, Pelican Point fort with seven guns'.

22/11/1676 (PRO CO1/38/152, CSP1675-6, 1152): Answers to enquiries about Leeward Islands by William Stapleton: 'There are neither fforts nor castles in any part of my government which may properly deserve that denomination, but such as are called soe and are but platformes...Black Rock Fort vizt. One 18lber, one 8lber, four 6lbers; twenty eight 9lb shot, forty four 5lb shot, thirty 6lb shot; powder: thirty two saker cartridges ready filled, four [illegible] of cartridge, twenty cartridges for the little guns in the Sessions House, 1½ [illegible] cartridge makes it 138lbs of powder. Sessions House fort or platforme vizt. Two 18lbers, two 6lbers, five small field pieces, powder and shot for those is to be had or fetcht from Black Rock fort which is close at hand'.

1687 (BL Sloane 45/35): William Hack: 'A chart of the west end of Nevis and part of St. Christopher, originally described by Mr. John Jenifer, drawn in 1687 by William Hack' (Fig. C1a): At position 3, to the south of Black Rock, an unnamed position with five guns is shown.

C 15.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 15.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 15.8 Archaeological evidence: N/A

C 15.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 15.10 Discussion:

This platform could not be located, archaeologically, by the author. It seems likely that the platform was built close to Black Rock at the northern end of Charlestown. The name Sessions House suggests that the platform was built close to the original Sessions House, which was built in about 1676 (PRO CO1/38/152).

This location, close to Black Rock, would suggest a location in the vicinity of the Alexander Hamilton Museum, towards the northern end of Charlestown. Unfortunately, the precise location cannot be established, and no obvious remains of such a structure could be located.

C 16 Black Rock/Old Rock/St Paul's

C 16.1 Notes:

This fort, first built in the mid to late 17th century, continued in use until the late 19th century, ending its life as a customs and quarantine fort in the mid 19th century. The fort made a pair with Charles Fort and was key in protecting Charlestown and the bay from attack.

C 16.2 Grid ref.: W 62° 37' 52", N 17° 08' 34"

C 16.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

- 14/12/1672 (PRO CO1/29/161, CSP1669-1674, 987): 'The present state of the Leeward Islands' by Sir Charles Wheler: 'From Pellicans Point to Musketi Bay is all the leeward side of the island about five English mile in length, for the defence of which there are about thirty pieces of cannon mounted upon the platforms of Pellicans Point, the old rock, the old fort, Duke's Sconce, Morton's Bay'.
- 10/5/1676 (PRO CO153/2): 'An Account of the Caribbee Islands' by Thomas Warner: 'Nevis: Fort at Morton's Bay with five guns, Duke's Sconce with four guns, Old Road fort with nine guns, Black Rock fort with five guns, A platform at Charles Town with three guns, Pelican Point fort with seven guns'.
- 22/11/1676 (PRO CO1/38/152, CSP1675-6, 1152): Answers to enquiries about Leeward Islands by William Stapleton: 'There are neither fforts nor castles in any part of my government which may properly deserve that denomination, but such as are called soe and are but platformes...Black Rock Fort vizt. One 18lber, one 8lber, four 6lbers; twenty eight 9lb shot, forty four 5lb shot, thirty 6lb shot; powder: thirty two saker cartridges ready filled, four [illegible] of cartridge, twenty cartridges for the little guns in the Sessions House, 1½ [illegible] cartridge makes it 138lbs of powder Sessions House fort or platforme vizt. Two 18lbers, two 6lbers, five small field pieces, powder and shot for those is to be had or fetcht from Black Rock fort which is close at hand'.
- 19/4/1685 (CSP1685-8, 135): Assembly of Nevis Minutes: William Stapleton has proposed that Black Rock and Old Road forts should be repaired and that twenty barrels of ammunition should be supplied to the forts. A standing guard should be appointed instead of a lookout.
- 12/11/1685 (PRO CO1/58): William Stapleton to the Council and Assembly of Nevis: Stapleton proposes '...making a stone platform at Black Rock fort to be firm and serviceable for the great guns and in order thereunto doth desire the Council and Assembly forthwith to view the said fort with him as it now lyeth being at present in a unserviceable condition and also to give theire opinions touching the repairing said fort and the dimensions thereof as necessary to be and how many ports for the guns and how many guns, to ly directly towards the westward'.
- 26/11/1685 (PRO CO1/58/94, CSP1685-8, 479): Assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'The first proposal concerning Black Rock Fort they consent that there should be an accommodation for nine guns with seven ports to the westward, the battlements to be 4½ ft high from the platform and no battlements to the southward and northward'.

1687 (BL Sloane 45/35): William Hack: 'A chart of the west end of Nevis and part of St. Christopher, originally described by Mr. John Jenifer, drawn in 1687 by William Hack' (Fig. C1a): Black Rock shown at position 4, with seven guns.

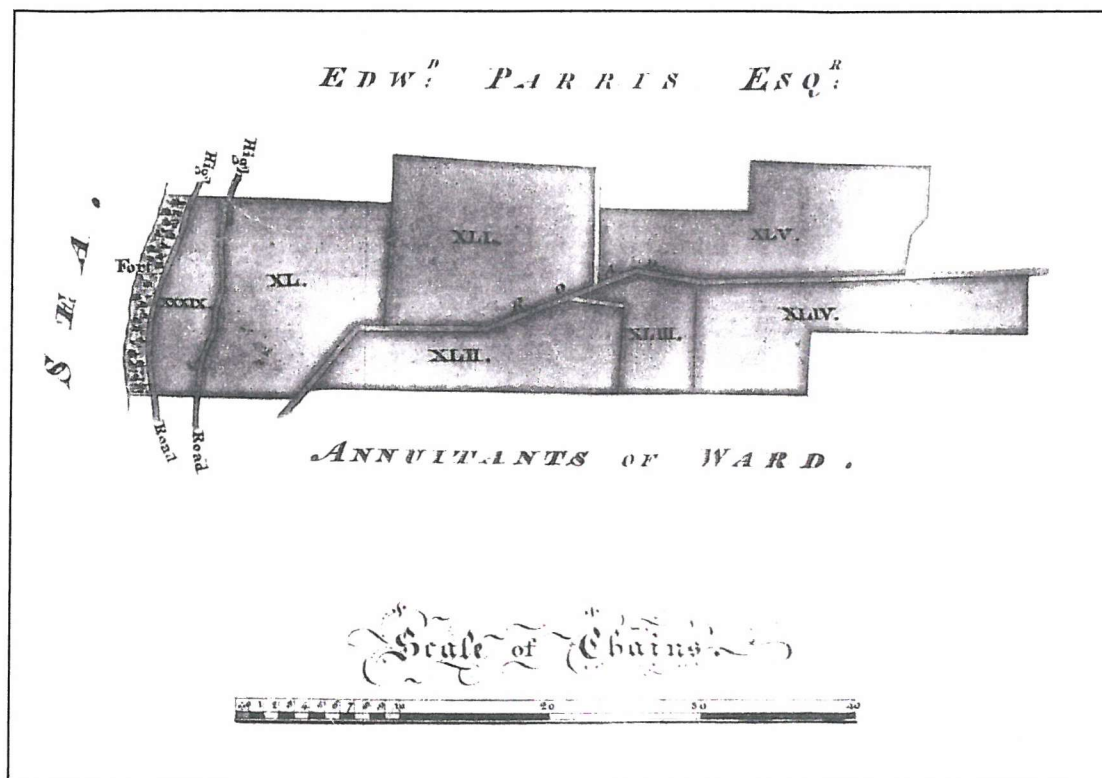


Figure C16a) Property map with Black Rock Fort shown to the left

20/11/1688 (PRO CO155/1, CSP1685-8, 1935): Assembly of Nevis Minutes: They request money '...being about to build with stone and lime three forts in this island: the platforms at the Sessions House, Black Rock and the Old Road forts which will cost us more than £1000'.

?Late 17th-early 18th century (NARCH): An undated property map shows a fort at the west end of an estate in Charlestown, at the position of Black Rock Fort (Fig. C16a).

?Late 17th-early 18th century (NARCH): An undated property map shows Black Rock estate in Charlestown, with a fort at the western end of the estate (Fig. C16b). The other property owners mentioned (i.e. Pinney, Ling, Smith, Ward and Jesup) were all present on Nevis in the late 17th to early 18th century and the map therefore is probably of this date.

7/1701 (PRO CO152/4): Council of Nevis Minutes: 'Upon motion of the Lt. Governor that a list of artillery stores that are wanting to be drawn and deliver'd him to send to his Excellency...the following list was accordingly drawn; two hundred good firelocks, four very long sakers, six 12lbbers and six 18lbbers of the longest size to lye in the forts as followeth: three guns for Long Point fort, four for Charles Fort, two for Black Rock fort, two for Old Road fort three for James fort, two for round hill platform. A sufficient quantity of shot fit for them'.

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'Black Rock fort, eight guns pretty well mounted. The battlements want repairs.

?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P 5):

French Intelligence Map: 'Battery of eight cannon' shown (Fig. C1c).

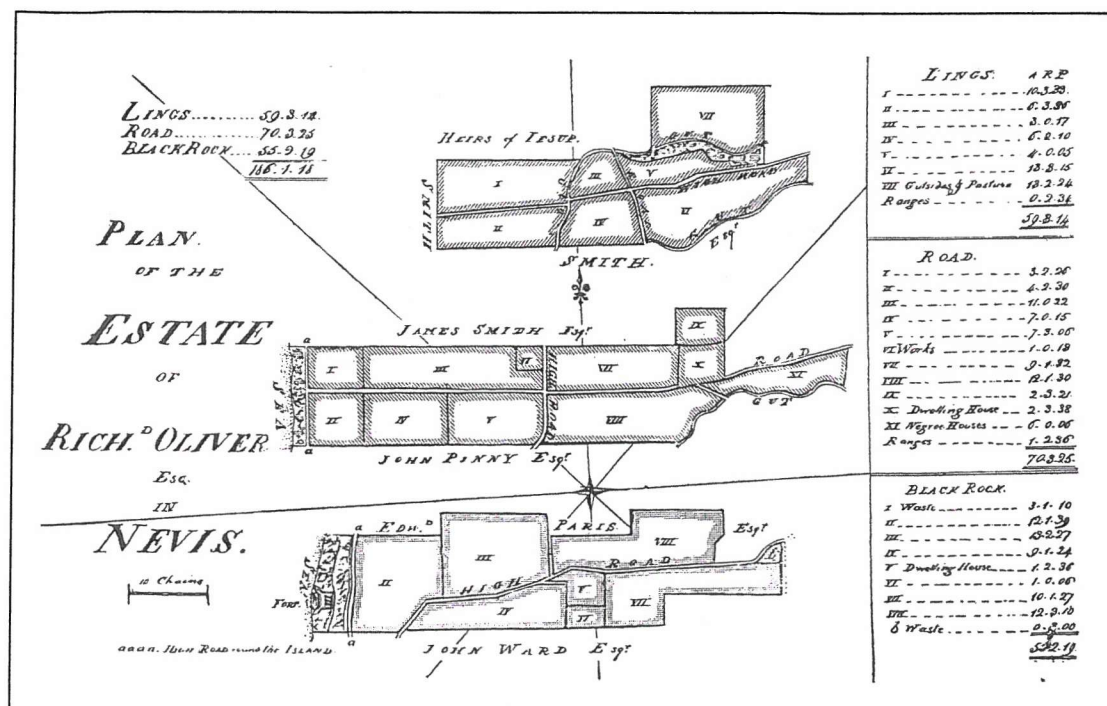


Figure C16b) Property map with Black Rock Fort shown to the left on the lower plan

?1703 (NARCH): 'Par Beauvilliers' French Intelligence Map: 'Battery of eight cannon' shown (Fig. C1d).

c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): 'A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty's island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty's Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereign lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep': 'St. Annes Fort made to hold fourteen guns, with eight guns viz. three 18lbbers, five 6lbbers, ¼ barrel of powder, one hundred and seven 18lb shot, seventy seven 9lb shot, and ninety four 6lb shot, 18 reams of paper royal, fourteen rammers, two ladles, one wad hook, sixty six sheepskins, fifty flints, two iron crows, three powder horns and one lanthorn'.

15/9/1705 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1704-5, 1344): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...D. A fort to the eastward of the town called St. Pauls commonly called by ye name of Black Rock repaired with addition by me this fort with the before mentioned [Charles Fort] are to the sea stone work, to the land with sodd work, this fort with Charles Fort makes a bay and commands it between which lyes Charles Town where all our shipping anchor and load...The ambusers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'.

15/9/1705 (PRO CO700 ST.CHRISTOPHER AND NEVIS/2): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: Johnson's fort plans show a three-side fronted battery with a square rear (Fig. C16c). At the south-east and north-east corners, two small square bastions are shown. The battery is c.57 yards by 76 yards, and has fourteen embrasures shown. The wall thickness is four yards and the platform width is ten yards. The fort has an entrance gateway on the southern side and an interior guardhouse.

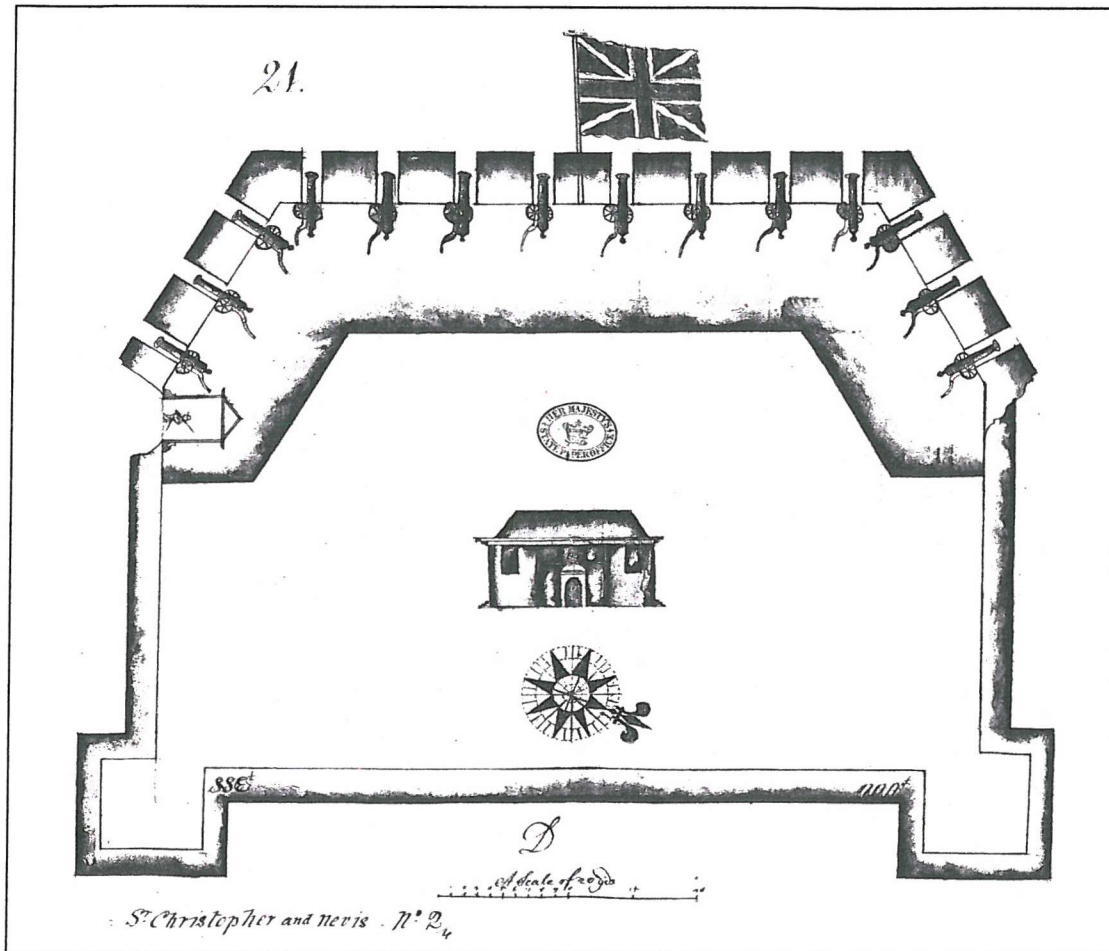


Figure C16c) Governor Johnson's plan of Black Rock Fort, 1705

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'An accompt of what new forts wee have lately built and where, what old ones repaired and the changes wee have beene at to doe the same': 'Black Rock ffort repaired £429.6.8'.

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis: 'An account of the proceeding of the French fleet against Nevis February 1706': The French comprised '...in all thirty six sayle'. On 7/2/1706 at night the French '...sounded in their boates the depth of water all along the greate bay from Black Rock to Cole's Point still keeping without gun shott'. On 9/2/1706 '...one or two of their men of warr and some sloops came within shott of our guns and wee fired at them from Johnson's Fort, Black Rock Ffort and Pelican Point ffort and placed as we heard afterwards nine shott in the hull of one of them four of which were between wind and water which caused her to toe with her boates'.

- 19/3/1706 (PRO CO153/9): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...D. A fort to the eastward of the town called St. Pauls commonly called by ye name of Black Rock repaired with addition by me this fort with the before mentioned [Charles Fort] are to the sea stone work, to the land with sodd work, this fort with Charles Fort makes a bay and commands it between which lyes Charles Town where all our shipping anchor and load...The ambusers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'.
- 13/1/1707 (PRO CO155/3): Council of Nevis Minutes: $\frac{3}{5}$ of 'dutiabie slaves, masons and carpenters' are to work on Charles Fort and Black Rock fort. Six 'mantrosses' and a Corporal are allotted for Black Rock.
- 21/2/1707 (PRO CO153/9, CSP1706-8, 776): Lt. Gov. Walter Hamilton to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'Sir John Jennings landed here in December last twenty pieces of ordnance which are all mounted in Charles and Black Rock Forts with powder, ball etc. proportional. Cartridge Paper excepted, which he had none to spare nor can I get none for any money likewise one hundred and fifty muskets'.
- 15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: 'An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores': 'Black Rock fort, two culvering of ye largest size or 24lbers, two ordinary culvering or 18lbers, four lowest demi-culvering or 9lber and one saker'.
- 3/3/1715 (PRO CO155/4): Council of Nevis Minutes: The people of Nevis want to raise a tax to pay off debts and repair forts, in particular Charles Fort and Black Rock Fort.
- 1/9/1715 (PRO CO152/11): Fort Inventory: 'Black Rock four culverin, four ordinary culverin'.
- 14/1/1723 (PRO CO186/1): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: '...this island to be put in the best posture of defence...we therefore have ordered four guards out of His Majesty's regular troops viz. at Long Point, Pelican Point, Black Rock and Musquitta Point and since these troops cannot subsist without provisions...supply each man with 11b beef and 11b bread per day'.
- 3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): 'An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island': 'Black Rock guns mounted one platform, one demi-cannon royal, one demi-cannon ordinary, two whole culverin, and one demi-cannon, dismounted three demi-culverin'.
- 3/3/1732 (PRO CO186/2): Council of Nevis Minutes: 'Memoriall of Charles Bridgwater, Commander of His Majesty's forts and fortifications in this island': 'I thought it proper to lay before you the present state of the forts and fortifications as they now are...Black Rock ffort has in it six good guns which as they are cannot be of service which it were put in order would be of great safe guard to the towne as well to the vessels in the road, from that there is a better discovery of vessels coming out and going in being all open to the sea which cannot be soe well discovered by the other ffort, St. Christophers and the salt pond takeing off the sight from Charles ffort in the night if it was thought proper to keep Black Rock ffort in order and keep a standing guard it may be done with little expence by the addition of three men more at the country charge there being twelve allow'd Charles Ffort and as those fforts are so near each other two may be drafted from thence which will make the number five which would be sufficient to keep a standing guard but that I hope will be consider'd

that in time of alarms or any invasion that the two fortifications may be reinforced with such a number of guns without an addition, in Charles Fort are severall old small arms which are fitt for no manner of service nor worth mending if it thought agreeable I would dispose of them and provide others that may be of service to the fortification and country'.

3/3/1732 (PRO CO186/2): Assembly to Council and President of Nevis: 'We readily concur with you that the forts should be kept in good repair and that those things mentioned in the abstract should be done, when the levy is raised we will take care to appropriate a summe sufficient for that purpose'.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...At Black Rock fort the north easterly point of the bay is another battery to cover the road. This fort is only an open battery but lies low almost to the water's edge and therefore the fire from it at an enemy's ships bids fairer for execution. There are the following cannon pretty well mounted vizt. One 36lber, one 32lber, two 24lbers, one 15lber and there are here besides two 15lbers and one 12lber dismounted'.

15/4/1746 (PRO CO152/25/156): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'There are 19 pieces of cannon in Charles Fort and around the island about 20 pieces of cannon more but a few of these are mounted except 7 at Black Rock'.

20/6/1755 (PRO CO152/28): Charles Payne: 'An account of ordnance their condition, the condition of the carriages, quantity of shot, powder and all other military stores': Black Rock Fort: Mounted the carriages in very indifferent order: 1 x 32lber, 1 x 24lber, 1 x 18lber, 1 x 12lber and 2 x 9lbers. Dismounted without carriages but good cannon: 1 x 18lber and 1 x 9lber. 6 x 24lb shot, 36 x 18lb shot, 18 x 12lb shot, 6 x 9lb shot. 1 Pair of lignum vitae wheels and 2 pairs of iron wheels, 6 hand speeks, 3 rammers and sponges, the guardhouse in good order. 23 useless cannon in the 2 forts. We the committee appointed to inspect into the forts and fortifications of this island do make the above report of their condition'.

1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin': 'Battery of eight pieces' described and shown at position K. This battery has been confused with a platform in Charlestown and vice versa and should correctly read 'battery of nineteen pieces' (Fig. C1f). The shape of the battery shown matches that shown in Johnson's plans of September 1705. This map appears to be a copy of the earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.

31/3/1768 (PRO CO186/5): President and Council of Nevis Minutes: 'We the committee appointed for inspecting the forts and all other publick buildings in this island did meet and inspect the 2 following forts: Charles Fort and Black Rock Fort... That in the fort called Black Rock are 10 cannon all good but intirely destitute of carriages and wants some repairs as to breastworks and platform. It is the opinion of your Committee that to put these forts into tenable condition will requires £1200 currency and we are of opinion that this great expence may be funded by applying to our most gracious Sovereign for such carriages as may be wanted, nor do your Committee doubt but that upon a proper application such will be granted'.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/31/11): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Black Rock Fort: one 32lber, one 24lber, two 18lber, three 9lbers, condition: in general pretty good.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/49/21): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Black Rock Fort: one 32lber, one 24lber, two 18lber, three 9lbers, condition: in general pretty good.

1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': Black Rock Fort: The carriages in general want great repair: twenty six, twenty four pound shot and one cannon carrying that size shot mounted, twenty 18lb shot and two cannon carrying that size shot mounted, thirty eight 9lb shot and three cannon carrying that size shot mounted, one 32lb shot and one cannon carrying that size shot mounted. four rammer and sponge heads with staves for the above cannon, four different molds for making cartridges for the cannon, four worms and four copper ladles with staves for the above cannon, eight hand specks , two iron crows, one half moon flag, one priming horn, two prickers, one tin measure for measuring powder, small parcel match and cartridge paper, 100lb of junk for wadding, one 2-hour glass, one lanthorn, one old trumpet, 400lbs powder, four musket and four cartridge boxes in use of the matross's. The matrosses barracks are in good order as is the flag staff. The parapet walls and platform are in a ruinous condition.

20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': Black Rock Fort: The carriages in general want great repair: twenty six, twenty four pound shot and one cannon carrying that size shot mounted, twenty 18lb shot and two cannon carrying that size shot mounted, thirty eight 9lb shot and three cannon carrying that size shot mounted, one 32lb shot and one cannon carrying that size shot mounted. four rammer and sponge heads with staves for the above cannon, four different molds for making cartridges for the cannon, four worms and four copper ladles with staves for the above cannon, eight hand specks , two iron crows, one half moon flag, one priming horn, two prickers, one tin measure for measuring powder, small parcel match and cartridge paper, 100lb of junk for wadding, one 2-hour glass, one lanthorn, one old trumpet, 400lbs powder, four musket and four cartridge boxes in use of the matross's. The matrosses barracks are good order as is the flag staff. The parapet walls and platform are in a ruinous condition.

14/1/1813 (PRO CO186/10): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: 'We herewith send you the report of the Committee of fortifications. The Gunner of Black Rock is to '...employ such number of matrosses as may be requisite to work two guns on that battery'.

1833 (PRO CO187/7): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is Capt. Gunner of Black Rock. Both are unsalaried.

1834 (PRO CO187/8): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort.

1835 (PRO CO187/9): Blue Book: Military charges: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort.

1836 (PRO CO187/10): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort.

1837 (PRO CO187/11): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort.

1838 (PRO CO187/12): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort.

1839 (PRO CO187/13): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort. He gets paid £8 in 'fees'.

1840 (PRO CO187/14): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort. He gets paid £9 in 'fees'.

1841 (PRO CO187/15): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort.

1842 (PRO CO187/16): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort.

1843 (PRO CO187/17): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort and is unsalaried.

- 1844 (PRO CO187/18): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort and is unsalaried.
- 1845 (PRO CO187/19): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort and is unsalaried.
- 1846 (PRO CO187/20): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort and is unsalaried. '...the 2 military posts for the defence of the town of Charlestown and its harbour are Fort Charles and Black Fort. One situated on the south side and the other on the north side of the bay'.
- 1847 (PRO CO187/21): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort and is unsalaried.
- 1848 (PRO CO187/22): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort and is unsalaried.
- 1854 (PRO CO187/28): Blue Book: William Abbott is Gunner at Black Rock Fort and gets no salary. 'Mr. W. Abbott, Chief Constable received a commission appointing him Gunner of Black Rock Fort to empower him to carry into effect the provisions of an old act respecting quarantine which was put in force for 7 weeks by President Seymour at a time when he was unable to assent to certain quarantine regulations passed by the Board of Health and Legislative Houses. He received a salary for 7 weeks at the rate of £1 per week, the office was then disbanded'.
- 1860 (PRO CO187/34): Blue Book: William Abbott is Capt. Gunner of Black Rock.
- 1861 (PRO CO187/35): Blue Book: William A. Abbott is Capt. Gunner at Black Rock and Quarantine Officer.
- 1862 (PRO CO187/36): Blue Book: William A. Abbott is Capt. Gunner at Black Rock and Quarantine Officer.
- 1863 (PRO CO187/37): Blue Book: William A. Abbott is Capt. Gunner at Black Rock and Quarantine Officer.
- 1868 (PRO CO187/42): Blue Book: 'Forts and Batteries: There are 4 detached parcels of land in this island dedicated to the purposes of fortification... On the northern side of Charlestown, there is a small battery once mounted with 11 pieces, 2 only of which are now usable, but there, as in the case of Fort Charles are without carriages'.
- 1869 (PRO CO187/43): Blue Book: On the northern side of the town, the remains of a fortification are to be seen, and two serviceable dismounted guns are on the fort.

C 16.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 16.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

- 14/12/1672 (PRO CO1/29/161, CSP1669-1674, 987): 'The present state of the Leeward Islands' by Sir Charles Wheler: 'From Pellicans Point to Muskety Bay is all the leeward side of the island about five English mile in length, for the defence of which there are about thirty pieces of cannon mounted upon the platforms of Pellicans Point, the old rock, the old fort, Duke's Sconce, Morton's Bay'.

- 10/5/1676 (PRO CO153/2): 'An Account of the Caribbee Islands' by Thomas Warner: 'Nevis: Fort at Morton's Bay with five guns, Duke's Sconce with four guns, Old Road fort with nine guns, Black Rock fort with five guns, A platform at Charles Town with three guns, Pelican Point fort with seven guns'.
- 22/11/1676 (PRO CO138/152, CSP1675-6, 1152): Answers to enquiries about Leeward Islands by William Stapleton: 'There are neither fforts nor castles in any part of my government which may properly deserve that denomination, but such as are called soe and are but platformes...Black Rock Fort vizt. One 18lber, one 8lber, four 6lbers; twenty eight 9lb shot, forty four 5lb shot, thirty 6lb shot; powder: thirty two saker cartridges ready filled, four [illegible] of cartridge, twenty cartridges for the little guns in the Sessions House, 1½ [illegible] cartridge makes it 138lbs of powder Sessions House fort or platforme vizt. Two 18lbers, two 6lbers, five small field pieces, powder and shot for those is to be had or fetcht from Black Rock fort which is close at hand'.
- 19/4/1685 (CSP1685-8, 135): Assembly of Nevis Minutes: William Stapleton has proposed that Black Rock and Old Road forts should be repaired and that twenty barrels of ammunion should be supplied to the forts. A standing guard should be appointed instead of a lookout.
- 26/11/1685 (PRO CO158/94, CSP1685-8, 479): Assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'The first proposal concerning Black Rock Fort they consent that there should be an accommodation for nine guns with seven ports to the westward, the battlements to be 4½ ft high from the platform and no battlements to the southward and northward'.
- 1687 (BL Sloane 45/35): William Hack: 'A chart of the west end of Nevis and part of St. Christopher, originally described by Mr. John Jenifer, drawn in 1687 by William Hack' (Fig C1a): Black Rock shown at position 4, with seven guns.
- 7/1701 (PRO CO152/4): Council of Nevis Minutes: 'Upon motion of the Lt. Governor that a list of artillery stores that are wanting to be drawn and deliver'd him to send to his Excellency...the following list was accordingly drawn; two hundred good firelocks, four very long sakers, six 12lbers and six 18lbers of the longest size to lye in the forts as followeth: three guns for Long Point fort, four for Charles Fort, two for Black Rock fort, two for Old Road fort three for James fort, two for round hill platform. A sufficient quantity of shot fit for them'.
- 25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'Black Rock fort, eight guns pretty well mounted. The battlements want repairs.
- ?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P 5): 'Battery of eight cannon' shown (Fig. C1c).
- ?1703 (NARCH): 'Par Beauvilliers' French Intelligence Map: 'Battery of eight cannon' shown (Fig. C1d).
- c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): 'A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty's island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty's Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereigne lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep': 'St. Annes Fort made to hold fourteen guns, with eight guns viz. three 18lbers, five 6lbers, ¼ barrel of powder, one hundred and seven 18lb shot, seventy seven 9lb shot, and ninety four 6lb shot, 18 reams of paper royal, fourteen rammers, two ladles, one wad hook, sixty six sheepskins, fifty flints, two iron crows, three powder horns and one lanthorn'.

21/2/1707 (PRO CO153/9, CSP1706-8, 776): Lt. Gov. Walter Hamilton to Lords of Trade and Plantations:

‘Sir John Jennings landed here in December last twenty pieces of ordnance which are all mounted in Charles and Black Rock Forts with powder, ball etc. proportional. Cartridge Paper excepted, which he had none to spare nor can I get none for any money likewise one hundred and fifty muskets’.

15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: ‘An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores’: ‘Black Rock fort, two culvering of ye largest size or 24lbers, two ordinary culvering or 18lbers, four lowest demi-culvering or 9lber and one saker’.

1/9/1715 (PRO CO152/11): Fort Inventory: ‘Black Rock four culverin, four ordinary culverin’.

3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): ‘An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island’: ‘Black Rock guns mounted one platform, one demi-cannon royal, one demi-cannon ordinary, two whole culverin, and one demi-cannon, dismantled three demi-culverin’.

3/3/1732 (PRO CO186/2): Council of Nevis Minutes: ‘Memoriall of Charles Bridgwater, Commander of His Majesty’s forts and fortifications in this island’: ‘I thought it proper to lay before you the present state of the forts and fortifications as they now are...Black Rock ffort has in it six good guns which as they are cannot be of service which it were put in order would be of great safe guard to the towne as well to the vessels in the road, from that there is a better discovery of vessels coming out and going in being all open to the sea which cannot be soe well discovered by the other ffort, St. Christophers and the salt pond takeing off the sight from Charles ffort in the night if it was thought proper to keep Black Rock ffort in order and keep a standing guard it may be done with little expence by the addition of three men more at the country charge there being twelve allow’d Charles Ffort and as those fforts are so near each other two may be drafted from thence which will make the number five which would be sufficient to keep a standing guard but that I hope will be consider’d that in time of alarms or any invasion that the two ffortifications may be reinforced with such a number of guns without an addition, in Charles Ffort are severall old small arms which are fitt for no manner of service nor worth mending if it thought agreeable I would dispose of them and provide others that may be of service to the ffortification and country’.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations:

‘...At Black Rock fort the north easterly point of the bay is another battery to cover the road. This fort is only an open battery but lies low almost to the water’s edge and therefore the fire from it at an enemy’s ships bids fairer for execution. There are the following cannon pretty well mounted vizt. One 36lber, one 32lber, two 24lbers, one 15lber and there are here besides two 15lbers and one 12lber dismantled’.

15/4/1746 (PRO CO152/25/156): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: ‘There are 19 pieces of cannon in Charles Fort and around the island about 20 pieces of cannon more but a few of these are mounted except 7 at Black Rock’.

20/6/1755 (PRO CO152/28): Charles Payne: ‘An account of ordnance their condition, the condition of the carriages, quantity of shot, powder and all other military stores’: Black Rock Fort: Mounted the carriages in very indifferent order: 1 x 32lber, 1 x 24lber, 1 x 18lber, 1 x 12lber and 2 x 9lbers. Dismounted without carriages but good cannon: 1 x 18lber and 1 x 9lber. 6 x 24lb shot, 36 x 18lb shot, 18 x 12lb shot, 6 x 9lb shot. 1 Pair of lignum vitae wheels and 2 pairs of iron wheels, 6 hand speeks, 3 rammers and sponges, the guardhouse in good order. 23 useless cannon in the 2 forts. We

the committee appointed to inspect into the forts and fortifications of this island do make the above report of their condition'.

1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin':

'Battery of eight pieces' shown at position K (Fig. C1f). This battery has been confused with a platform in Charlestown and vice versa and should correctly read 'battery of nineteen pieces'. The shape of the battery shown matches that shown in Johnson's plans of September 1705.

31/3/1768 (PRO CO186/5): President and Council of Nevis Minutes: 'We the committee appointed for inspecting the forts and all other publick buildings in this island did meet and inspect the 2 following forts: Charles Fort and Black Rock Fort... That in the fort called Black Rock are 10 cannon all good but intirely destitute of carriages and wants some repairs as to breastworks and platform. It is the opinion of your Committee that to put these forts into tenable condition will requires £1200 currency and we are of opinion that this great expence may be funded by applying to our most gracious Sovereign for such carriages as may be wanted, nor do your Committee doubt but that upon a proper application such will be granted'.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/31/11): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Black Rock Fort: one 32lber, one 24lber, two 18lber, three 9lbers, condition: in general pretty good.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/49/21): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Black Rock Fort: one 32lber, one 24lber, two 18lber, three 9lbers, condition: in general pretty good.

1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': Black Rock Fort: The carriages in general want great repair: twenty six 24lb shot and one cannon carrying that size shot mounted, twenty 18lb shot and two cannon carrying that size shot mounted, thirty eight 9lb shot and three cannon carrying that size shot mounted, one 32lb shot and one cannon carrying that size shot mounted. four rammer and sponge heads with staves for the above cannon, four different molds for making cartridges for the cannon, four worms and four copper ladles with staves for the above cannon, eight hand speeks , two iron crows, one half moon flag, one priming horn, two prickers, one tin measure for measuring powder, small parcel match and cartridge paper, 100lb of junk for wadding, one 2-hour glass, one lanthorn, one old trumpet, 400lbs powder, four musket and four cartridge boxes in use of the matross's. The matrosses barracks are in good order as is the flag staff. The parapet walls and platform are in a ruinous condition.

20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': Black Rock Fort: The carriages in general want great repair: twenty six, twenty four pound shot and one cannon carrying that size shot mounted, twenty 18lb shot and two cannon carrying that size shot mounted, thirty eight 9lb shot and three cannon carrying that size shot mounted, one 32lb shot and one cannon carrying that size shot mounted. four rammer and sponge heads with staves for the above cannon, four different molds for making cartridges for the cannon, four worms and four copper ladles with staves for the above cannon, eight hand speeks , two iron crows, one half moon flag, one priming horn, two prickers, one tin measure for measuring powder, small parcel match and cartridge paper, 100lb of junk for wadding, one 2-hour glass, one lanthorn, one old trumpet, 400lbs powder, four musket and four cartridge boxes in use of the matross's. The matrosses barracks are in good order as is the flag staff. The parapet walls and platform are in a ruinous condition.

1869 (PRO CO187/43): Blue Book: On the northern side of the town, the remains of a fortification are to be seen, and two serviceable dismounted guns are on the fort.

C 16.6 Evidence for manning:

19/4/1685 (CSP1685-8, 135): Assembly of Nevis Minutes: William Stapleton has proposed that Black Rock and Old Road forts should be repaired and that twenty barrels of ammunition should be supplied to the forts. A standing guard should be appointed instead of a lookout.

13/1/1707 (PRO CO155/3): Council of Nevis Minutes: $\frac{2}{3}$ of 'dutiabale slaves, masons and carpenters' are to work on Charles Fort and Black Rock fort. Six 'mantrosses' and a Corporal are allotted for Black Rock.

14/1/1723 (PRO CO186/1): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: '...this island to be put in the best posture of defence...we therefore have ordered four guards out of His Majesty's regular troops viz. at Long Point, Pelican Point, Black Rock and Musquitta Point and since these troops cannot subsist without provisions...supply each man with 1lb beef and 1lb bread per day'.

3/3/1732 (PRO CO186/2): Council of Nevis Minutes: 'Memoriall of Charles Bridgwater, Commander of His Majesty's forts and fortifications in this island': 'I thought it proper to lay before you the present state of the forts and fortifications as they now are...Black Rock ffort has in it six good guns which as they are cannot be of service which it were put in order would be of great safe guard to the towne as well to the vessels in the road, from that there is a better discovery of vessels coming out and going in being all open to the sea which cannot be soe well discovered by the other ffort, St. Christophers and the salt pond takeing off the sight from Charles ffort in the night if it was thought proper to keep Black Rock ffort in order and keep a standing guard it may be done with little expence by the addition of three men more at the country charge there being twelve allow'd Charles Ffort and as those fforts are so near each other two may be drafted from thence which will make the number five which would be sufficient to keep a standing guard but that I hope will be consider'd that in time of alarms or any invasion that the two ffortifications may be reinforced with such a number of guns without an addition, in Charles Ffort are severall old small arms which are fitt for no manner of service nor worth mending if it thought agreeable I would dispose of them and provide others that may be of service to the ffortification and country'.

14/1/1813 (PRO CO186/10): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: 'We herewith send you the report of the Committee of fortifications. The Gunner of Black Rock is to '...employ such number of matrosses as may be requisite to work two guns on that battery'.

1833 (PRO CO187/7): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is Capt. Gunner of Black Rock. Both are unsalaried.

1834 (PRO CO187/8): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort.

1835 (PRO CO187/9): Blue Book: Military charges: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort.

1836 (PRO CO187/10): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort.

1837 (PRO CO187/11): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort.

1838 (PRO CO187/12): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort.

1839 (PRO CO187/13): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort. He gets paid £8 in 'fees'.

- 1840 (PRO CO187/14): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort. He gets paid £9 in 'fees'.
- 1841 (PRO CO187/15): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort.
- 1842 (PRO CO187/16): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort.
- 1843 (PRO CO187/17): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort and is unsalaried.
- 1844 (PRO CO187/18): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort and is unsalaried.
- 1845 (PRO CO187/19): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort and is unsalaried.
- 1846 (PRO CO187/20): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort and is unsalaried. '...the 2 military posts for the defence of the town of Charlestown and its harbour are Fort Charles and Black Fort. One situated on the south side and the other on the north side of the bay.
- 1847 (PRO CO187/21): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort and is unsalaried.
- 1848 (PRO CO187/22): Blue Book: Joseph Herbert is still Capt. Gunner at Black Rock fort and is unsalaried.
- 1854 (PRO CO18728): Blue Book: William Abbott is Gunner at Black Rock Fort and gets no salary. 'Mr. W. Abbott, Chief Constable received a commission appointing him Gunner of Black Rock Fort to empower him to carry into effect the provisions of an old act respecting quarantine which was put in force for 7 weeks by President Seymour at a time when he was unable to assent to certain quarantine regulations passed by the Board of Health and Legislative Houses. He received a salary for 7 weeks at the rate of £1 per week, the office was then disbanded'.
- 1860 (PRO CO187/34): Blue Book: William Abbott is Capt. Gunner of Black Rock.
- 1861 (PRO CO187/35): Blue Book: William A. Abbott is Capt. Gunner at Black Rock and Quarantine Officer.
- 1862 (PRO CO187/36): Blue Book: William A. Abbott is Capt. Gunner at Black Rock and Quarantine Officer.
- 1863 (PRO CO187/37): Blue Book: William A. Abbott is Capt. Gunner at Black Rock and Quarantine Officer.

C 16.7 The fort at war:

- 12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis: 'An account of the proceeding of the French fleet against Nevis February 1706': The French comprised '...in all thirty six sayle'. On 7/2/1706 at night the French '...sounded in their boates the depth of water all along the greate bay from Black Rock to Cole's Point still keeping without gun shott'. On 9/2/1706 '...one or two of their men of warr and some sloops came within shott of our guns and wee fired at them from Johnson's Fort, Black Rock Ffort and Pelican Point ffort and placed as we heard afterwards nine shott in the hull of one of them four of which were between wind and water which caused her to toe with her boates'.

C 16.8 Archaeological evidence:

This site was visited in May 1999 and a small square tower, now in use as a water cistern, was present in the location shown on the late 17th/early 18th century estate map (Fig. C16d). This structure, unlike other historic remains in the vicinity, did not respect the line of the road (the re-used, 17th/18th century coast road) and instead was orientated to face Charlestown Bay to the south-west. This orientation, across the bay towards the sea, suggests that this structure represents the last remains of Black Rock fort. From the shape, with reference to Johnson's plans of 1705 (Fig. C16c), this structure would appear to represent the north-east, square bastion/tower.



Figure C16d) Black Rock Fort, May 1999

The outer walls of the structure had been heavily robbed to expose the rubble core, however, in the south-west corner evidence of coursed, squared stone facing could be seen. From ghost stone-holes left in the masonry, it would appear that this facing had once continued on all exterior wall surfaces.

This structure, c.2.5m by 2.5m by 2.3m high, showed evidence of a wall running south from the south-west corner. A 0.7m high plastered parapet ran along the top of the western face. At the top of the structure a circular, mortar slavered hole c.1m in diameter could be seen. This hole showed the structure was hollow and comprised a small square 'room' within. In the southern wall evidence of a small (c.0.5m) window could be seen that had been blocked in, possibly when the structure was converted to a cistern. No other masonry could be seen, although the high level of vegetation and debris made the visibility of foundation level remains poor.

Further archaeological work was planned for this site. Unfortunately, in September 1999, a programme of waterfront development was initiated without notice. The author, and indeed many Nevisians, only heard of the development once it had started.

A watching brief was immediately instigated with the possibility of rescue excavation and survey, however, after further investigation it became apparent that the structure had been demolished on the first day of construction (to provide an access road to the waterfront site) and little archaeological work would be possible or, indeed, worthwhile (Fig. C16e).



Figure C16e) Site of the destroyed Black Rock fort, February 2000

C 16.9 Artefactual evidence:

No artefactual evidence could be found within the vicinity of the structure.

C 16.10 Discussion:

This small structure would appear to have represented the north-east corner bastion of Black Rock fort, reused as a cistern at a later date. Tragically, this site was destroyed before further investigation could be carried out. As such, the site was lost with only the minimum of recording and, although the correct identification of the site seems highly probable from documentary evidence, all conclusions must be drawn with caution.

C 17 Black Rock Pond (between Black Rock and Bishop's Pasture): Gun emplacement

C 17.1 Notes:

This battery/gun position appears to have been first built in 1701, continuing in use until the mid 18th century. By 1773, the position appears to have been abandoned.

C 17.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (to the north of Black Rock and to the south of Johnson's Fort)

C 17.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

- 25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'Black Rock Pond, one gun, a carriage for it wanting'.
- 3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): 'An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island': 'Black Rock Pond guns mounted one demi-culverin'.
- 31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...where this line begins near Black Rock at a pond call'd Black Rock Pond there is a 12lber mounted'.
- 1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'At a situation called Parris's Pond about two hundred yards to the northward of Black Rock Fort is the ruins of a single gun battery on which lies a 9lber dismounted, much honeycombed'.
- 20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'At a situation called Parris's Pond about two hundred yards to the northward of Black Rock Fort is the ruins of a single gun battery on which lies a 9lber dismounted, much honeycombed'.

C 17.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 17.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

- 25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'Black Rock Pond, one gun, a carriage for it wanting'.
- 3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): 'An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island': 'Black Rock Pond guns mounted one demi-culverin'.
- 31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...where this line begins near Black Rock at a pond call'd Black Rock Pond there is a 12lber mounted'.
- 1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'At a situation called Parris's Pond about two hundred yards to the northward of Black Rock Fort is the ruins of a single gun battery on which lies a 9lber dismounted, much honeycombed'.

20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'At a situation called Parris's Pond about two hundred yards to the northward of Black Rock Fort is the ruins of a single gun battery on which lies a 9lber dismounted, much honeycombed'.

C 17.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 17.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 17.8 Archaeological evidence: N/A

C 17.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 17.10 Discussion:

This gun emplacement or single gun battery was located to the north of Black Rock and to the south of Johnson's Fort. This area was systematically walked but no evidence of the battery could be located. It likely that this structure would have been slight in construction with a timber gun platform and, if present, turf ramparts. This type of structure would be unlikely to survive within this area, where hurricane seas cause severe structural damage.

These single batteries provided cover between the forts and almost certainly were positioned within the line of the coastal entrenchments, possibly utilising the ramparts of this feature as a front wall.

C 18 In the spur to the north of the square of Bishop's Pasture (between Black Rock Pond and Bishop's Pond)

C 18.1 Notes:

This gun emplacement, located within the coastal entrenchments, is only referred to in one document from 1701.

C 18.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (to the north of Black Rock and to the south of Johnson's Fort)

C 18.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'In the spur to the north of the square in Bishop's Pasture, two iron field pieces cased in brass'.

C 18.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 18.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'In the spur to the north of the square in Bishop's Pasture, two iron field pieces cased in brass'.

C 18.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 18.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 18.8 Archaeological evidence: N/A

C 18.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 18.10 Discussion:

This emplacement could not be located, archaeologically, by the author. It is likely that, as part of the entrenchments, very little evidence for such a 'structure' remains. The entrenchments within this area are thought to have been located, heavily damaged by hurricane seas and erosion (see Section C43.8.1), however, no 'spurs' could be located. It is probable, due to the lack of references, that this emplacement was only temporary and small, although use of such a position for cannon during the French attack of 1706 seems probable.

C 19 In the spur at Bishop's Pond (between Bishop's Pasture and the spur to the north of Bishop's Pond)

C 19.1 Notes:

This gun emplacement, like the one 'in the spur to the north of the square of Bishop's Pasture', is only referred to in one document from 1701. It was located within the coastal entrenchments and is likely to have been superseded by Johnson's fort that was almost certainly built on the same site.

C 19.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (possibly in vicinity of Johnson's Fort)

C 19.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'In the spur at Bishop's Pond, one saker gun, it wants an axil'.

C 19.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 19.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'In the spur at Bishop's Pond, one saker gun, it wants an axil'.

C 19.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 19.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 19.8 Archaeological evidence: N/A

C 19.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 19.10 Discussion:

This emplacement could not be located, archaeologically, by the author. It is likely, as it was probably a timber and turf structure, that any remains have been destroyed. The entrenchments within this area are thought to have been located (see Section C43.8.1), however, no 'spurs' could be identified. It is probable that this gun emplacement was upgraded and replaced by Johnson's fort, built on the site in c.1705.

C 20 Johnson's Fort at Bishop's Pond

C 20.1 Notes:

This fort, first built by Johnson in 1705, is described as having no cannon in 1707 and as having been demolished by 1727. It is possible that in 1777, one of three batteries constructed by William Burt, was built on this site.

C 20.2 Grid ref.: W 62° 37' 44", N 17° 08' 56"

C 20.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P 5):

French Intelligence Map: 'Battery of six cannon' shown (Fig. C1c).

?1703 (NARCH): 'Par Beauvilliers' French Intelligence Map: 'Battery of six cannon' shown (Fig. C1d).

c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): 'A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty's island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty's Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereign lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep': 'Johnsons Fort made to hold eight guns, with six guns viz. two 12lbbers, four 6lbbers, seventeen 12lb shot, twenty seven 6lb shot'.

15/9/1705 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1704-5, 1344): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...E. A platform made by Colonell Johnson in a sandy bay within musquett shott of Black Rock all finisht its being the first erected by me. The gentlemen of this island were pleased to name it Johnson's Fort, all along that bay there is anchorage in six, seven and eight fathoms, the wall of it is fifteen foot broad and eighteen foot high, eight whereof is underground with out side of it is a forcey of water of forty foot broad and seven foot deep that part to the country is a sod breastwork, it has within a guardhouse with arms and amunition proportionably...The ambusiers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'.

15/9/1705 (PRO CO700 ST.CHRISTOPHER AND NEVIS/2): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: Johnson's fort plans show a 'keyhole' shaped battery with a west facing three sided, gun platform of c105 yards by 48 yards dimensions (Fig. C20a). The platform appears to be backed by a large enclosure/courtyard, which extends the overall length and width of the battery to c.160 yards by 137 yards. Six embrasures are shown with a guardhouse within the frontal area. An entrance gateway is shown in the eastern wall. Surrounding the front of the battery is a ditch of 12 yards wide. The walls of the battery are 4 yards thick and the platform 8 yards wide.

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'An accompt of what new forts wee have lately built and where, what old ones repaired and the changes wee have beene at to doe the same': 'At Bishop's Pond a new ffort built of stone and lime for six guns £950. Want good guns for this ffort'.

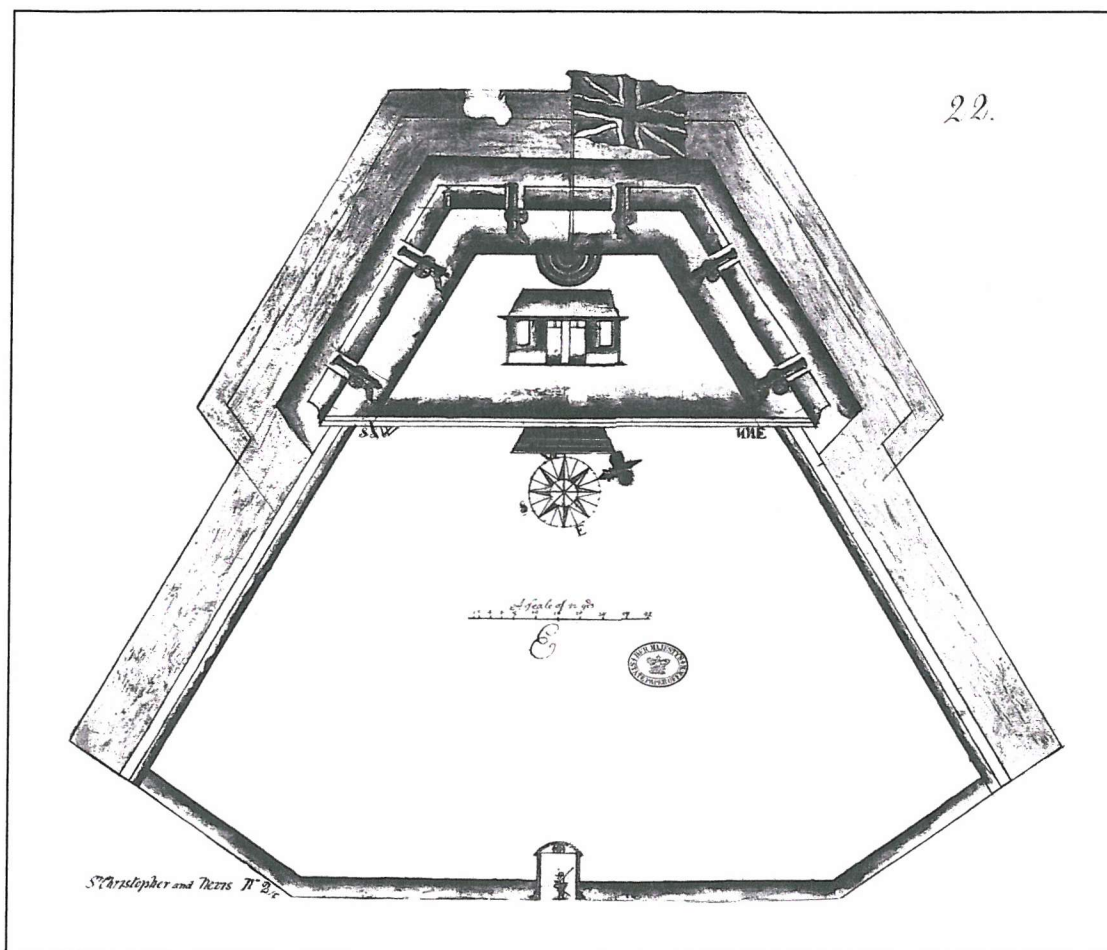


Figure C20a) Governor Johnson's plan of Johnson's Fort, 1705

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis: 'An account of the proceeding of the French fleet against Nevis February 1706': The French comprised '...in all thirty six sayle'. On 7/2/1706 at night the French '...sounded in their boates the depth of water all along the greate bay from Black Rock to Cole's Point still keeping without gun shott'. On 9/2/1706 '...one or two of their men of warr and some sloops came within shott of our guns and wee fired at them from Johnson's Fort, Black Rock Ffort and Pelican Point ffort and placed as we heard afterwards nine shott in the hull of one of them four of which were between wind and water which caused her to toe with her boates'.

19/3/1706 (PRO CO153/9): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...E. A platform made by Colonell Johnson in a sandy bay within musquett shott of Black Rock all finisht its being the first erected by me. The gentlemen of this island were pleased to name

it Johnson's Fort, all along that bay there is anchorage in six, seven and eight fathoms, the wall of it is fifteen foot broad and eighteen foot high, eight whereof is underground with out side of it is a forcey of water of forty foot broad and seven foot deep that part to the country is a sod breastwork, it has within a guardhouse with arms and amunition proportionably... The ambusers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'.

15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: 'An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores': 'Johnson's fort has nothing'.

3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): 'An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island': 'Johnson's Folly demolished with no cannon'.

1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin': 'Battery of six pieces' shown at position J (Fig. C1f). The shape of the battery matches the shape of Johnson's fort shown in Johnson's plans of September 1705. This map appears to be a copy of the earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.

6/10/1777 (PRO CO153/23): William Burt to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...their forts are in better order than any I have seen in the government. I recommended three more batteries to be erected, one was immediately begun called Pinney's Battery where three 6lbers will be mounted'.

C 20.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 20.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P 5): French Intelligence Map: 'Battery of six cannon' shown (Fig. C1c).

?1703 (NARCH): 'Par Beauvilliers' French Intelligence Map: 'Battery of six cannon' shown (Fig. C1d).

c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): 'A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty's island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty's Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereign lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep': 'Johnsons Fort made to hold eight guns, with six guns viz. two 12lbers, four 6lbers, seventeen 12lb shot, twenty seven 6lb shot'.

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'An accompt of what new forts wee have lately built and where, what old ones repaired and the changes wee have beene at to doe the same': 'At Bishop's Pond a new ffort built of stone and lime for six guns £950. Want good guns for this ffort'.

15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: 'An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores': 'Johnson's fort has nothing'.

3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): 'An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island': 'Johnson's Folly demolished with no cannon'.

1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin':

'Battery of six pieces' shown at position J (Fig. C1f). The shape of the battery matches the shape of Johnson's fort shown in Johnson's plans of September 1705. This map appears to be a copy of the earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.

C 20.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 20.7 The fort at war:

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis: 'An account of the proceeding of the French fleet against Nevis February 1706': The French comprised '...in all thirty six sayle'. On 7/2/1706 at night the French '...sounded in their boates the depth of water all along the greate bay from Black Rock to Cole's Point still keeping without gun shott'. On 9/2/1706 '...one or two of their men of warr and some sloops came within shott of our guns and wee fired at them from Johnson's Fort, Black Rock Ffort and Pelican Point ffort and placed as we heard afterwards nine shott in the hull of one of them four of which were between wind and water which caused her to toe with her boates'.

C 20.8 Archaeological evidence:



Figure C20b) Johnson's fort looking south-east, November 1999 (Photo: R. Leech)

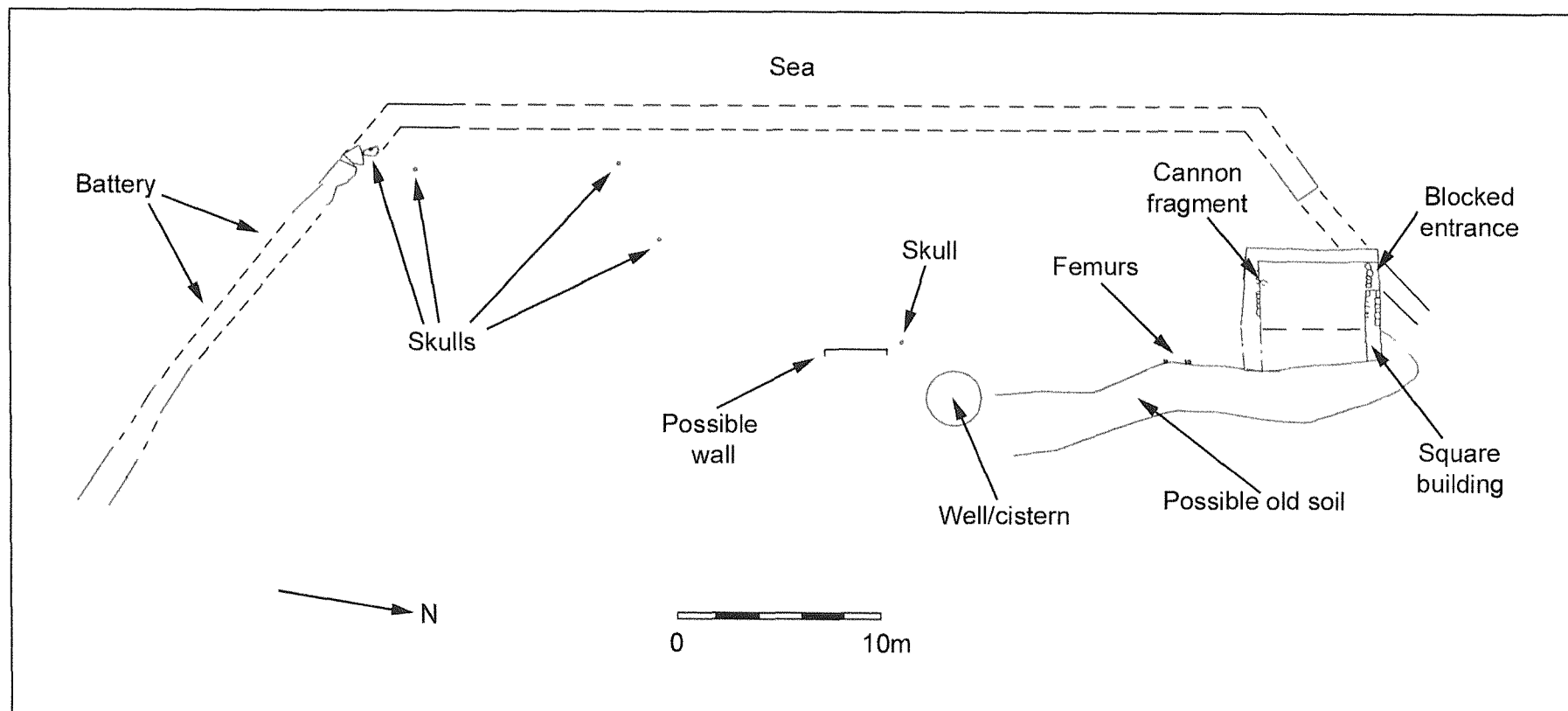


Figure C20c) Site plan of Johnson's fort, November 1999 (From a plan drawn by R. Leech)

This fort could not be located during the walkover survey of May 1999. However, from 17th to 20th November of that year Nevis was hit by hurricane Lenny and masonry structures were uncovered c.250m north of Pinney's Beach Hotel (Figs. C20b & C20c). The author was not present on island at this time, but Dr Roger Leech, of the Nevis Heritage Project, in conjunction with members of the Nevis Historical and Conservation Society, made a taped plan of the extant remains (Fig. C20b) and took a photographic record of the same. When the author returned to the island in February 2000, the site had been naturally reburied and only part of the cistern and northern wall of the small square building remained.



Figure C20d) Detail of blocked doorway (Photo: R. Leech)

The remains uncovered in November 1999 included a three-sided structure of c.66m across by c.20m width. The walls of this structure were c.1.3m wide, surviving as only one or two courses of irregular stone facing with a rubble core. The western wall was almost entirely eroded away, however the projected line would appear accurate. Within the structure, c.48m to the north of the southern end, a round cistern/well c.2.7m in diameter was located (Fig. C20e).

This structure was faced on the interior and exterior surfaces with roughly squared stone blocks. The remains of a north to south possible wall could be seen, c.2m to the south of the cistern/well. At the northern end of the three-sided structure, a small square building, c.7m by c.5.5m, was discovered (Fig. C20c). This building, with walls 80cm wide, had an entrance in the north-west corner, which was apparently blocked at a later date (Fig. C20d). Within the building, a flagged floor, of irregular stone blocks, was located. The interior face of the western and southern walls and the interior and exterior faces of the northern wall were faced with roughly squared stone blocks. All walls had a rubble core. At the entranceway, ashlar, squared quoins were visible.

Scattered within the three-sided structure, six burials were located (Fig. C20f). These were mainly partial remains although two articulated burials suggest an original burial orientation of east to west, with the

heads to the west. The burials were covered in a hard sandy accretion, which made recovery problematic. Certain of the burials appeared to show evidence of tissue remains.



Figure C20e) Detail of well/cistern, February 2000

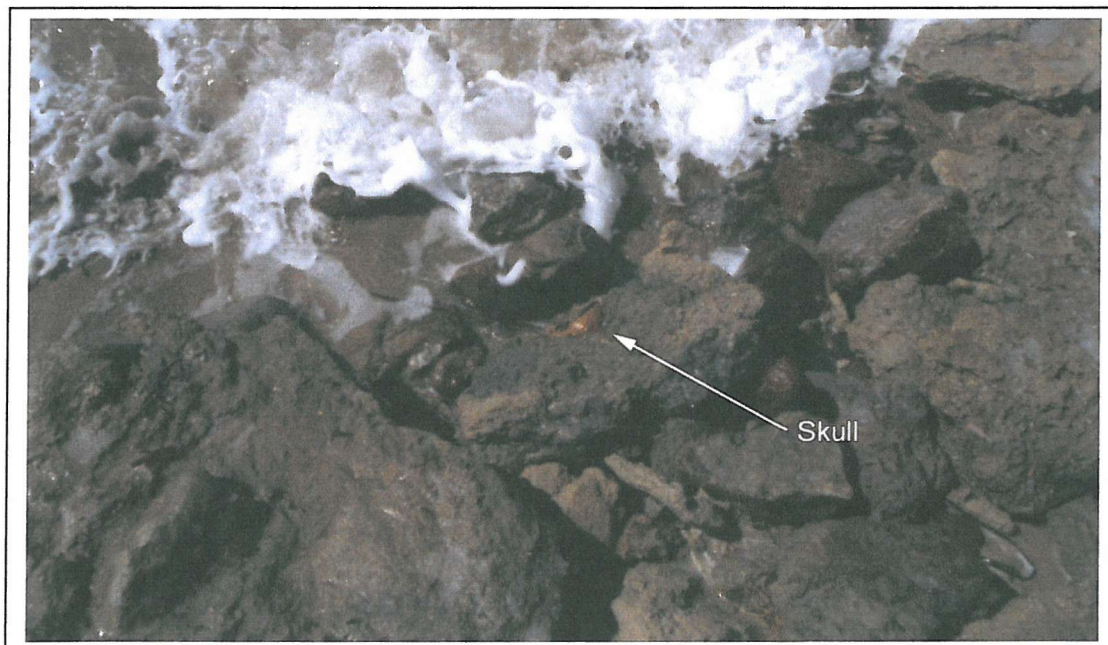


Figure C20f) Human skull close to southern battery wall (Photo: R. Leech)

It would appear, from the relatively 'fresh' condition of the remains that the bodies were deposited after the fort's use, possibly in the 19th-20th centuries. Due to the legal and moral difficulties associated with skeletal removal, and the possible danger of surviving contagions (the possibility of epidemic deaths could

not be ruled out), the burials were left in situ, and were re-covered naturally by sand within days. However, they again re-appeared in September 2001 (Goodwill 2001), but were buried within days.

It is impossible to provide any secure theories concerning the origin of these graves. At present it is unknown whether the graves were of men, women, soldiers civilians or slaves. However, the location of colonial cemeteries on beaches close to forts in the 18th and 19th centuries on other islands (Delpuech 2001: 53) would suggest civilian graves were not uncommonly found close to fortified sites during this period.

C 20.9 Artefactual evidence:

Within the small building, a musket ball, a single sherd of Afro-Caribbean (Colono-ware) pottery and a cannon muzzle fragment were located. The cannon fragment would appear to be from an iron 12lber, however a precise identification has not been made. The fragment was removed to the local museum.

C 20.10 Discussion:

It is probable that the three-sided structure present on this site represents Johnson's fort shown in Johnson's plans of 1705 (Fig. C20a). The shape and dimensions match reasonably with Johnson's plans and the poor preservation would match with the ruined description given in 1727, if compared to the other coastal 'beach' forts.

The presence of the square building above the three-sided structure, and its construction in squared blocks would fit well with a later phase of activity on the site: from comparison with other dated buildings on Nevis, a date in the late 18th century can be surmised. In 1777, Burt supervised the construction of three new batteries, and it is possible that this structure represents one of these buildings. The blocked doorway cannot presently be explained, although this act was possibly associated with the inhumation of burials at the site.

C 21 In the spur to the north of Bishop's Pond (between Bishop's Pond and the spur to the south of Sparrow's Pond)

C 21.1 Notes:

This gun emplacement, located within the coastal entrenchments, is only referred to in 1701.

C 21.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (to the north of Johnson's Fort and to the south of Mathew's Fort)

C 21.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'In the spur to the north of ye said pond [Bishop's] one saker gun well mounted, only wants an iron clamp upon one cheek and a forelock and key'.

C 21.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 21.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'In the spur to the north of ye said pond [Bishop's] one saker gun well mounted, only wants an iron clamp upon one cheek and a forelock and key'.

C 21.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 21.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 21.8 Archaeological evidence: N/A

C 21.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 21.10 Discussion:

This emplacement could not be archaeologically located. It is likely that, as part of the entrenchments, very little evidence for such a 'structure' remains. The entrenchments within this area are thought to have been located, heavily damaged by hurricane seas and erosion (see Section C43.8.1), however, no 'spurs' could be located. It is probable, due to the lack of references, that this emplacement was only temporary, although use of such a spur for cannon during the French attack of 1706 seems probable.

C 22 Mathew's Fort at Hamilton's Pond/Queen Anne's

C 22.1 Notes:

This fort, first built by Johnson in 1704, is described as having no cannon in 1707 and as ruined by 1727. In 1777, it is possible that John Pinney built a battery on the site.

C 22.2 Grid ref.: W 62° 37' 45", N 17° 09' 14"

C 22.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P 5):

French Intelligence Map: 'Battery of six cannon' shown (Fig. C1c).

?1703 (NARCH): 'Par Beauvilliers' French Intelligence Map: 'Battery of six cannon' shown (Fig. C1d).

c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): 'A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty's island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty's Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereign lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep': 'Mathews fort made to hold fourteen guns, with seven guns viz. four 6lbers, two 3lbers, one 2lber, 1½ barrels powder, six 12lb shot, two hundred and forty one 6lb shot, three rammers, three ladles, one wad hook and two powder horns'.

15/9/1705 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1704-5, 1344): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...F. A fort erected by me called Mathew's Fort, Sir William Mathew arriving as this fort was finisht its on the same bay as Johnson's Fort, the wall of this platform is eight foot broad and twenty foot high of which eight foot under ground, the reason the wall is soe thick is that they lye liable to be battered by men of warr the bay having such good anchorage, with out side is a ditch of water forty foot broad and eight foot deep... The ambusiers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'.

15/9/1705 (PRO CO700 ST.CHRISTOPHER AND NEVIS/2): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: Johnson's fort plans show a seven sided platform with fifteen embrasures and an interior guardhouse (Fig. C22a). The battery is of c.21 yards by 51 yards dimensions, with a 10 yard wide ditch around the front. The wall is 4 yards thick with a 6½ yard wide platform. A step 'entrance' is shown on the eastern side.

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'An accompt of what new forts wee have lately built and where, what old ones repaired and the changes wee have beene at to doe the same': 'At Hamilton's Pond a new ffort built and must have a guardhouse,

platforme and cisterne which hath and will cost £1500. Good guns wanting for this ffort, being for ten'.

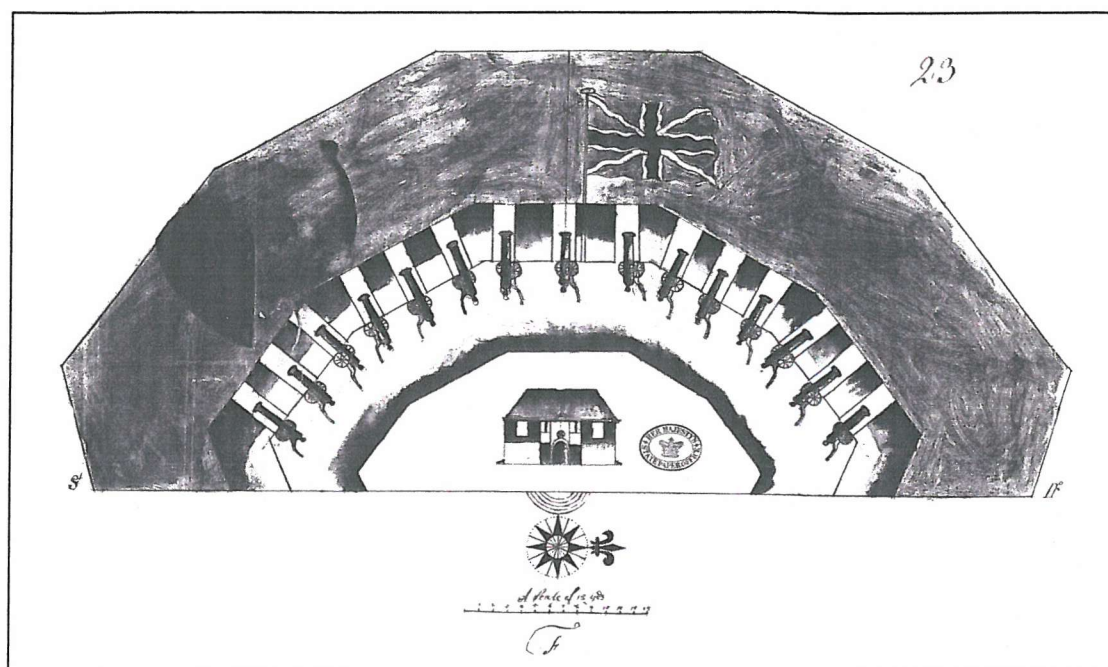


Figure C22a) Governor Johnson's plan of Mathew's Fort, 1705

- 12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis: 'An account of the proceeding of the French fleet against Nevis February 1706': The French comprised '...in all thirty six sayle'. On 7/2/1706 at night the French '...sounded in their boates the depth of water all along the greate bay from Black Rock to Cole's Point still keeping without gun shott'.
- 19/3/1706 (PRO CO153/9): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...F. A fort erected by me called Mathew's Fort, Sir William Mathew arriving as this fort was finisht its on the same bay as Johnson's Fort, the wall of this platform is eight foot broad and twenty foot high of which eight foot under ground, the reason the wall is soe thick is that they lye liable to be battered by men of warr the bay having such good anchorage, with out side is a ditch of water forty foot broad and eight foot deep...The ambusiers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'.
- 15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: 'An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores': 'Mathew's fort has nothing'.
- 3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): 'An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island': 'Queen Annes Fort demolished with no cannon'.
- 31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...Pursuing this line you come to the first of these platt bastions call'd Queen Anne's Fort, but no cannon on it'.

- 1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin':
 'Battery of six pieces' described and shown at position H (Fig. C1f). This map appears to be a copy of the earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.
- 1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'About half a mile further to the northward [from Black Rock] is the ruins of a battery that was capable of holding six or eight cannon at present none on it fit for service'.
- 20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'About half a mile further to the northward [from Black Rock] is the ruins of a battery that was capable of holding six or eight cannon at present none on it fit for service'.
- 6/10/1777 (PRO CO153/23): William Burt to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...their forts are in better order than any I have seen in the government. I recommended three more batteries to be erected, one was immediately begun called Pinney's Battery where three 6lbers will be mounted'.

C 22.4 Descriptions from other sources:

- 1777: Pares, R. 1950. *A West India Fortune*. London: A letter from John Pinney: 'Our situation is truly alarming...enemies all around us! I have obtained leave to raise a battery of three guns at the foot of my estate, where I shall keep all winter a nightly watch'.

C 22.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

- ?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P 5):
 French Intelligence Map: 'Battery of six cannon' shown (Fig. C1c).
- ?1703 (NARCH): 'Par Beauvilliers' French Intelligence Map: 'Battery of six cannon' shown (Fig. C1d).
- c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): 'A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty's island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty's Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereign lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep': 'Mathews fort made to hold fourteen guns, with seven guns viz. four 6lbers, two 3lbers, one 2lber, 1½ barrels powder, six 12lb shot, two hundred and forty one 6lb shot, three rammers, three ladles, one wad hook and two powder horns'.
- 12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'An accompt of what new forts wee have lately built and where, what old ones repaired and the changes wee have beene at to doe the same': 'At Hamilton's Pond a new ffort built and must have a guardhouse, platforme and cisterne which hath and will cost £1500. Good guns wanting for this ffort, being for ten'.
- 15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: 'An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores': 'Mathew's fort has nothing'.
- 3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): 'An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island':
 'Queen Annes Fort demolished with no cannon'.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations:

‘...Pursuing this line you come to the first of these platt bastions call’d Queen Anne’s Fort, but no cannon on it’.

1758 (NARCH) ‘Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin’:

‘Battery of six pieces’ shown at position H (Fig. C1f). This map appears to be a copy of the earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.

1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): ‘A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis’: ‘About half a mile further to the northward [from Black Rock] is the ruins of a battery that was capable of holding six or eight cannon at present none on it fit for service’.

20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): ‘A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis’: ‘About half a mile further to the northward [from Black Rock] is the ruins of a battery that was capable of holding six or eight cannon at present none on it fit for service’.

1777: A West India Fortune by Richard Pares. 1950. London: A letter from John Pinney: ‘Our situation is truly alarming...enemies all around us! I have obtained leave to raise a battery of three guns at the foot of my estate, where I shall keep all winter a nightly watch’.

6/10/1777 (PRO CO153/23): William Burt to Lords of Trade and Plantations: ‘...their forts are in better order than any I have seen in the government. I recommended three more batteries to be erected, one was immediately begun called Pinney’s Battery where three 6lbbers will be mounted’.

C 22.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 22.7 The fort at war:

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis: ‘An account of the proceeding of the French fleet against Nevis February 1706’: The French comprised ‘...in all thirty six sayle’. On 7/2/1706 at night the French ‘...sounded in their boates the depth of water all along the greate bay from Black Rock to Cole’s Point still keeping without gun shott’.

C 22.8 Archaeological evidence:

This site was located in May 1999, during the walkover survey. In November 1999, the site was further uncovered by hurricane Lenny. This fort proved to be badly ruined and much of the western side was obscured at its southern end by the remains of a later (hurricane destroyed) café (Fig. C22c), built on top of the battery.

The remaining masonry comprised the southern and northern ends of the battery (Fig C22i). The western side appeared to have been completely destroyed by the sea, with large piles of rubble present. A team of divers examined the immediate offshore area, but no structural remains could be located, however a large area of rubble running c.40m out from the shore was located.

The southern corner provided the most evidence, with several phases of activity present (Figs. C22c & C22d). Two parallel, stepped east to west walls/platforms, the upper running for 1.84m, the lower for 3.11m, were located. The upper wall/platform, only visible on its southern face, comprised two mortared

courses of irregular, roughly squared blocks and stood to a height of 0.48m. Where the stones had been less regular, rounded stone chips had been inserted to avoid large expanses of mortar.



Figure C22b) Mathew's Fort with modern café debris (centre left)

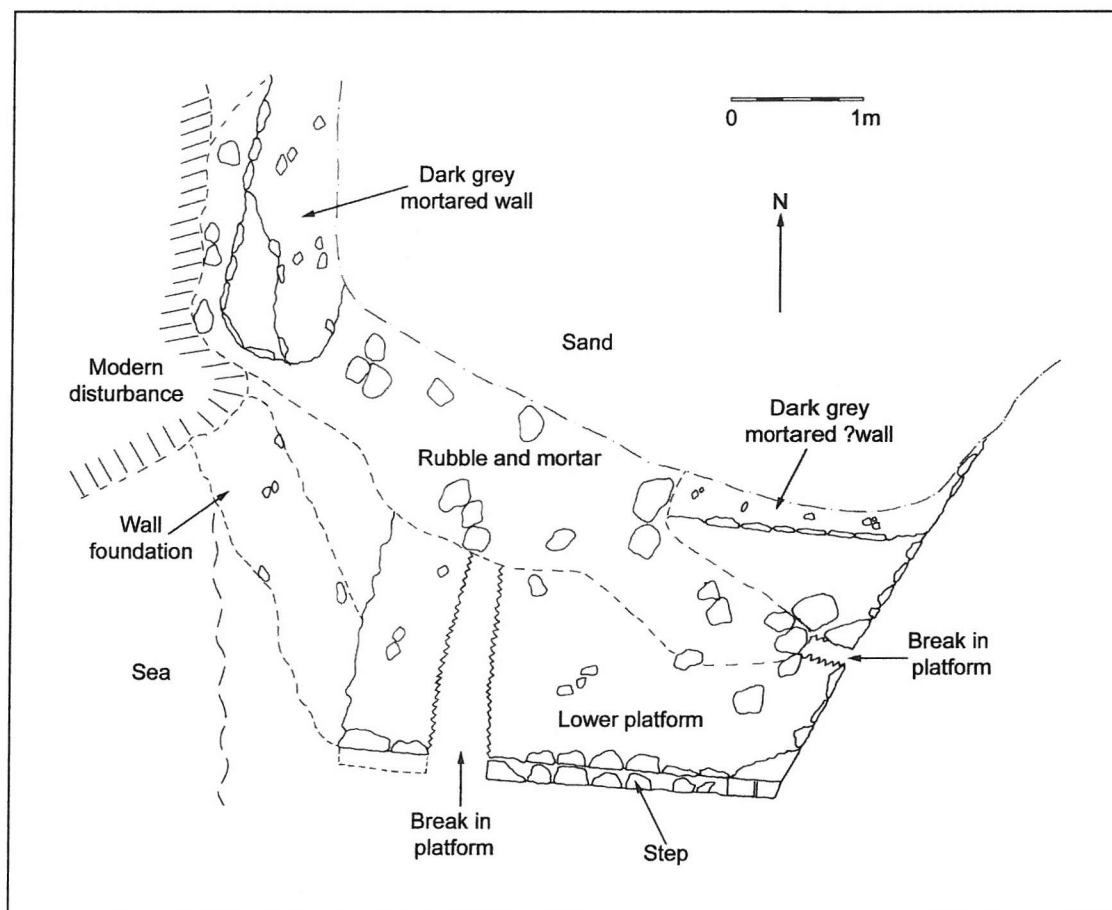


Figure C22c) Site plan of southern end of Mathew's Fort

The lower platform (thought initially to be a wall) was faced with irregular, rounded blocks with inserted stone chips, and had a foundation level step, c.12cm wide, on its southern side. This platform was at least 1m wide and stood to a height of 0.7m to the bottom of the step. This platform shows evidence of a deep fissure, c.2.28m from the eastern end. At the eastern corner, faced squared quoins (c.30cm by 40cm) had been used. From this corner, the platform face ran north-east to join with the upper dark grey-mortared wall c.2m to the north.

This platform was also cracked to the base. It is likely that these breaks were caused by subsidence of the south-western area, either due to undermining by hurricane seas or movement from earthquakes. The filling of this break with material before the, possibly late 18th century, western dark grey mortared wall was constructed (Fig. C22c) suggests the date of this damage to be contemporary with or closely after the use of the battery. When uncovered in November 1999, it was apparent that all the lower walls survived only to a maximum of four courses of the foundation.

Although the upper and lower eastern wall and platform initially appeared contemporary in date, the upper wall has a darker grey mortar and more squared stones than the lower platform and it is probable that, although respecting the line of the lower platform's eastern face, the upper wall was built at a later date, probably in the late 18th century (see Section 5.2.5.2).

At the western end of the platform, faint traces of mortar on the bedrock attested to the presence of a further retaining wall/platform foundation running north-west for at least 2.5m. At this point the trace was obscured by the later café masonry and could not be further located. To the north and above this mortar trace, a north to south wall (Fig. C22e) 0.88m thick and running for 2.36m had been built. This wall has the same dark grey mortar as the upper wall further to the east and it is possible that both were part of the same construction phase built over the earlier fort. However, no connection between these walls could be located.



Figure C22d) Photo of southern end of Mathew's Fort

Between these walls a rubble and mortar deposit was located. It would appear that the rubble dump had been deposited on top of the eastern upper dark grey, mortared wall and had slumped/been deposited to

bridge the break in the lower platform and stabilise the upper area. The western wall had been built above the dump (Fig. C22e), thus confirming the unrelated nature of the two dark grey, mortared walls. It is likely that stones from the earlier battery were used to form this deposit although this cannot be proved or disproved.



Figure C22e) Photo of western upper wall, overlying mortar and rubble dump layer



Figure C22f) Photo of southern end of Mathew's fort with sugar copper, November 1999 (Photo: R. leech)

To the south of the corner a metal (probably iron) sugar copper was found (Fig.C22f). This copper had been faced around the lip with ashlar tapering stones, apparently providing a rim to the pan when it was set into the ground. However, it was obvious that the sea had moved the copper from its original location. It

is probable that it was once situated within the confines of the southern end of the battery, although this cannot be proved with certainty. By February 2000, the copper had been moved behind the Golden Rock Pavilion and by May 2000, lay in front of Sunshine's Bar, to the north of the fort. This copper may have served as a cistern within the fort, although the date of such a use cannot be established.



Figure C22g) Northern end of Mathew's Fort before the hurricane in November 1999 (left) and in February 2000 (right)

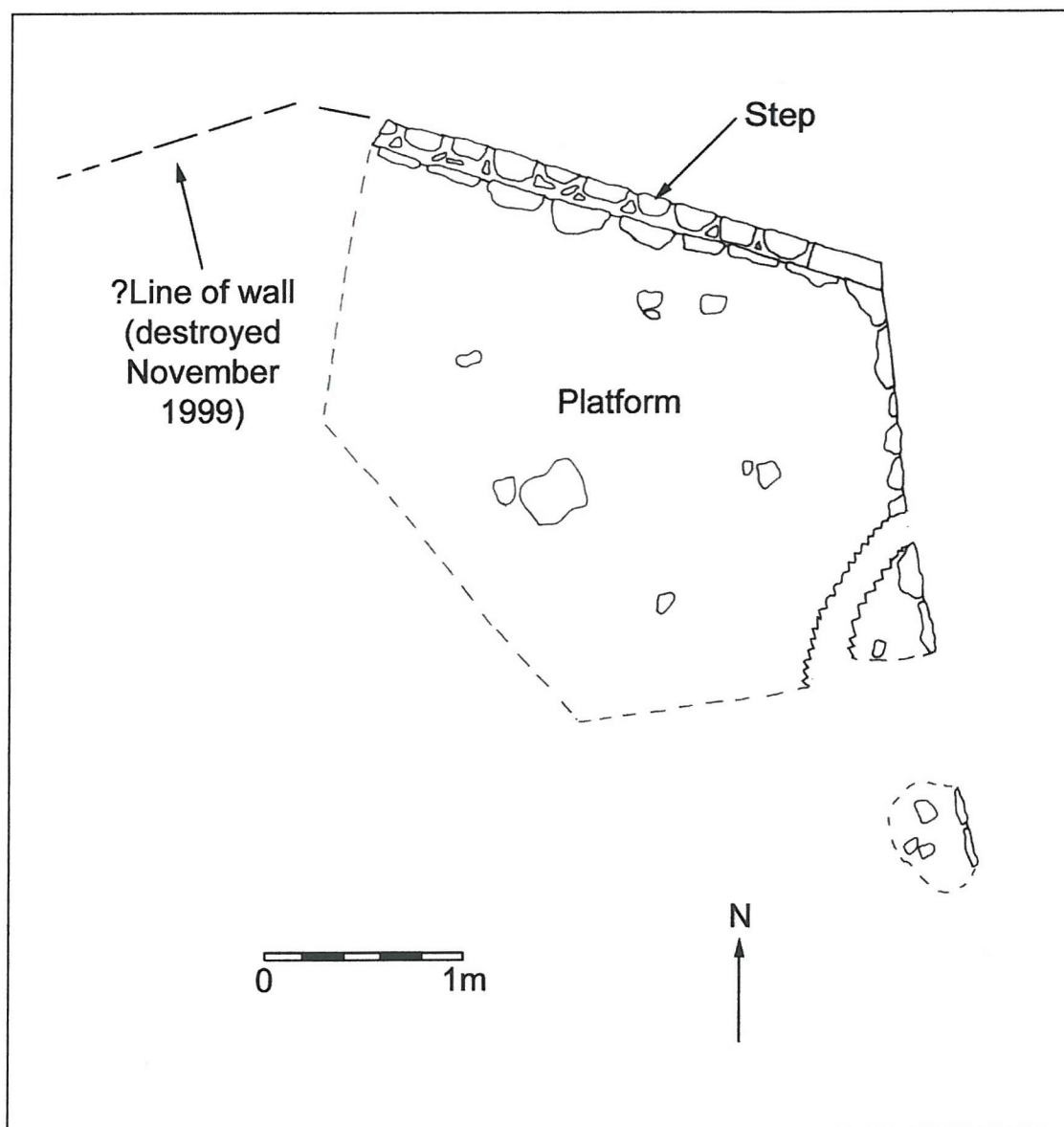


Figure C22h) Plan of northern end of Mathew's Fort, February 2000

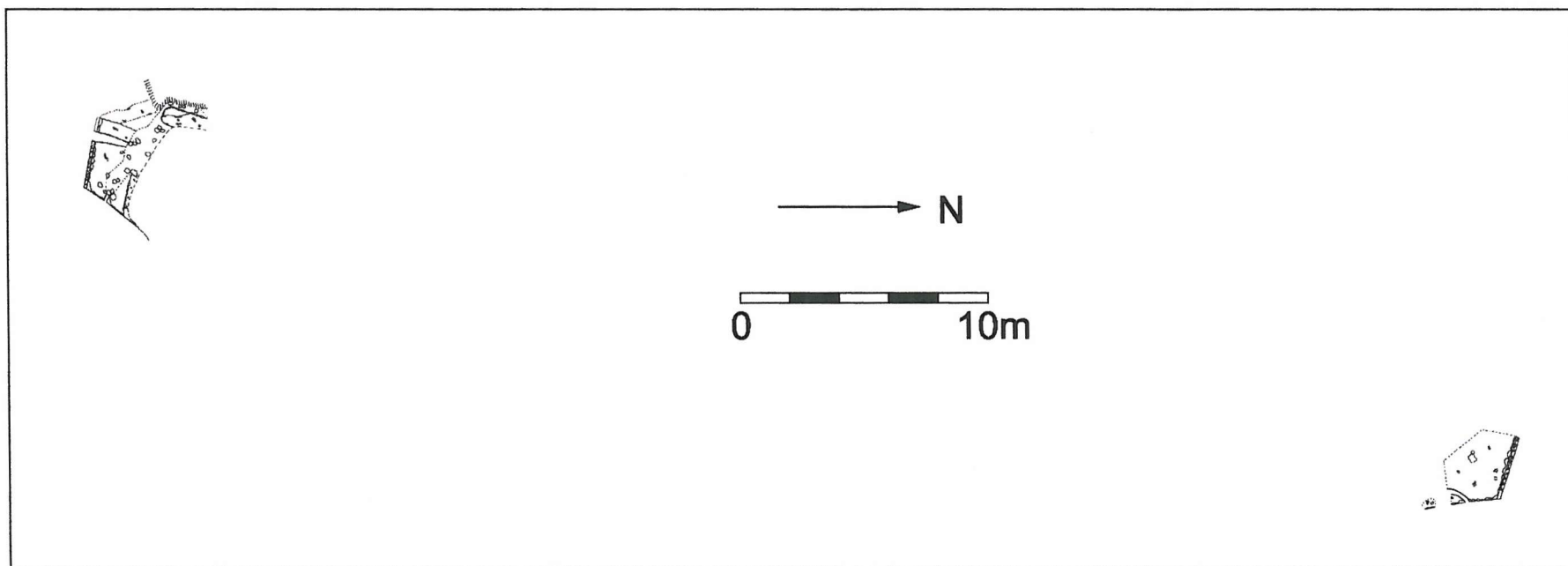


Figure C22i) Total plan of Mathew's Fort, February 2000.

The northern corner of the fort, located c.56m to the north of the southern corner, became more visible after the November 1999 hurricane. Although record photographs were taken in November 1999, no further recording was possible (the site had been reburied by the sea) until May 2000, when the corner again was uncovered (Figs. C22g & C22h).

From comparison with photographs taken before and after the hurricane in November 1999, it would appear that the wall running north-west from the corner, visible in May 2000, had previously extended to a further corner and wall. This second corner and wall had been removed by the hurricane in November 1999. Therefore prior to the hurricane it would appear that three connected walls were present on the site, but after the hurricane only one and half walls and one corner survived. A single photograph (Fig C22g, left), taken before the hurricane, is all that remains to record the presence of this structure.

This corner, like the southern corner, had been built as a faced rubble and mortar 'platform'. It survived in May 2000 with a northern 2.6m long face and an eastern 2m long face. The northern face again has a 12cm step, c.0.5m down the wall. Both faces were constructed from irregular rounded stones with stone chips inserted to avoid large expanses of mortar. On the southern side, a mortared rubble infill could be seen. No further archaeological remains could be seen within the vicinity.

C 22.9 Artefactual evidence:

The area of the platform on land was systematically searched for artefacts, but none could be found. A team of divers searched the immediate offshore area for cannon, but none could be located.

C 22.10 Discussion:

These remains favourably match Johnson's plans of Mathew's Fort of 1705 (Figs. C22a & C22i). The length from south to north, if compared to the plans, is accurate to within 1-2m, and the angles of the northern and southern corners identically match those seen in the plans, although a slight modification on the eastern face seems likely. No other of the polygonal beach forts had any similar angle present, suggesting that the identification of Mathew's Fort is correct.

This fort, named in honour of Governor William Mathew upon his arrival on Nevis in July 1704 (CSP 1704-5, No. 846), probably lasted until the French attack of 1706, and after this date was almost certainly not used as anything more than a gun emplacement and alarm post. In 1777, John Pinney built a battery at the foot of his Montravers estate (which lies to the east of the site) and it is possible that the later walls seen on the site represent this battery.

C 23 In the spur to the south of Sparrow's Pond (between the spur to the north of Bishop's Pond and Old Road Fort)

C 23.1 Notes:

This gun emplacement, located within the coastal entrenchments, is only referred to in 1701.

C 23.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (to the north of Johnson's and to the south of Mathew's Fort)

C 23.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'In the spur to the south of Sparrow's Pond, two saker guns, one well mounted, one small minion unmounted. There wants a carriage for one of the sakers'.

C 23.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 23.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'In the spur to the south of Sparrow's Pond, two saker guns, one well mounted, one small minion unmounted. There wants a carriage for one of the sakers'.

C 23.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 23.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 23.8 Archaeological evidence: N/A

C 23.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 23.10 Discussion:

This emplacement could not be archaeologically located. It is likely that, as part of the entrenchments, very little evidence for such a 'structure' remains. The entrenchments within this area have possibly been located, heavily damaged by hurricane seas and erosion (see Section C43.8.1). Possible evidence of a 'spur' has been found to the south of Mathew's fort, where the apparent entrenchments 'dog leg' east. It is probable, due to the lack of references, that this emplacement was only temporary, although use of such a spur for cannon during the French attack of 1706 seems probable.

C 24 Old Road/Old Fort/Katherine's/Catherine's

C 24.1 Notes:

This fort, first built in the mid to late 17th century, was rebuilt, closer to the shore, by Johnson, in 1705. By 1707 the fort had only one cannon and by the mid to late 18th century was being used as an alarm post. In 1777, it is possible that Burt built a battery on the site although this cannot be proved with certainty.

C 24.2 Grid ref.: W 62° 37' 47", N 17° 09' 33"

C 24.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

1671 (PRO CO1/27): Sir Charles Wheler to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...I fixt upon this place [Pellican Point] rather than the old ffort (although you see some waters there which might be drawn together with some advantage) for ye reasons following: 1. Because it commands the principal roade which is called Bath Bay soe that the island may always be relieved by it and it is a feature in the case that all the French who make St. Christopher must hall close under this point and strike to the King's Pavilion or else they will be drove to leeward. 2. Because it will be less expence in regard the sea washes soe much of it. 3. Because the towne, which at my coming was called the Old Redstorehouse, which I have now honoured with the King's name, begins to increase and will shortly have five hundred men able to bear arms which will be secured under the fort. 4. But lastly and chiefly my reason is because under the north side of the highland is the Bath which coming from a hot spring takes that name and falls into the sea in such a sort of ditch or brooke that I persuade myself it is possible to make a harbour for shallops and ketches and vessels of seventy or eighty tonne if not better chiefly because the tract of land you see between the Bath and Charles Towne is marish and boggish and full of water and springs which may be gathered together and drawn into the Bath channel or brooke'.

1672 (PRO CO154/1/114, CSP1669-1674, 1013): 'Laws Regulations and orders in force at the Leeward Islands, 1668-1672: Bath Bay, Ould Road, Morton's Bay, New Windward and Indian Castle should be lawful shipping places for any goods'.

1672 (PRO CO1/29/167, CSP1669-1674, 988): 'Concerning arms carried to the Leeward Islands by Sir Charles Wheler': Barrels of powder '...were carefully stored up in the magazine at the Old Fort in Nevis'.

14/12/1672 (PRO CO1/29/161, CSP1669-1674, 987): 'The present state of the Leeward Islands' by Sir Charles Wheler: 'From Pellicans Point to Musketi Bay is all the leeward side of the island about five English mile in length, for the defence of which there are about thirty pieces of cannon mounted upon the platforms of Pellicans Point, the old rock, the old fort, Duke's Sconce, Morton's Bay and if I had stayed I would have raised one at Musketi Bay it being the best landing of the leeward side especially from St. Christopher...In the time of the warr the inhabitants did by the hands of their slaves run a line all along the coast, but I had persuaded them to make little redoubts, shut up as well to the land as to the sea that they might doe with the same expence of hands as their long line, because their line being very slight and without a trench (for I saw the ruins of it) an

- enemy would passe it anywhere which would endanger the losse of ye island, in regard their men were extended five mile in length and that an enemy might be landing at ye same time all along; but since my coming away I think they are distracted from it and will runne their slight line without any fastness except that of Pellican Point, by reason it is on high land, in a kinde of promontary all the other platformes being open’.
- 10/5/1676 (PRO CO153/2): ‘An Account of the Caribbee Islands’ by Thomas Warner: ‘Nevis: Fort at Morton’s Bay with five guns, Duke’s Sconce with four guns, Old Road fort with nine guns, Black Rock fort with five guns, A platform at Charles Town with three guns, Pelican Point fort with seven guns’.
- 22/11/1676 (PRO CO1/38/152, CSP1675-6, 1152): Answers to enquiries about Leeward Islands by William Stapleton: ‘There are neither fforts nor castles in any part of my government which may properly deserve that denomination, but such as are called soe and are but platformes...Old Road fort four 6lbers, thirty six 12lb shot, thirty six 8lb shot, five hundred and forty 5lb shot, five hundred and forty 6lb shot, fourteen barrills powder, two and 75 barrills are lodged at Capt. John Hughes house’.
- 19/4/1685 (CSP1685-8, 135): Assembly of Nevis Minutes: William Stapleton has proposed that Black Rock and Old Road forts should be repaired and that twenty barrels of ammunition should be supplied to the forts. A standing guard should be appointed instead of a lookout.
- 1687 (BL Sloane 45/35): William Hack: ‘A chart of the west end of Nevis and part of St. Christopher, originally described by Mr. John Jenifer, drawn in 1687 by William Hack’ (Fig. C1a): Old Road fort shown at position 5, with four guns.
- 9/2/1688 (CSP1685-8, 1622): Council of Nevis Minutes: ‘the fortifications to be put in repair...and for the laying of the platforms at the Old Road’.
- 20/11/1688 (PRO CO155/1, CSP1685-8, 1935): Assembly of Nevis Minutes: They request money ‘...being about to build with stone and lime three forts in this island: the platforms at the Sessions House, Black Rock and the Old Road forts which will cost us more than £1000’.
- 7/1701 (PRO CO152/4): Council of Nevis Minutes: ‘Upon motion of the Lt. Governor that a list of artillery stores that are wanting to be drawn and deliver’d him to send to his Excellency...the following list was accordingly drawn; two hundred good firelocks, four very long sakers, six 12lbers and six 18lbers of the longest size to lye in the forts as followeth: three guns for Long Point fort, four for Charles Fort, two for Black Rock fort, two for Old Road fort three for James fort, two for round hill platform. A sufficient quantity of shot fit for them’.
- 25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: ‘Old Road Fort, four guns pretty well mounted, but the guns are of an indifferent size’.
- ?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P5): French Intelligence Map: ‘Battery of eight cannon’ shown (Fig. C1c).
- ?1703 (NARCH): ‘Par Beauvilliers’ French Intelligence Map: Battery shown but no description is given (Fig. C1d).
- c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): ‘A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty’s island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty’s Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereigne lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the

foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep': 'Catherine's fort made to hold fourteen guns, with eight 6lbers [no stores of any kind]'.

15/9/1705 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1704-5, 1344): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...G. A fort I had erected called Katherine's Fort formerly known by ye name of Old Road it being on the same bay and proportionable to Mathew's Fort...The ambusers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'.

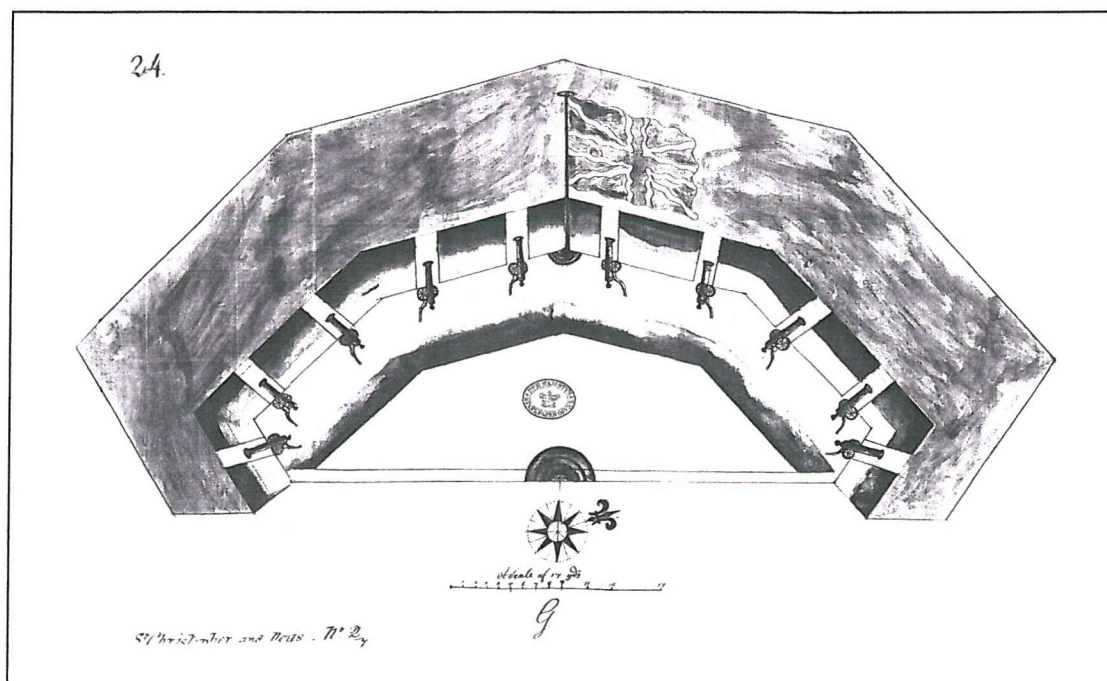


Figure C24a) Governor Johnson's plan of Old Road/Katherine's fort, 1705

15/9/1705 (PRO CO700 ST.CHRISTOPHER AND NEVIS/2): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: Johnson's fort plans show a six sided platform with ten embrasures (Fig. 24a). No guardhouse is shown within. The dimensions of the fort are c.59 yards by 23 yards. The wall is 4 yards thick and the platform 6½ yards wide. Around the front of the fort a 10½-yard wide ditch is shown. There is a step 'entrance' on the eastern side.

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'An accompt of what new forts wee have lately built and where, what old ones repaired and the changes wee have beene at to doe the same': 'A new battery erected nearer the sea at the Old Road of stone and lime a guardhouse with a cistern and platforme designed new which will cost at least £1600. Better guns wanted there being but eight and the old and the new fforts deserve fourteen very good guns it being in the middle of all the greate bay'.

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis: 'An account of the proceeding of the French fleet against Nevis February 1706': The French comprised '...in all thirty six sayle, they kept without gunn shott of our forts and came that evening to an anchor against the

Old Road fort neare a league from the shore'. On 6/2/1706 they '...tooke greate numbers of men out of their ships of warr into small boates...as if they intended to attack us...but the wind...occasioned a great cockling sea where they rid at anchor and a high surfe on shoare and the great diligence and readiness they observed all along our trenches which were well manned ready to receive them as also the severall fforts being soe neare one the other that left to land where they would they must be open and exposed to the shott of two battery's at once they...took their men into the ships again'. On 7/2/1706 at night the French '...sounded in their boates the depth of water all along the greate bay from Black Rock to Cole's Point still keeping without gun shott'. On 8/2/1706 '...about break of day the enemy with two ships of warr came within shott and fired their broadsides against the fforts and trenches between the Old Road and the ffort at Cole's Point. Wee having lately made a ffort at the Cotton Tree in the midway between the two former all which three fforts kept constantly firing at them and was believed and since confirmed by some deserters did them considerable damage in their hulls and rigging (and as is credibly reported killed their vice admiral and eight men) but thanks to God wee received no losses at all'.

19/3/1706 (PRO CO153/9): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...G. A fort I had erected called Katherine's Fort formerly known by ye name of Old Road it being on the same bay and proportionable to Mathew's Fort...The ambusiers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'.

15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: 'An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores': 'Old Road fort has one lowest demi-culvering or 9lber'.

3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): 'An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island': 'Old Road guns mounted: one demi-culverin'.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...on the same line further norward is Old Road fort another such and in it is a 12lber mounted'.

1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin': 'Battery of eight pieces' is described and shown at position G (Fig. C1f). This map appears to be a copy of the earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.

1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'A quarter of a mile since further [from Mathews] to the northward is the ruins of another battery near which is a 9lber mounted on a very bad carriage used as an alarm gun'.

20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'A quarter of a mile since further [from Mathews] to the northward is the ruins of another battery near which is a 9lber mounted on a very bad carriage used as an alarm gun'.

6/10/1777 (PRO CO153/23): William Burt to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...their forts are in better order than any I have seen in the government. I recommended three more batteries to be erected, one was immediately begun called Pinney's Battery where three 6lbers will be mounted'.

C 24.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 24.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

1672 (PRO CO1/29/167, CSP1669-1674, 988): 'Concerning arms carried to the Leeward Islands by Sir Charles Wheler': Barrels of powder '...were carefully stored up in the magazine at the Old Fort in Nevis'.

14/12/1672 (PRO CO1/29/161, CSP1669-1674, 987): 'The present state of the Leeward Islands' by Sir Charles Wheler: 'From Pellicans Point to Musketi Bay is all the leeward side of the island about five English mile in length, for the defence of which there are about thirty pieces of cannon mounted upon the platforms of Pellicans Point, the old rock, the old fort, Duke's Sconce, Morton's Bay and if I had stayed I would have raised one at Musketi Bay it being the best landing of the leeward side especially from St. Christopher...In the time of the warr the inhabitants did by the hands of their slaves run a line all along the coast, but I had persuaded them to make little redoubts, shut up as well to the land as to the sea that they might doe with the same expense of hands as their long line, because their line being very slight and without a trench (for I saw the ruins of it) an enemy would passe it anywhere which would endanger the losse of ye island, in regard their men were extended five mile in length and that an enemy might be landing at ye same time all along; but since my coming away I think they are distracted from it and will runne their slight line without any fastness except that of Pellican Point, by reason it is on high land, in a kinde of promontary all the other platformes being open'.

10/5/1676 (PRO CO153/2): 'An Account of the Caribbee Islands' by Thomas Warner: 'Nevis: Fort at Morton's Bay with five guns, Duke's Sconce with four guns, Old Road fort with nine guns, Black Rock fort with five guns, A platform at Charles Town with three guns, Pelican Point fort with seven guns'.

22/11/1676 (PRO CO1/38/152, CSP1675-6, 1152): Answers to enquiries about Leeward Islands by William Stapleton: 'There are neither fforts nor castles in any part of my government which may properly deserve that denomination, but such as are called soe and are but platformes...Old Road fort four 6lbers, thirty six 12lb shot, thirty six 8lb shot, five hundred and forty 5lb shot, five hundred and forty 6lb shot, fourteen barrills powder, two and 75 barrills are lodged at Capt. John Hughes house'.

19/4/1685 (CSP1685-8, 135): Assembly of Nevis Minutes: William Stapleton has proposed that Black Rock and Old Road forts should be repaired and that twenty barrels of ammunition should be supplied to the forts. A standing guard should be appointed instead of a lookout.

1687 (BL Sloane 45/35): William Hack: 'A chart of the west end of Nevis and part of St. Christopher, originally described by Mr. John Jenifer, drawn in 1687 by William Hack' (C1a): Old Road fort shown at position 5, with four guns.

7/1701 (PRO CO152/4): Council of Nevis Minutes: 'Upon motion of the Lt. Governor that a list of artillery stores that are wanting to be drawn and deliver'd him to send to his Excellency...the following list was accordingly drawn; two hundred good firelocks, four very long sakers, six 12lbers and six 18lbers of the longest size to lye in the forts as followeth: three guns for Long Point fort, four for Charles Fort, two for Black Rock fort, two for Old Road fort three for James fort, two for round hill platform. A sufficient quantity of shot fit for them'.

- 25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'Old Road Fort, four guns pretty well mounted, but the guns are of an indifferent size'.
- ?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P5): French Intelligence Map: 'Battery of eight cannon' shown (Fig. C1c).
- ?1703 (NARCH): 'Par Beauvilliers' French Intelligence Map: Battery shown but no description is given (Fig. C1d).
- c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): 'A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty's island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty's Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereigne lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep': 'Catherine's fort made to hold fourteen guns, with eight 6lbers [no stores of any kind]'.
- 12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'An accompt of what new forts wee have lately built and where, what old ones repaired and the changes wee have beene at to doe the same': 'A new battery erected nearer the sea at the Old Road of stone and lime a guardhouse with a cistern and platforme designed new which will cost at least £1600. Better guns wanted there being but eight and the old and the new fforts deserve fourteen very good guns it being in the middle of all the greate bay'.
- 15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: 'An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores': 'Old Road fort has one lowest demi-culvering or 9lber'.
- 3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): 'An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island': 'Old Road guns mounted: one demi-culverin'.
- 31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...on the same line further norward is Old Road fort another such and in it is a 12lber mounted'.
- 1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin': 'Battery of eight pieces' shown at position G (Fig. C1f). This map appears to be a copy of the earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.
- 1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'A quarter of a mile since further [from Mathews] to the northward is the ruins of another battery near which is a 9lber mounted on a very bad carriage used as an alarm gun'.
- 20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'A quarter of a mile since further [from Mathews] to the northward is the ruins of another battery near which is a 9lber mounted on a very bad carriage used as an alarm gun'.

C 24.6 Evidence for manning:

- 19/4/1685 (CSP1685-8, 135): Assembly of Nevis Minutes: William Stapleton has proposed that Black Rock and Old Road forts should be repaired and that twenty barrels of ammunition should be supplied to the forts. A standing guard should be appointed instead of a lookout.

C 24.7 The fort at war:

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis: 'An account of the proceeding of the French fleet against Nevis February 1706': The French comprised '...in all thirty six sayle, they kept without gunn shott of our forts and came that evening to an anchor against the Old Road fort neare a league from the shore'. On 6/2/1706 they '...tooke greate numbers of men out of their ships of warr into small boates...as if they intended to attack us...but the wind...occasioned a great cockling sea where they rid at anchor and a high surfe on shoare and the great diligence and readiness they observed all along our trenches which were well manned ready to receive them as also the severall fforts being soe neare one the other that left to land where they would they must be open and exposed to the shott of two battery's at once they...took their men into the ships again'. On 7/2/1706 at night the French '...sounded in their boates the depth of water all along the greate bay from Black Rock to Cole's Point still keeping without gun shott'. On 8/2/1706 '...about break of day the enemy with two ships of warr came within shott and fired their broadsides against the fforts and trenches between the Old Road and the ffort at Cole's Point. Wee having lately made a ffort at the Cotton Tree in the midway between the two former all which three fforts kept constantly firing at them and was believed and since confirmed by some deserters did them considerable damage in their hulls and rigging (and as is credibly reported killed their vice admiral and eight men) but thanks to God wee received no losses at all'.

C 24.8 Archaeological evidence:

This site, first located by the author in May 1999, comprises two structures: the remains of a small square building on land and sections of masonry underwater lying c.40m offshore. This area has been heavily landscaped during the construction of the Four Seasons Resort Hotel and apart from a few plantation buildings incorporated within the complex, no other historical or landscape features can be seen in the vicinity. Due to this landscaping, the original ground level is impossible to ascertain although a slightly lower level than at present appears likely, if compared with the surrounding country.

In May 2000, a diving team based at the Centre for Maritime Archaeology, University of Southampton, surveyed the underwater remains. The survey was made both with tape and theodolite and representative areas were photographed and drawn. A video of all underwater features was also made. The onshore building was fully excavated by quadrant, and east to west and north to south sections were taken across the interior. All walls, both on the interior and the exterior, were drawn in elevation (Figs. C24e & C24f) and a full contextual and photographic record was made. For ease of comparison, and due to the lack of fine detail, all illustrations were made to a scale of 1:20.

Inundation by the sea caused many problems during the excavation of the building, leading to the collapse of many sections and the subsequent adaptation of the excavation strategy (particularly the retention of a baulk) to accommodate such problems. However, it appears that the whole structure has been regularly inundated and no contemporary deposits were encountered.

This small building, located on the sea edge c.125m south of Beachcomber restaurant, comprises a complete length of eastern wall and incomplete northern and southern walls (Fig. C24b). The southern wall survives, having fallen north into the interior of the structure (Fig. C24g). The aims of the excavation were

to locate evidence relating to the construction of the building, to ascertain (through the removal of the overburden over the collapsed southern wall) the dimensions of the building and, if possible, to retrieve dating evidence.



Figure C24b) The onshore building at Four Seasons Resort looking east.

C 24.8.2 The Onshore building.

In the first instance, the whole area was cleaned of modern debris and the north-eastern quadrant was excavated. It soon became apparent that the sea had recently filled the building with beach sand (Context 100), thus removing any stratigraphy from the interior of the building (Fig. C24d). The sand was therefore shovelled away, quadrant by quadrant, to expose the floor and collapsed southern wall. The base of the structure was reached 1.5m down from the top of the wall and natural sand deposits were located beneath. North to south and east to west sections were drawn to detail the depth of the sand deposits and to show layering within the deposits (Fig. C24d).

The eastern wall (Contexts 102 and 112), which survives to a maximum height of 2.1m on the interior and 1.2m on the exterior, is 4.7m long on the exterior, 3.3m on the interior and 0.7m thick (Figs. C24c, C24d, C24e & C24f). This thickness of the wall has been reduced by the loss of the exterior facing and, as built, would have probably measured 0.8m, thus adding a further c.20cm to the exterior length of all walls. Above Context 102, the presence of Context 112 (a course not bonded with the lower courses) would suggest a later rebuilding of the wall at the top levels. This course, seen also in the southern wall, may also represent the vestiges of an upper floor/roof level.

The southern wall (Contexts 103, 104 and 105) only survives as a collapsed section of masonry, apparently at least 1.8m high by 3.2m long on the exterior (Fig. C24g). If added to the corner now standing, an exterior measurement of at least 4m can be given. The northern wall (Context 101) survives to a length of

1.95m on the exterior and 1.2m on the interior. The rest of the wall has not survived, probably removed by hurricane seas. Lying in the surf to the west of the building a small section of masonry (uncovered gradually by the sea during the course of excavation) shows evidence of a curved corner (Fig. C24c).

This masonry (Context 114) probably represents the north-west corner of the building moved from its original location. The interior face of the standing walls survives almost intact, with 7/8 courses of squared faced stone blocks of between 20-40cm x c.25cm in size. In between the blocks, any ill-fitting stones have been supplemented with small (c.5-10cm x c.2-3cm) slivered stone chips (probably from the working of the larger stones), inserted into the grouting. The corners of this structure are curved on the interior, seamlessly continuing the coursing on all three standing walls (Fig. C24h). This type of masonry construction can be seen in many other late 18th century buildings on Nevis (e.g. Bath Hotel, Coconut Walk lime kiln) and it is probable that the masonry dates from this period.

The exterior of the standing walls has been robbed of all facing stones, with only the mortar and rubble core remaining (Fig. C24i). However, the exterior of the collapsed southern wall shows regular, coursed, faced, stone blocks of the same type visible on the interior surface of the standing walls, suggesting a well faced building both externally and internally. It is difficult to ascertain whether the curved corners, seen on the interior, were also originally present on the exterior, however the right angled profile of the surviving core would suggest that this is unlikely to have been the case.

Upon removal of the north-eastern quadrant, at a depth of 1.5-1.7m down the wall (0.5m below ground level), a solid stone rubble and mortar floor (Context 113) was encountered. This floor proved to be 0.3m thick and extended up to 1.2m out from the length of the eastern wall. To the west, this feature appears to have been removed by the sea along with the entire western side of the building. This floor contained larger (c.10-20cm diameter) stones in its upper levels, whilst the lower 10-20cm comprised mainly small stone aggregated mortar. Context 109, an area of stone rubble and sand appears to have fallen into a gap in this feature and contained modern glass.

The removal of sand covering the southern wall provided evidence (Fig. 24d: Section A) for the method of construction of the building. Within this section, four contexts could be seen. The first, Context 115, although apparently similar to the floor context 103, showed evidence of a lighter grey mortar with an exterior facing stone bedded into it. This context joins Context 103 to form the floor of the building, apparently incorporated into the wall construction. Above these levels Context 104 represents the wall proper with Context 105 possibly representing a later course added to the wall, similar to that seen in the eastern wall in Context 112.

From the evidence above, it seems likely that the building was constructed as follows. A large square hole was excavated into the sand over the trace of the building. The building was then marked out and a single course of exterior mortared facing stones laid to provide a 0.3m deep-walled enclosure. This enclosure was then filled with mortar and rubble, finer on the lower levels and with larger stones added to provide the upper surface. The walls were then constructed directly onto the floor platform. From excavation, it is apparent that the whole structure did not have wall foundations and was laid directly onto the sand beach. However, the thick floor level would have acted similarly to a wall foundation, providing stability for the structure in such an unstable building environment. However, when hurricane seas reached the site, the sea undermined the sand thus leaving the western side of the structure high and dry, causing the building to effectively 'snap' in half, the eastern floor remaining intact, thus preserving the eastern walls.

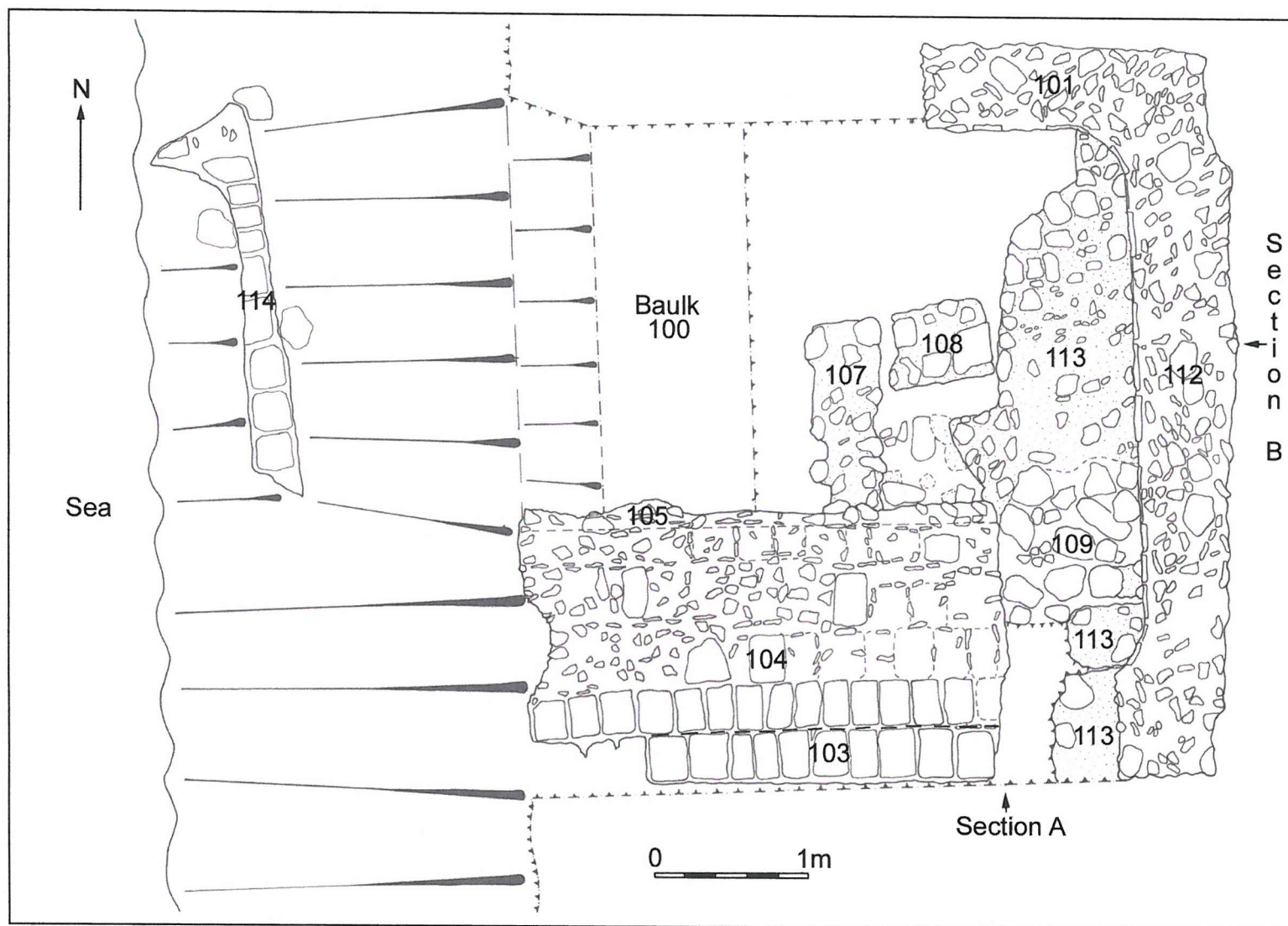


Figure C24c) Site plan of onshore building at Old Road

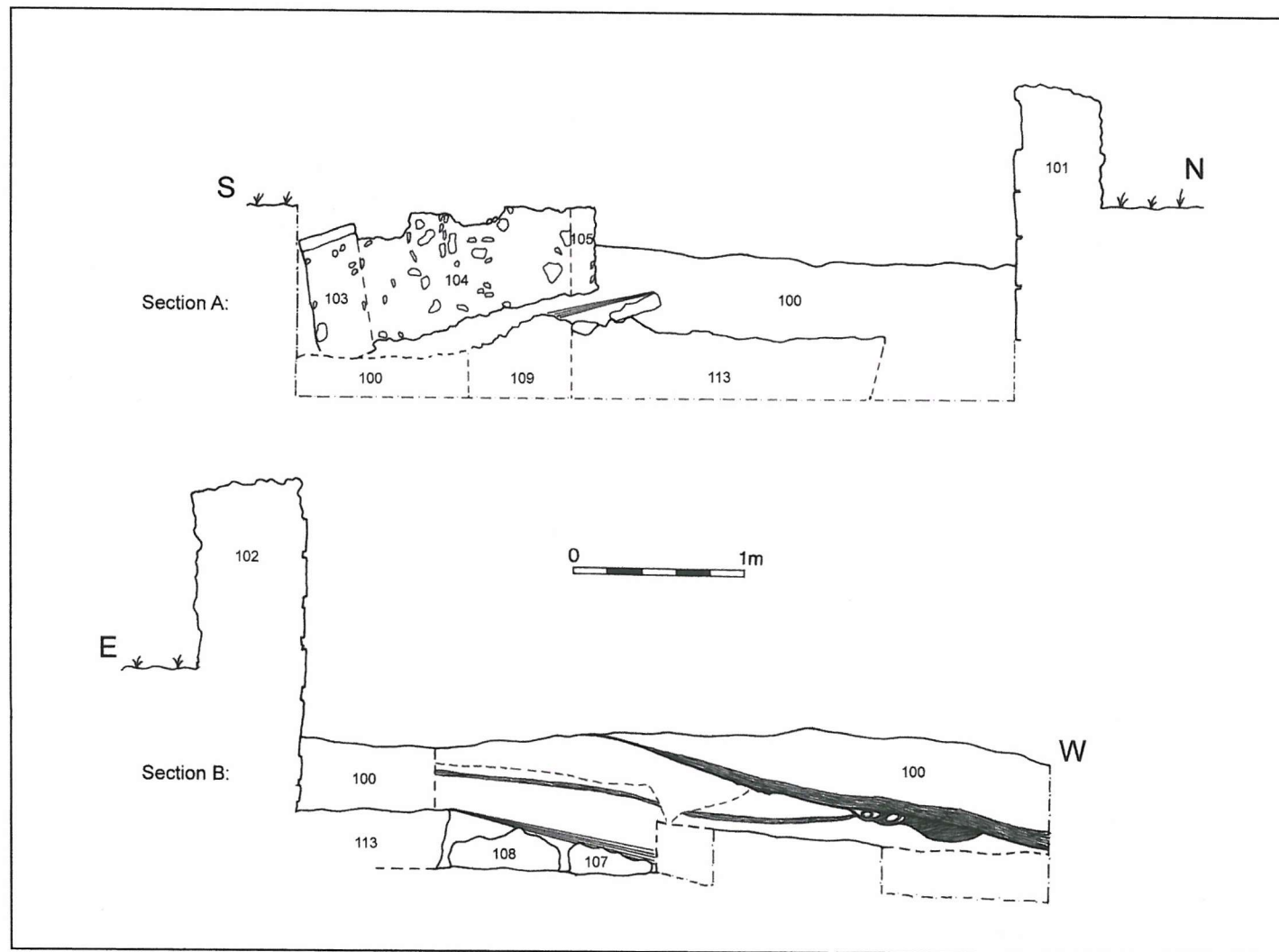


Figure C24d) Sections A & B across interior of onshore building

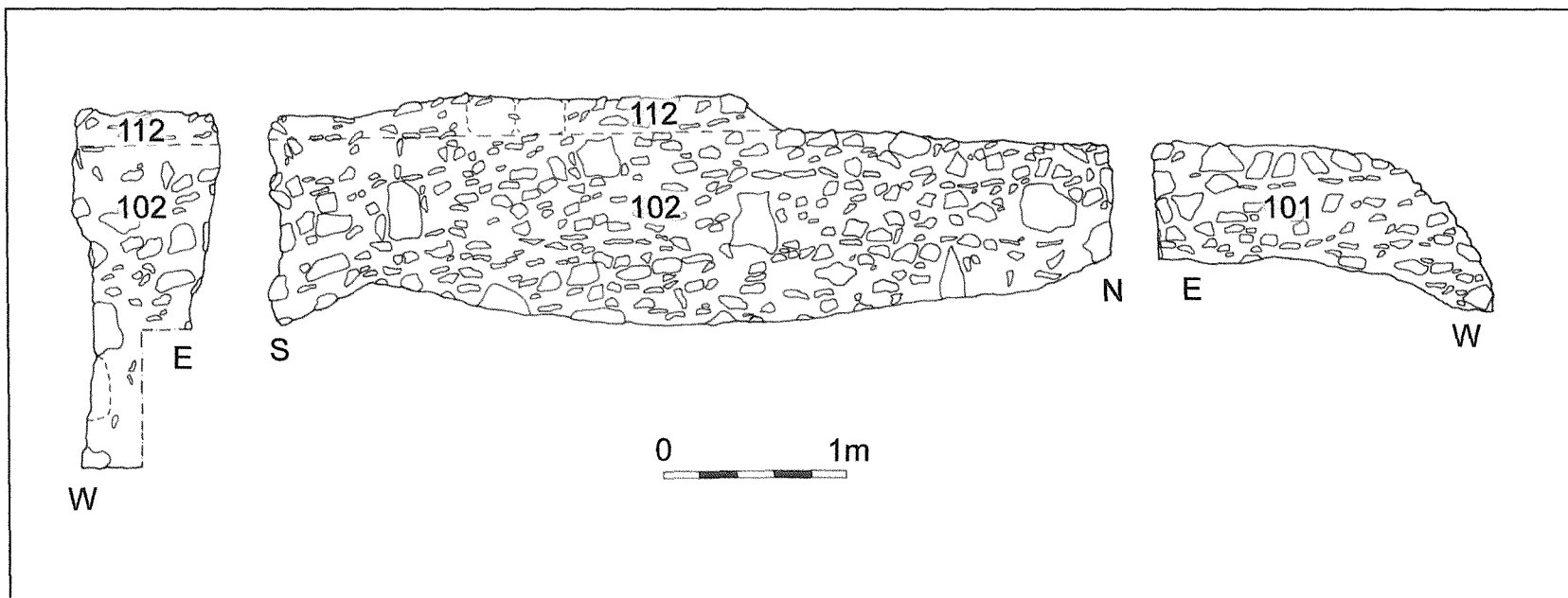


Figure C24e) Exterior elevations of walls 101 and 102

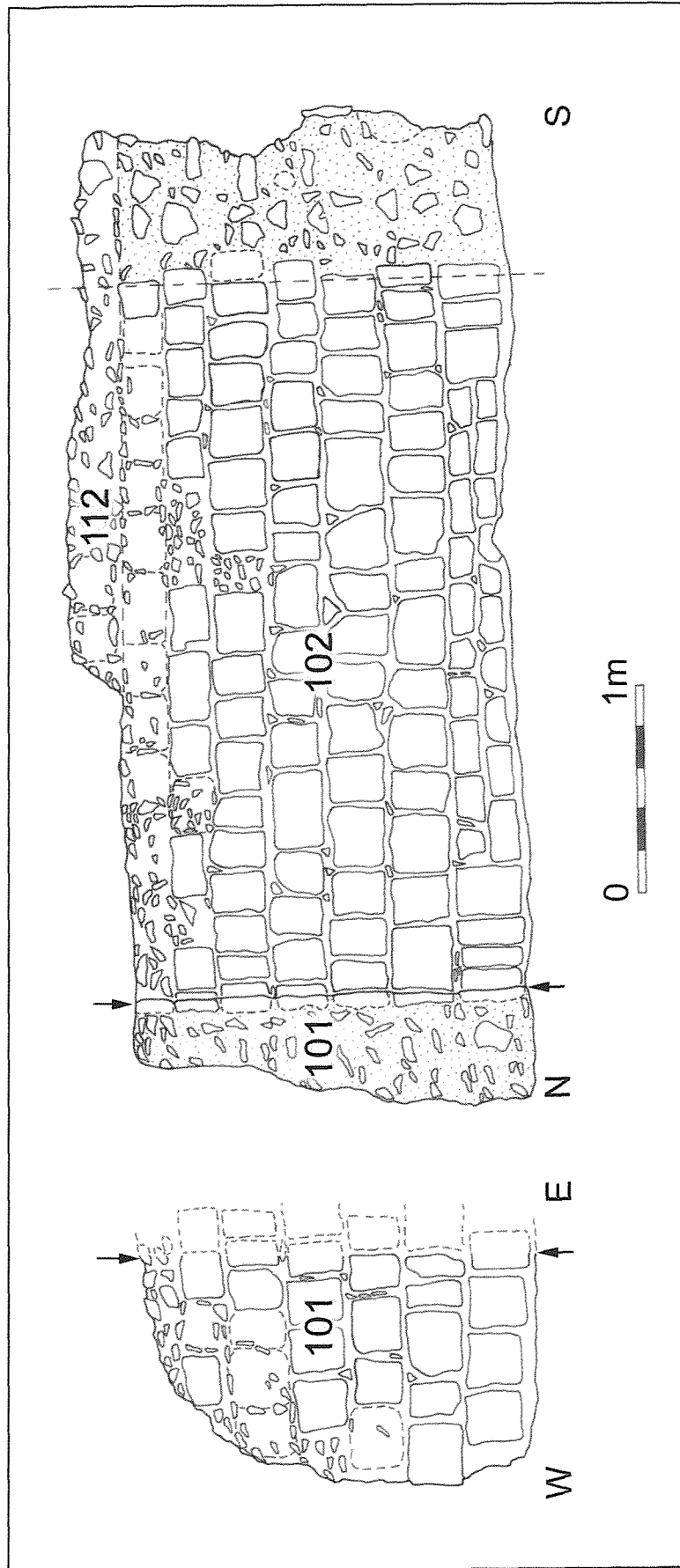


Figure C24f) Interior Elevations of walls 101 and 102.

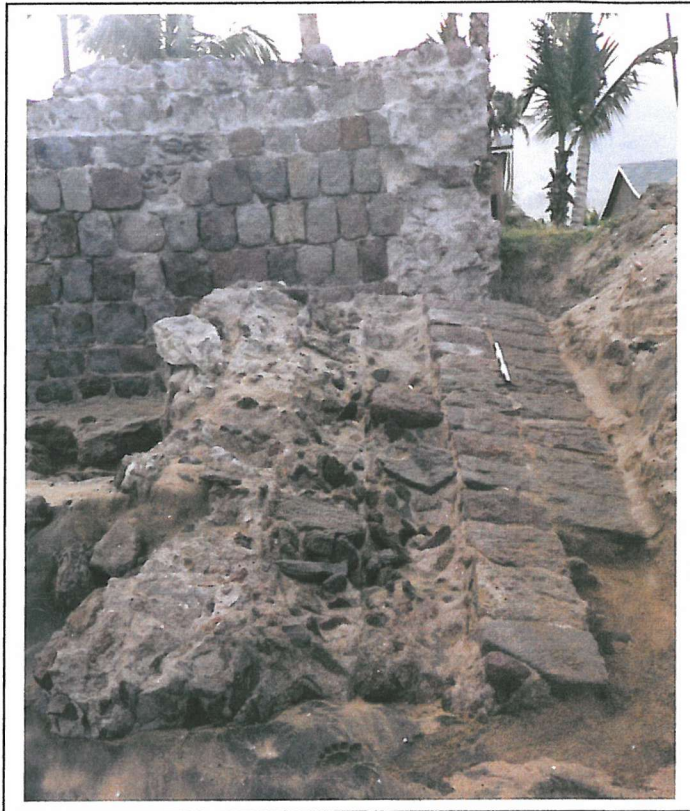


Figure C24g) The collapsed southern wall.

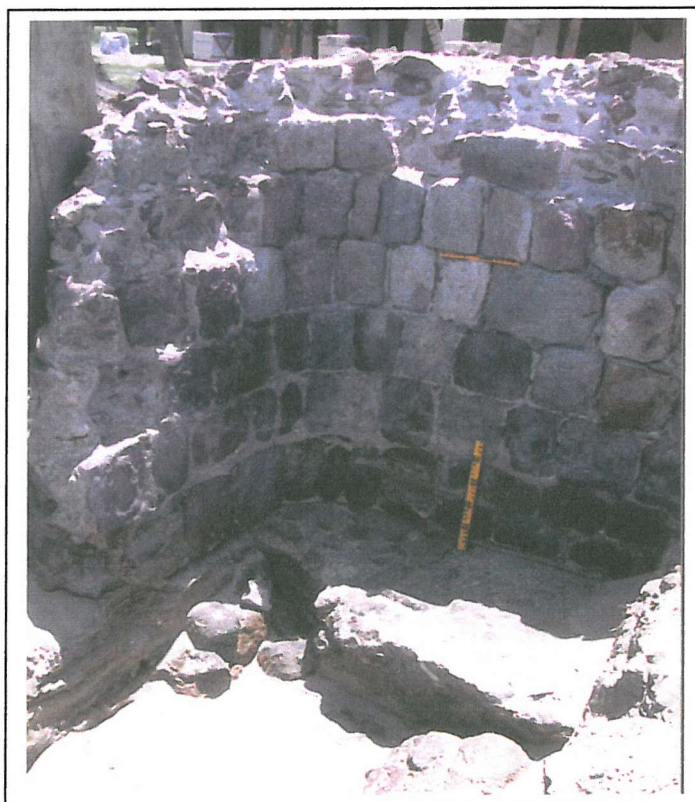


Figure C24h) Curved interior corner of onshore building (Photo: K. Keithley)

In talking to local people, it soon became apparent that the destruction of the building had only occurred within the last 10-15 years. Successive hurricanes, since that date, had then eroded and further damaged the structure. The building, when standing, was described as square, suggesting c.5m x c.5m original dimensions. There was an arched door on the eastern end of the southern wall leading into a narrow ('person width') corridor, which ran the length of the eastern wall. From this corridor a well-finished, arched door led into the main room, which comprised the rest of the building. The building did not have windows and was not roofed at this time (Wilkenson 2000).



Figure C24i) Robbed exterior of onshore building (Photo: K. Keithley).

C 24.8.3 The Underwater Gun platform.

The underwater remains spread over an area of c.25m by 20m, running parallel north-south along the beach, c.40m south-east of the onshore building. Nine sections of masonry were discovered surrounded by a disparate c.20m spread of rubble debris, derived from the ruined structure. The site was systematically examined underwater and roughly cleaned, and then a taped and theodolite survey of the remains found was made (Fig. C24l). All of the wall sections discovered were constructed with irregular, rounded stone facings with a rubble and mortar core. Six of the masonry blocks showed evidence of a step on the outer wall face (Fig. C24k). This step is similar to that seen in Mathew's Fort at the Golden Rock Pavilion (Fig. C22c & C22h). All the wall sections appear displaced, however, the presence of exterior steps on the western side of the wall fragments suggests that the general orientation has been preserved.



Figure C24j) Old Road gun platform, May 1999

The stone work present mirrors that seen at other Johnson built, 1705, forts (e.g. Cotton Tree, Mathew's fort) with the largest section of wall showing an angle which exactly matches the front angled wall shown in Governor Johnson's plan of Old Road/Katherine's fort from 1705 (Fig. C24m).

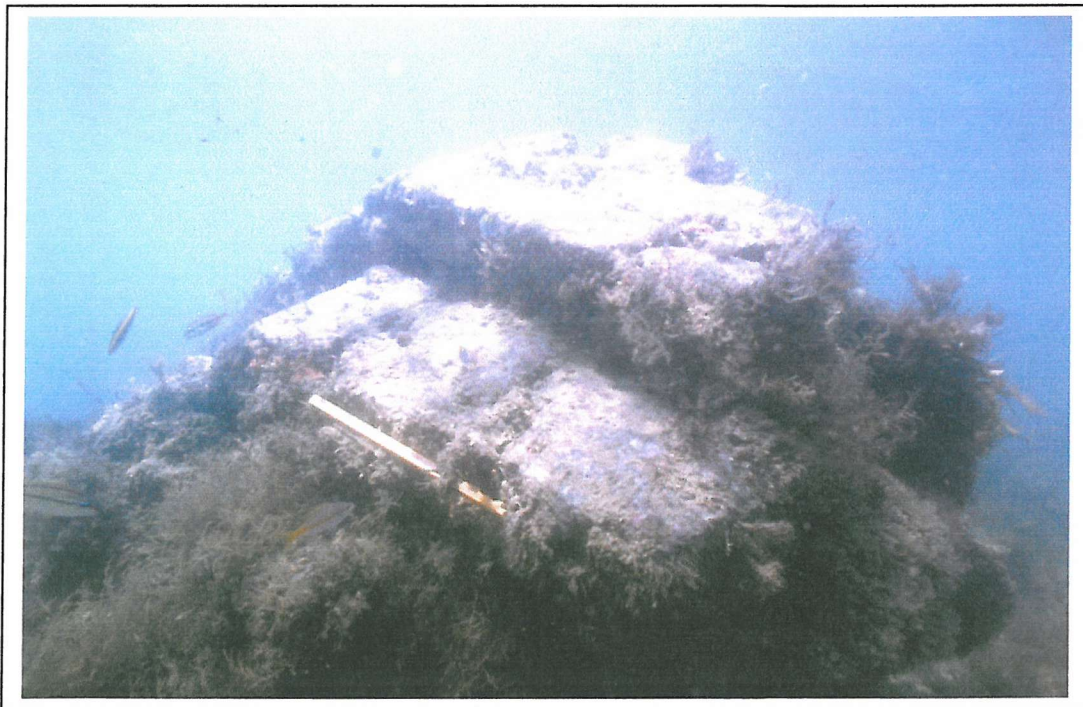


Figure C24k) Exterior step on angled wall section (Photo: K. Keithley).

Unfortunately in October 2000, this site was buried in sand during the reinstatement of the beach at the Four Seasons Resort (Fig. C24n). It is uncertain whether the fort survived this process. Three of the cannon were moved further out to sea, next to a breakwater, to provide objects of interest for the Resort's

diving trail. The Onshore Building was retained by the hotel as a 'feature' and was being used as a repository for umbrellas in December 2000 (Fig. C24o).

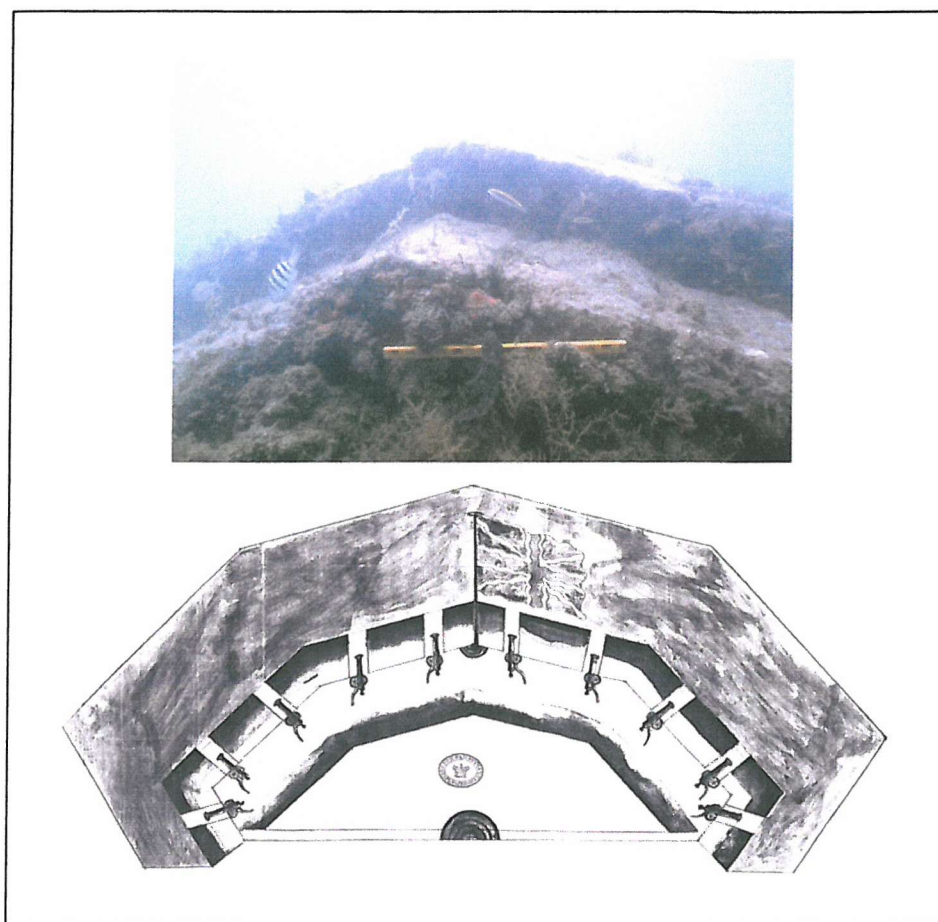


Figure C24l) Old Road Fort, May 2000: The angled wall shown on Johnson's fort plan of 1705 (bottom) can clearly be seen in the photograph (Photo: K. Keithley).



Figure C24m) Four Seasons beach reinstatement, October 2000: Old Road Fort is under the far pile of sand.

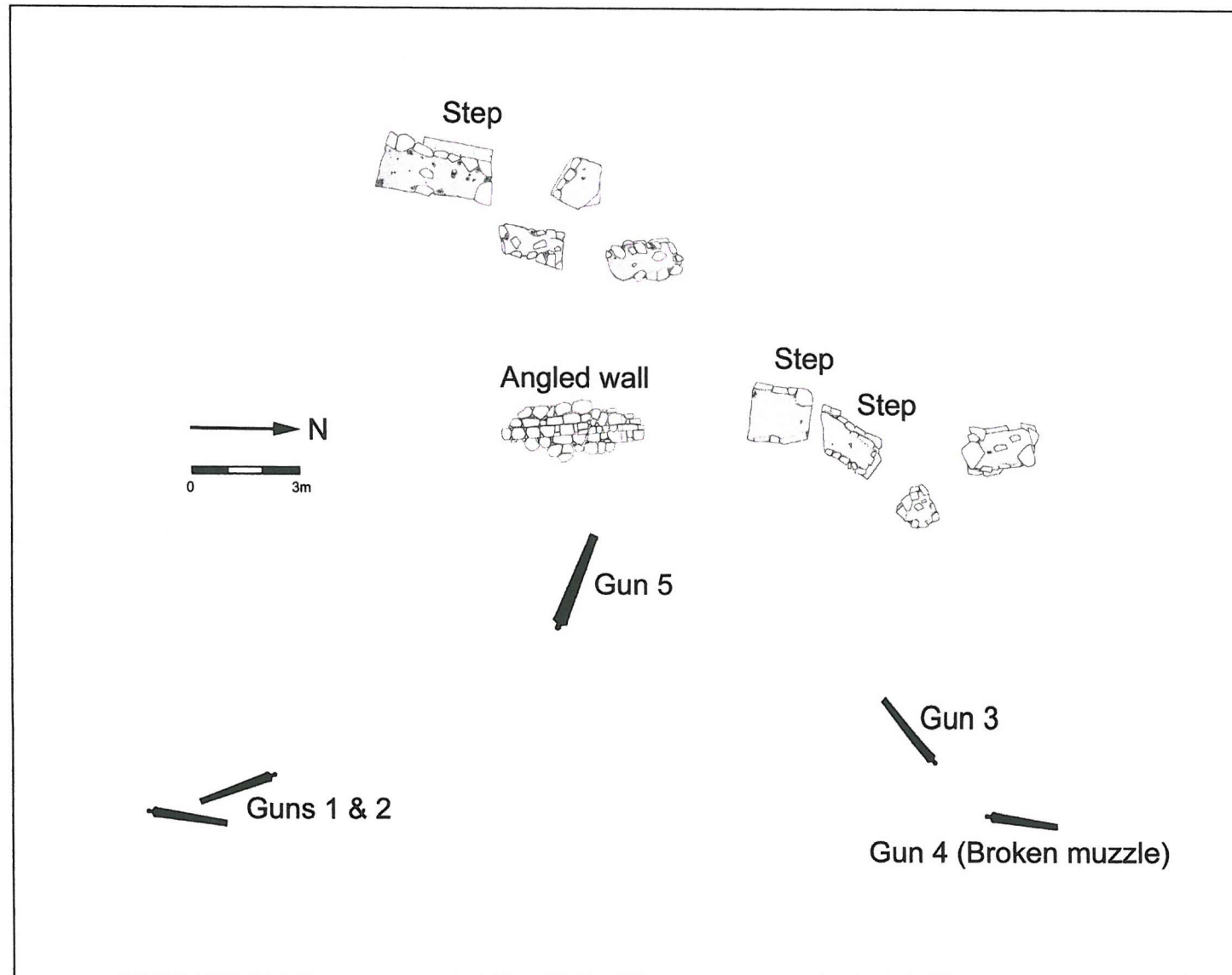


Figure C24n) Plan of the underwater remains, May 2000 (From plans and measurements taken by J. Adams, R Bangerter & K. Keithley).



Figure C24o) The Onshore Building, December 2000 (Photo: E. Morris).

C 24.9 Artefactual evidence:

Five cannon were located on the site, lying within the confines of the fort, i.e. to the east of the wall sections. At least one (Gun 4) had the muzzle blown off, the four others appearing to have lost either one or both trunnions (Fig. C24p).

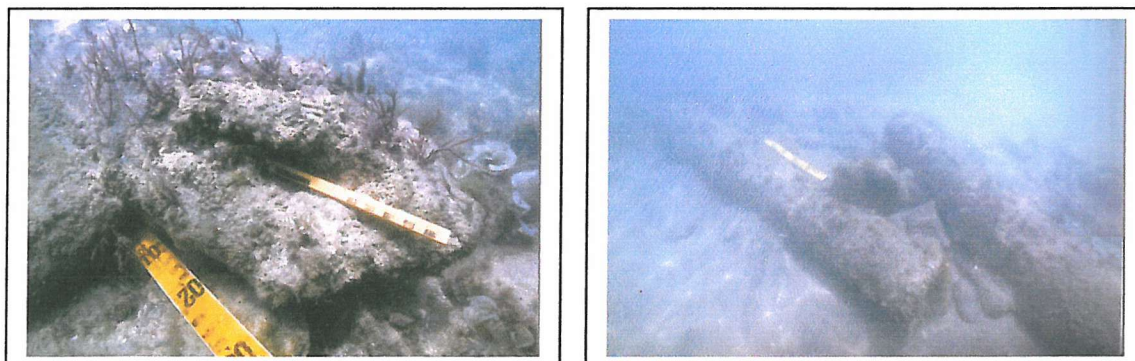


Figure C24p) Examples of Old Road cannon: Left Gun 4 with broken muzzle, Right Guns 1 & 2 (Photo: K. Keithley).

Charles Trollope has identified these cannon, as follows (Trollope 2000). Guns 1 & 2 both appear to date from the 1660s, although in the absence of further information, little more could be said about them. However, it does appear that both cannon have lost their trunnions. Gun 3, has been identified as a probable demi-culverin of an early 1600s date. Gun 3 appears to have only one trunnion. Gun 4, which has a broken muzzle, would seem to be a saker or culverin made by Browne in the 1660s. Gun 5, which appears to have

lost both its trunnions, has been identified as a Swedish Finbanker 12/18lber, which would have been manufactured prior to 1670.

In the 1980s a boat ran aground in front of the Four Seasons Resort and, in the process of freeing the vessel, a cannon was dredged from the water. This cannon was a 6lber or 9lber Swedish Finbanker of 7'6" in length. The cannon appears to be of late 17th/early 18th century date. It is almost certain that this cannon came from the fort and would appear to be of a similar date and type to Gun 5. This cannon was removed from the site and now lies in an antique display close to Hermitage Inn (Hubbard 2000). Several pieces of early 18th century bottle glass were also located within the rubble spread, although all were left in situ.

C 24.10 Discussion:

This fort, first built in the mid to late 17th century continued in use, albeit drastically reduced, until the late 18th century. The angle of the corner on a section of wall found underwater exactly matches the angle shown in Johnson's plans of Katherine's Fort from 1705 (Fig. 24I), and it is probable that this section represents the front of the platform which has fallen to the east over time.

Built to a similar design and construction technique (i.e. similar stonework with an exterior step on the front of the platform) to Mathew's fort to the south, this fort almost certainly dates to 1705. The late 17th century date of the cannon located on the site would support such a theory.

It is probable that during the French attack, this fort was heavily damaged, with the cannon being disabled by the French invaders. This would explain why they were left on the site and it is probable that these cannon represent the complement of arms present at the fort in March 1706. The early 17th century date of Gun 3 may reflect the earlier fortification history of this site. Like Cotton Tree fort, the absence of any later cannon would suggest that the fort was largely abandoned after the French attack.

In 1777, three new batteries were built on the Nevis coast. The construction technique of the onshore building can be paralleled with other late 18th century examples and it is therefore possible that the onshore building represents an element of one of these batteries, although this cannot be proved with certainty.

C 25 In the spur to the south of the Magazine Pond (between Old Road Fort and the spur to the north of Magazine Pond)

C 25.1 Notes:

This gun emplacement, located within the coastal entrenchments, is only referred to in one document from 1701.

C 25.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (to the north of Old Road and to the south of Cotton Tree Fort)

C 25.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'In the spur to the south of the Magazine Pond, one saker gun well mounted'.

C 25.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 25.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'In the spur to the south of the Magazine Pond, one saker gun well mounted'.

C 25.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 25.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 25.8 Archaeological evidence: N/A

C 25.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 25.10 Discussion:

This emplacement could not be archaeologically located. It is likely, as a probable timber and turf structure, that any remains have been destroyed. The entrenchments within this area have possibly been located (see Section C43.8.2), with a possible spur dog-legging east just to the north of Beachcombers bar. The lack of references to this emplacement would suggest that the structure was used only temporarily, and fell into disuse following the French attack in 1706.

C 26 In the spur to the north of the Magazine Pond (between the spur to the south of the Magazine Pond and the spur at the Cotton Tree)

C 26.1 Notes:

This gun emplacement, located within the coastal entrenchments, is only referred to in one document from 1701.

C 26.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (to the south of Cotton Tree and to the north of Old Road Fort)

C 26.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'In the spur to the north of the Magazine Pond, one saker gun pretty well mounted, one minion unmounted'.

C 26.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 26.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'In the spur to the north of the Magazine Pond, one saker gun pretty well mounted, one minion unmounted'.

C 26.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 26.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 26.8 Archaeological evidence: N/A

C 26.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 26.10 Discussion:

This emplacement could not be located, archaeologically, by the author. It is likely, as a probable timber and turf structure, that any remains have been destroyed. The entrenchments within this area are thought to have been located (see C43.8.2), with a possible spur shown as an eastward 'dog-leg'. The lack of references to this emplacement suggests that the structure was used only temporarily, and fell into disuse following the French attack in 1706.

C 27 *In the spur at the Cotton Tree (between the spur to the north of the Magazine Pond and the next spur to the north)*

C 27.1 Notes:

This gun emplacement, located within the coastal entrenchments, is only referred to in one document from 1701 and was almost certainly the forerunner of Cotton Tree/ St. Thomas' Fort.

C 27.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (possibly in the vicinity of Cotton Tree fort)

C 27.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'In the spur at the Cotton Tree, two saker guns, one well mounted the other indifferently, one minion unmounted'.

C 27.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 27.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'In the spur at the Cotton Tree, two saker guns, one well mounted the other indifferently, one minion unmounted'.

C 27.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 27.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 27.8 Archaeological evidence: N/A

C 27.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 27.10 Discussion:

This emplacement could not be located, archaeologically, by the author. It is likely, as a possible timber and turf structure, that any remains have been destroyed. It is probable that this emplacement was on the site of Cotton Tree/ St. Thomas' Fort and was replaced by this fort in c.1705.

C 28 Cotton Tree/St Thomas

C 28.1 Notes:

This fort was built, under the guidance of John Johnson, in 1704. Almost certainly heavily damaged during the French attack of 1706, the fort never appears to have had cannon after this date. By 1773, it is described as ruined.

C 28.2 Grid ref.: W 62° 37' 47", N 17° 09' 53"

C 28.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P 5):

‘Battery of seven cannon’ shown (Fig. C1c).

?1703 (NARCH): ‘Par Beauvilliers’ French Intelligence Map: ‘Battery of seven cannon’ shown (Fig. C1d).

22/3/1704 (PRO CO154/5): In six to eight weeks time the fort work will be finished. ‘Negroes to go to the Cotton Tree near Magazeen Pond to continue work there until they finish it’.

19/6/1704 (PRO CO154/5): John Johnson to the Council and Assembly of Nevis: ‘The new fortifications at the Cotton Tree now in hand lying soe farr distant from those places where tarries and stones are to be get and for that many persons that ought to send negroes have not...obliges me...to the passing an order that one half of dutiable negroes may be sent to the works to carry tarris and stone for six days...then all may be finished in about a month’.

c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): ‘A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty’s island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty’s Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereigne lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep’: ‘St. Thomas’ made to hold twelve guns, with six 6lbers [no stores of any kind]’.

15/9/1705 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1704-5, 1344): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: ‘I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair’d by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac’t...H. A platform erected by me called by the name of St. Thomas’ usually called the Cotton Tree, it’s the same dimensions as Katherine’s Fort, this with the three before (Katherine’s, Mathew’s and Johnson’s) defends the bay to each and every of them there is guardhouses and all other matters equivalent...The ambusers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without’.

15/9/1705 (PRO CO700 ST.CHRISTOPHER AND NEVIS/2): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: Johnson’s fort plans show a five sided battery with thirteen embrasures (Fig. C28a). The fort measures c.45 yards by 18 yards. A guardhouse is shown within. A step up to the platform is shown within the battery. The walls are 3½ yards thick and the platform 6 yards wide. Around

the front of the fort, a 9 yards wide ditch is shown. A step 'entrance' can be seen on the eastern side.

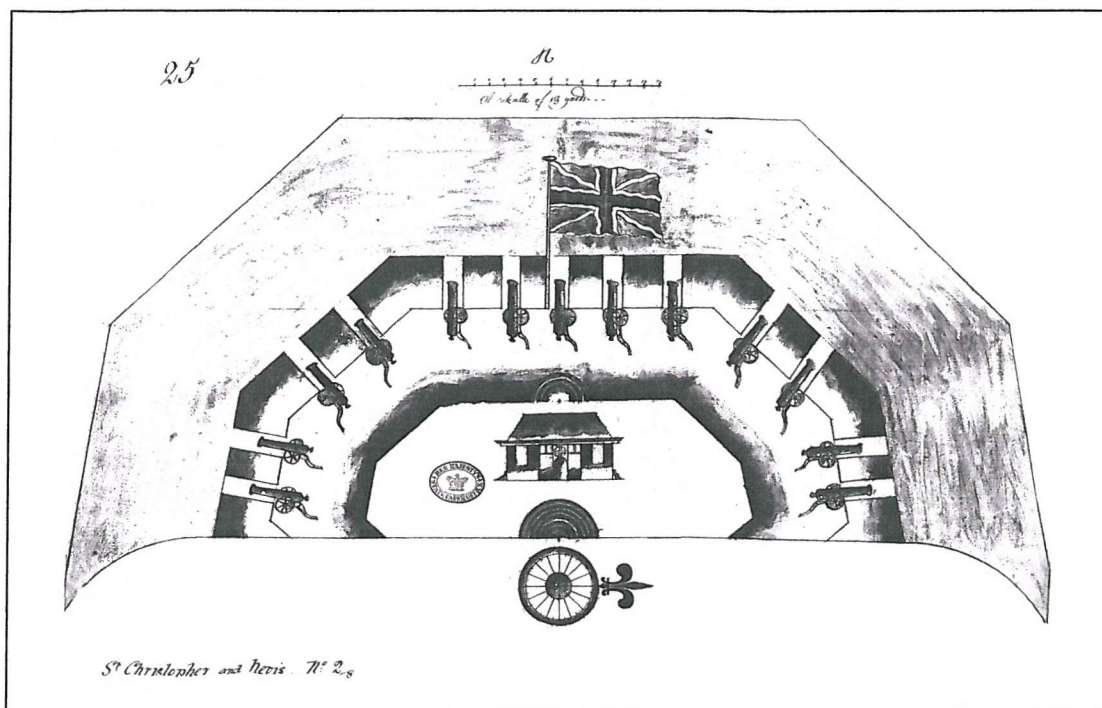


Figure C28a) Governor Johnson's plan of St. Thomas', Cotton Tree Fort, 1705

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'An accompt of what new forts wee have lately built and where, what old ones repaired and the changes wee have beene at to doe the same': 'At the Cotton Tree between Old Road and Cole's Point a new ffort not yet finished. A guardhouse, platforme and cisterne of stone and lime £1750. Good guns extremely wanted for this ffort'.

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis: 'An account of the proceeding of the French fleet against Nevis February 1706': The French comprised '...in all thirty six sayle'. On 7/2/1706 at night the French '...sounded in their boates the depth of water all along the greate bay from Black Rock to Cole's Point still keeping without gun shott'. On 8/2/1706 '...about break of day the enemy with two ships of warr came within shott and fired their broadsides against the fforts and trenches between the Old Road and the ffort at Cole's Point. Wee having lately made a ffort at the Cotton Tree in the midway between the two former all which three fforts kept constantly firing at them and was believed and since confirmed by some deserters did them considerable damage in their hulls and rigging (and as is credibly reported killed their vice admiral and eight men) but thanks to God wee received no losses at all'.

19/3/1706 (PRO CO153/9): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...H. A platform erected by me called by the name of St. Thomas' usually called the Cotton Tree, it's the same dimensions as Katherine's Fort, this with the three before (Katherine's, Mathew's and Johnson's) defends the bay to each and every of them there is guardhouses and all

other matters equivalent...The ambusers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without’.

15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: ‘An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores’: ‘Cotton Tree Fort has nothing’.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: ‘...then is Cotton Tree fort, but no cannon on it’.

1758 (NARCH) ‘Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin’: ‘Battery of seven pieces’ is described and shown at position F (Fig. C1f). This map appears to be a copy of the earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.

1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): ‘A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis’: ‘Near a little still further northwardly [from Old Road] is the ruins of another battery with no cannon on it fit for service’.

20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): ‘A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis’: ‘Near a little still further northwardly [from Old Road] is the ruins of another battery with no cannon on it fit for service’.

C 28.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 28.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P 5): ‘Battery of seven cannon’ shown (Fig. C1c).

?1703 (NARCH): ‘Par Beauvilliers’ French Intelligence Map: ‘Battery of seven cannon’ shown (Fig. C1d).

c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): ‘A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty’s island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty’s Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereigne lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep’: ‘St. Thomas’ made to hold twelve guns, with six 6lbers [no stores of any kind]’.

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: ‘An accompt of what new forts wee have lately built and where, what old ones repaired and the changes wee have beene at to doe the same’: ‘At the Cotton Tree between Old Road and Cole’s Point a new ffort not yet finished. A guardhouse, platforme and cisterne of stone and lime £1750. Good guns extremely wanted for this ffort’.

15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: ‘An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores’: ‘Cotton Tree Fort has nothing’.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: ‘...then is Cotton Tree fort, but no cannon on it’.

1758 (NARCH) ‘Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin’: ‘Battery of seven pieces’ shown at position F (Fig. C1f). This map appears to be a copy of the

earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.

1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'Near a little still further northwardly [from Old Road] is the ruins of another battery with no cannon on it fit for service'.

20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'Near a little still further northwardly [from Old Road] is the ruins of another battery with no cannon on it fit for service'.

C 28.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 28.7 The fort at war:

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis: 'An account of the proceeding of the French fleet against Nevis February 1706': The French comprised '...in all thirty six sayle'. On 7/2/1706 at night the French '...sounded in their boates the depth of water all along the greate bay from Black Rock to Cole's Point still keeping without gun shott'. On 8/2/1706 '...about break of day the enemy with two ships of warr came within shott and fired their broadsides against the fforts and trenches between the Old Road and the ffort at Cole's Point. Wee having lately made a ffort at the Cotton Tree in the midway between the two former all which three fforts kept constantly firing at them and was believed and since confirmed by some deserters did them considerable damage in their hulls and rigging (and as is credibly reported killed their vice admiral and eight men) but thanks to God wee received no losses at all'.

C 28.8 Archaeological evidence:

The site is located on Paradise Beach, just to the south of the road leading down to the sea beside St Thomas' School. The fort lies on a flat area between two elongated hills, created by volcanic flows, on the NE and SE (Fig. C28b). Although numerous large blocks of masonry are located on shore in the vicinity, these appear to have been deposited by hurricane seas and no on-land structures could be located at the site.

The gun platform lies c.40m out to sea and is evidenced by a rubble spread over an area of c.490m² (Fig. C28c). This site was examined by a team of divers from the Centre for Maritime Archaeology, University of Southampton, over a two day period, and a taped plan made of the remains (Fig. C28c). Underwater photography was also taken of the relevant features.

The remains comprise a rubble spread some 35m by 14m, orientating north to south and running parallel to the coast. Only one section of substantial masonry survives, standing to a height of approximately 1.5m, with the tip occasionally exposed above water. This masonry block appears to be lying on its side, having fallen westwards. The southern face (Fig. C28d) slopes north beneath the block, suggesting an apparently angled section of wall or corner such as that at Old Road Fort. Unfortunately, the angle of this corner could not be measured due to the position of the block.

This wall is faced with irregularly coursed stone blocks apparently with a mortar and rubble infill. Due to seaweed and the difficulty of access to the wall face, it is impossible to ascertain whether the outer face was mortared or not.

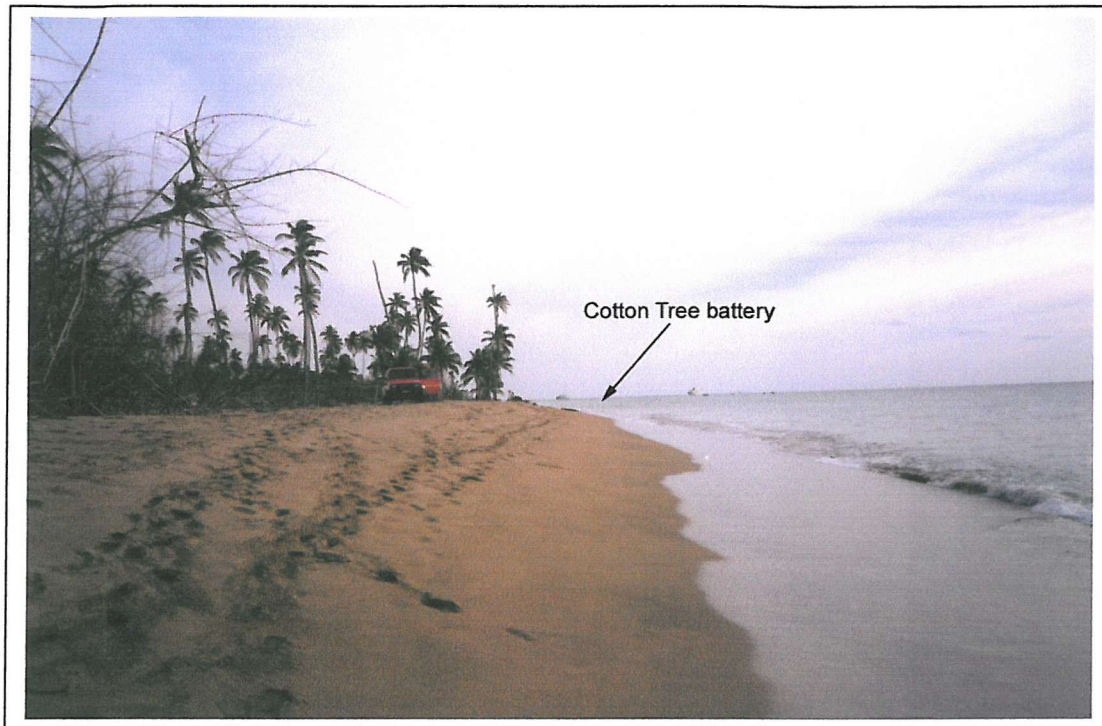


Figure C28b) Photo of Paradise Beach with location of Cotton Tree battery

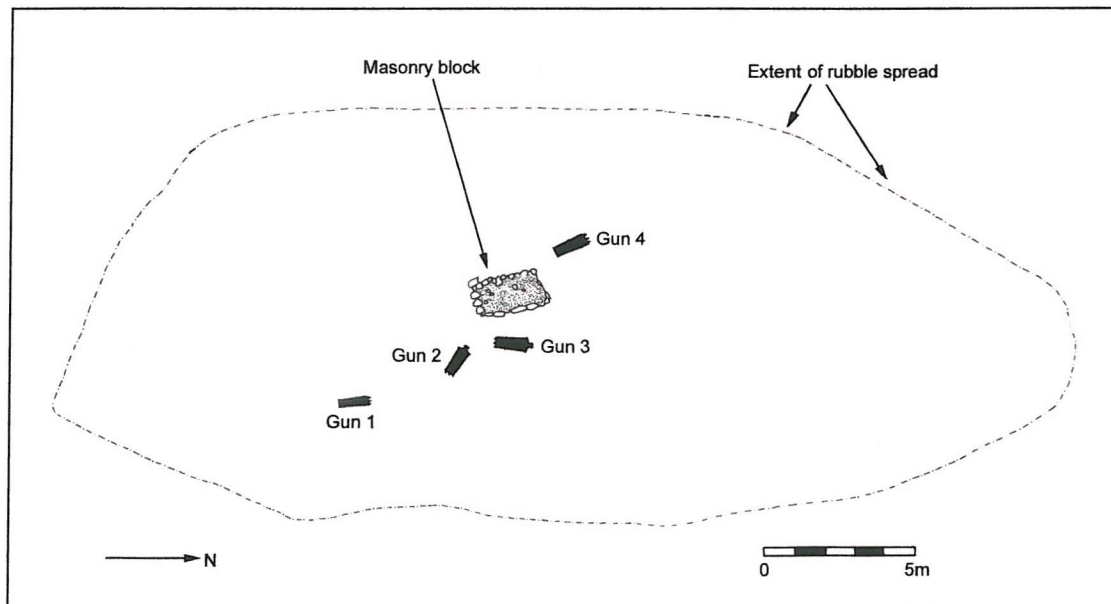


Figure C28c) Site plan of Cotton Tree battery

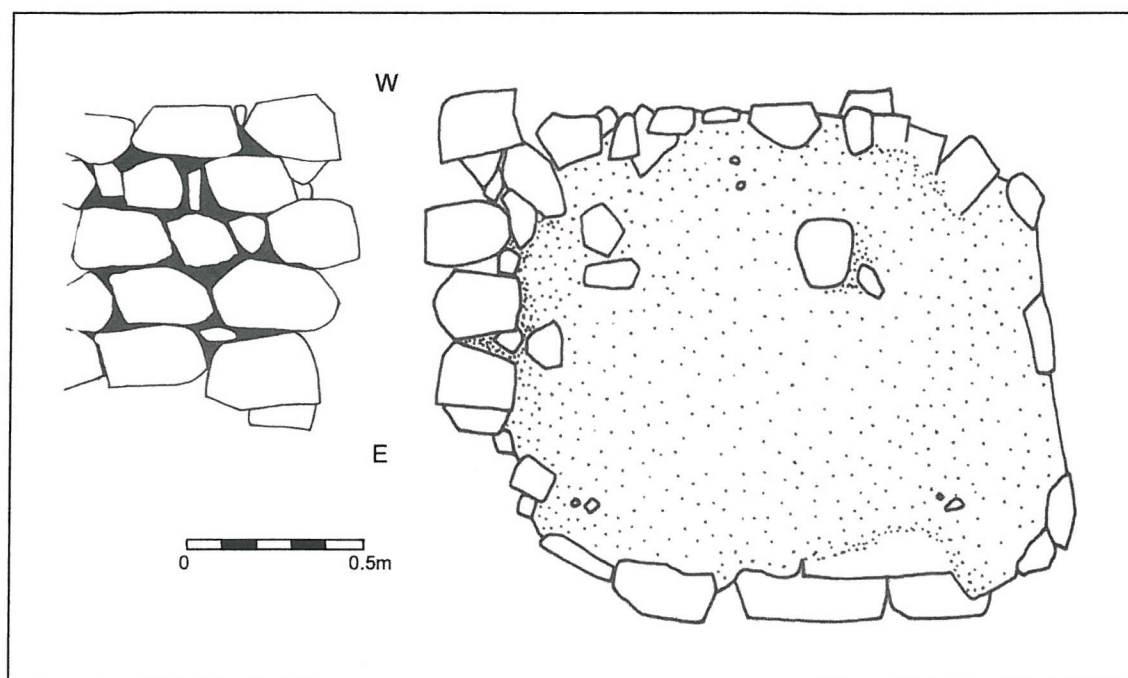


Figure C28d) Detail of masonry block, in elevation (left) and in plan (right)

C 28.9 Artefactual evidence:

Around the masonry block, four sections of cannon were located comprising two cascabel ends and two muzzles (Fig. C28e). The identification of these guns would suggest that the remains of at least three cannon were present on the site. All the cannon appeared 'snapped in half', with the apparent absence of at least two other halves, suggesting the presence of more, possibly buried, fragments in the vicinity.

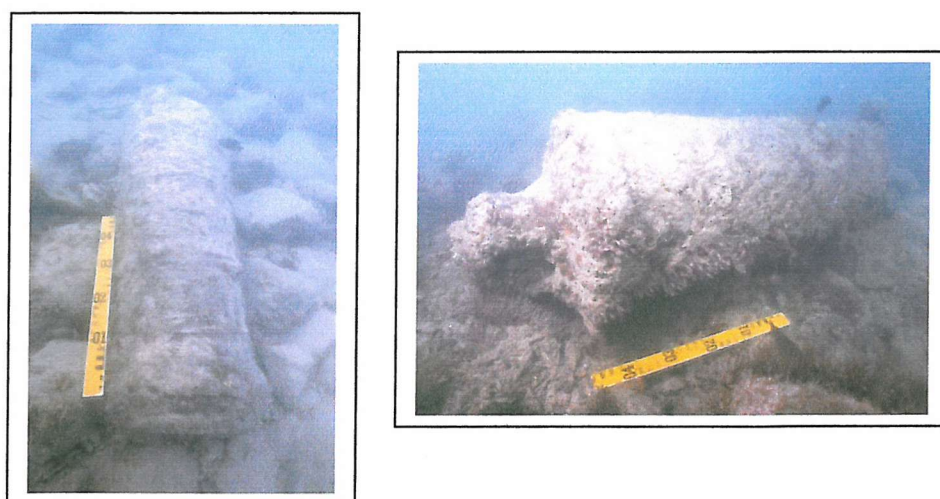


Figure C28e) Gun 4 muzzle (left) and gun 2 cascabel (right), Cotton Tree Fort.

Charles Trollope has identified the cannon, as follows (Trollope 2000). Gun 1 comprises a muzzle with attached trunnion. This gun, due to its accretions could not be closely identified, although a date prior to 1720 is likely. Gun 2, a cascabel end, has been identified as a probable 1660s cannon manufactured by

Browne. Gun 3, another cascabel end, would appear to date from the 1660s. Gun 4, another muzzle, would appear also to have come from a Browne gun, and may possibly represent the other half of gun 2.

C 28.10 Discussion:

Although a gun emplacement was almost certainly on this site from 1701, Cotton Tree Fort appears to have been built new in 1704/5. This fort, like Old Road, seems to have been constructed as a polygonal shaped gun platform. The dimensions, from Johnson's 1705 plan (Fig C28a), were 45 yards from north to south and 18 yards from east to west. These dimensions almost exactly match the dimensions of the rubble spread now visible. By comparison with Johnson's plans of 1705, it would appear that this fort was Cotton Tree/St. Thomas'.

It is difficult to establish how the fort became so severely ruined, although hurricane seas have obviously played a large part in the destruction over the years. However, Old Road fort to the south does not appear to have sustained as much damage as Cotton Tree and the almost entire absence of masonry and the broken cannon, if taken in conjunction with historical information, may suggest a far more violent, answer.

It is possible that the fort was abandoned after being systematically destroyed by the French in 1706. This would explain the excessively ruinous state of the remains and the broken cannon, which have almost certainly been blocked and fired to destroy them. The dating of the cannon and the known historical fate of this fort would suggest that this destruction took place in 1706. By 1707, the battery is recorded as having no cannon and would appear to have been abandoned after this date. Similarly to Old Road fort, this theory is supported by the absence of any guns later than the early 18th century: had the fort continued in use after 1706, later guns would be expected. However, it is also possible that unstable ground beneath the fort may also be a factor in the fort's ruination. Without further work, either suggestion will be difficult to prove or disprove.

This fort is not under the immediate developmental threats faced by many of the other Pinney's Beach forts. However, there is talk of a new resort hotel being proposed in the vicinity of Cotton Tree Fort. Such a development would almost certainly damage, if not destroy, this fragile structure.

C 29 In the next spur to the north (between the spur at the Cotton Tree and before Robert Gibb's)

C 29.1 Notes:

This gun emplacement, located within the coastal entrenchments, is only referred to in one document from 1701.

C 29.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (to the north of Cotton Tree)

C 29.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'In the next spur to the north, one large minion gun well mounted'.

C 29.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 29.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'In the next spur to the north, one large minion gun well mounted'.

C 29.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 29.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 29.8 Archaeological evidence: N/A

C 29.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 29.10 Discussion:

This emplacement could not be located, archaeologically, by the author. It is likely, as a probable timber and turf structure, that any remains have been destroyed. The lack of references to this emplacement suggests that the structure was used only temporarily, and fell into disuse following the French attack in 1706.

C 30 Before Robert Gibb's (between the next spur to the north and Duke's Skonts)

C 30.1 Notes:

This gun emplacement, located within the coastal entrenchments, is only referred to in one document from 1701.

C 30.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (to the north of Cotton Tree)

C 30.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'Before Robert Gibb's, one saker gun very advantageously placed. It wants a carriage'.

C 30.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 30.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'Before Robert Gibb's, one saker gun very advantageously placed. It wants a carriage'.

C 30.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 30.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 30.8 Archaeological evidence: N/A

C 30.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 30.10 Discussion:

This emplacement could not be located, archaeologically, by the author. It is likely, as a probable timber and turf structure, that any remains have been destroyed. The lack of references to this emplacement suggests that the structure was used only temporarily, and fell into disuse following the French attack in 1706.

C 31 Duke's Skonts/Duke's Sconce/Abbott's /Cole's Point

C 31.1 Notes:

This fort was built in the late 17th century and was named Duke's Sconce. It then seems to have either been repaired or re-located by Johnson in 1705 and renamed Abbott's Fort/Cole's Point. By 1707, Abbott's Fort had no cannon and by 1727, was described as demolished.

C 31.2 Grid ref.: Building A: W 62° 37' 39", N 17° 10' 20"
Building B & C: W 62° 37' 41", N 17° 10' 13"

C 31.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

14/12/1672 (PRO CO1/29/161, CSP1669-1674, 987): 'The present state of the Leeward Islands' by Sir Charles Wheler: 'From Pellicans Point to Musketi Bay is all the leeward side of the island about five English mile in length, for the defence of which there are about thirty pieces of cannon mounted upon the platforms of Pellicans Point, the old rock, the old fort, Duke's Sconce, Morton's Bay and if I had stayed I would have raised one at Musketi Bay it being the best landing of the leeward side especially from St. Christopher...In the time of the warr the inhabitants did by the hands of their slaves run a line all along the coast, but I had persuaded them to make little redoubts, shut up as well to the land as to the sea that they might doe with the same expense of hands as their long line, because their line being very slight and without a trench (for I saw the ruins of it) an enemy would passe it anywhere which would endanger the losse of ye island, in regard their men were extended five mile in length and that an enemy might be landing at ye same time all along; but since my coming away I think they are distracted from it and will runne their slight line without any fastness except that of Pellican Point, by reason it is on high land, in a kinde of promontary all the other platformes being open'.

10/5/1676 (PRO CO153/2): 'An Account of the Caribbee Islands' by Thomas Warner: 'Nevis: Fort at Morton's Bay with five guns, Duke's Sconce with four guns, Old Road fort with nine guns, Black Rock fort with five guns, A platform at Charles Town with three guns, Pelican Point fort with seven guns'.

22/11/1676 (PRO CO1/38/152, CSP1675-6, 1152): Answers to enquiries about Leeward Islands by William Stapleton: 'There are neither fforts nor castles in any part of my government which may properly deserve that denomination, but such as are called soe and are but platformes...Duke's Sconce: two 9lbers, one 8lber, two 6lbers, thirty 8lb shot, thirty 9lb shot, five 2lb shot; powder ½ barrill or thereabouts'.

1687 (BL Sloane 45/35): William Hack: 'A chart of the west end of Nevis and part of St. Christopher, originally described by Mr. John Jenifer, drawn in 1687 by William Hack' (Fig. C1a): Unnamed fort with five cannon shown at position 6.

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'In Duke's Skonts two good guns, but ill mounted'.

?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P 5):

French Intelligence Map: 'Battery of three cannon' shown (Fig. C1c).

?1703 (NARCH): 'Par Beauvilliers' French Intelligence Map: 'Battery of three cannon' shown (Fig. C1d).

c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): 'A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty's island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty's Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereign lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep': 'Cole's Point Fort made to hold eight guns, with three guns viz. one 12lber, one 9lber, one 6lber, eight 12lb shot, fourteen 9lb shot'.

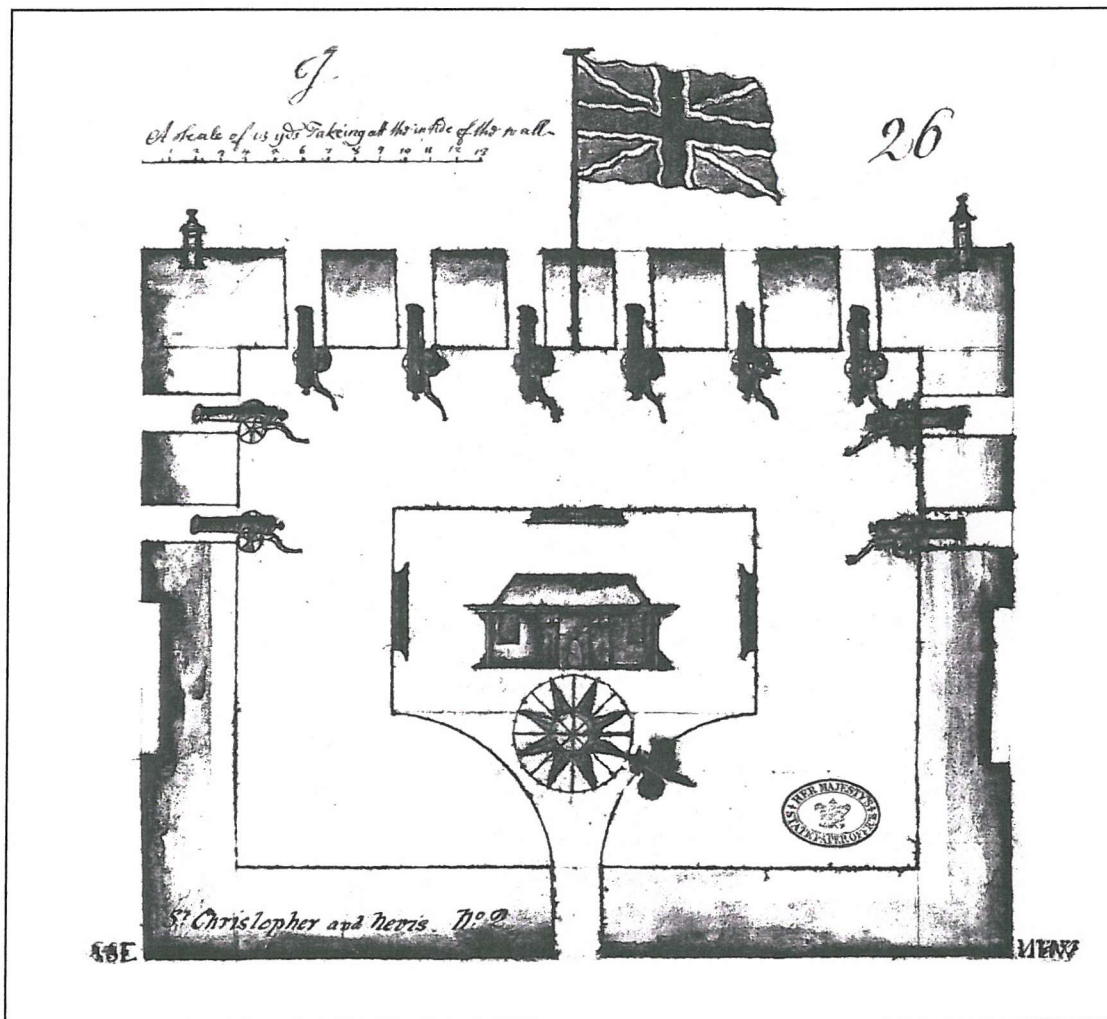


Figure C31a) Governor Johnson's plan of Abbott's Fort, 1705

15/9/1705 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1704-5, 1344): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...I. A platform repaired by me called Abbott's Fort usually known by ye name of Cole's Point the wall fifteen foot broad and six foot high which point and St. Paul's fort makes a bay wherein the last four platforms lye, the reason the wall is noe higher is its standing on

a clift and the thickness of it is that vessels may ride just before it...The ambusers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without’.

15/9/1705 (PRO CO700 ST.CHRISTOPHER AND NEVIS/2): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: Johnson’s fort plans show a rectangular redoubt type structure with ten embrasures and a guardhouse within (Fig. C31a). The wall of the fort is 4 yards thick and the platform 6 yards wide. The dimensions of the fort are c.33 yards by 27 yards. A gateway entrance is shown on the eastern side.

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: ‘An accompt of what new forts wee have lately built and where, what old ones repaired and the changes wee have beene at to doe the same’: ‘Cole’s Point ffort lately repaired £429.16.8’.

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis: ‘An account of the proceeding of the French fleet against Nevis February 1706’: The French comprised ‘...in all thirty six sayle’. On 7/2/1706 at night the French ‘...sounded in their boates the depth of water all along the greate bay from Black Rock to Cole’s Point still keeping without gun shott’. On 8/2/1706 ‘...about break of day the enemy with two ships of warr came within shott and fired their broadsides against the fforts and trenches between the Old Road and the ffort at Cole’s Point. Wee having lately made a ffort at the Cotton Tree in the midway between the two former all which three fforts kept constantly firing at them and was believed and since confirmed by some deserters did them considerable damage in their hulls and rigging (and as is credibly reported killed their vice admiral and eight men) but thanks to God wee received no losses at all’.

19/3/1706 (PRO CO153/9): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: ‘I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair’d by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac’t...I. A platform repaired by me called Abbott’s Fort usually known by ye name of Cole’s Point the wall fifteen foot broad and six foot high which point and St. Paul’s fort makes a bay wherein the last four platforms lye, the reason the wall is noe higher is its standing on a clift and the thickness of it is that vessels may ride just before it...The ambusers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without’.

15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: ‘An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores’: ‘Cole’s Poynt fort has nothing’.

3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): ‘An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island’: ‘Cole’s Point demolished with no cannon’.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: ‘...Cole’s Point Fort where is a dismounted gun bury’d in the earth of the rampart’.

1758 (NARCH) ‘Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin’: ‘Battery of three pieces’ shown at position E (Fig. C1a). This map appears to be a copy of the earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.

C 31.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

- 14/12/1672 (PRO CO1/29/161, CSP1669-1674, 987): 'The present state of the Leeward Islands' by Sir Charles Wheler: 'From Pellicans Point to Musketi Bay is all the leeward side of the island about five English mile in length, for the defence of which there are about thirty pieces of cannon mounted upon the platforms of Pellicans Point, the old rock, the old fort, Duke's Sconce, Morton's Bay and if I had stayed I would have raised one at Musketi Bay it being the best landing of the leeward side especially from St. Christopher...In the time of the warr the inhabitants did by the hands of their slaves run a line all along the coast, but I had persuaded them to make little redoubts, shut up as well to the land as to the sea that they might doe with the same expense of hands as their long line, because their line being very slight and without a trench (for I saw the ruins of it) an enemy would passe it anywhere which would endanger the losse of ye island, in regard their men were extended five mile in length and that an enemy might be landing at ye same time all along; but since my coming away I think they are distracted from it and will runne their slight line without any fastness except that of Pellican Point, by reason it is on high land, in a kinde of promontary all the other platformes being open'.
- 10/5/1676 (PRO CO153/2): 'An Account of the Caribbee Islands' by Thomas Warner: 'Nevis: Fort at Morton's Bay with five guns, Duke's Sconce with four guns, Old Road fort with nine guns, Black Rock fort with five guns, A platform at Charles Town with three guns, Pelican Point fort with seven guns'.
- 22/11/1676 (PRO CO1/38/152, CSP1675-6, 1152): Answers to enquiries about Leeward Islands by William Stapleton: 'There are neither fforts nor castles in any part of my government which may properly deserve that denomination, but such as are called soe and are but platformes...Duke's Sconce: two 9lbers, one 8lber, two 6lbers, thirty 8lb shot, thirty 9lb shot, five 2lb shot; powder ½ barrill or thereabouts'.
- 1687 (BL Sloane 45/35): William Hack: 'A chart of the west end of Nevis and part of St. Christopher, originally described by Mr. John Jenifer, drawn in 1687 by William Hack' (Fig. C1a): Unnamed fort with five cannon shown at position 6.
- 25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'In Duke's Skonts two good guns, but ill mounted'.
- ?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P 5): 'Battery of three cannon' shown (Fig. C1c).
- ?1703 (NARCH): 'Par Beauvilliers' French Intelligence Map: 'Battery of three cannon' shown (Fig. C1d).
- c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): 'A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty's island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty's Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereigne lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep': 'Cole's Point Fort made to hold eight guns, with three guns viz. one 12lber, one 9lber, one 6lber, eight 12lb shot, fourteen 9lb shot'.

15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: 'An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores': 'Cole's Poynt fort has nothing'.

3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): 'An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island': 'Cole's Point demolished with no cannon'.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...Cole's Point Fort where is a dismounted gun bury'd in the earth of the rampart'.

1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin': 'Battery of three pieces' shown at position E (Fig. C1f). This map appears to be a copy of the earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.

C 31.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 31.7 The fort at war:

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis: 'An account of the proceeding of the French fleet against Nevis February 1706': The French comprised '...in all thirty six sayle'. On 7/2/1706 at night the French '...sounded in their boates the depth of water all along the greate bay from Black Rock to Cole's Point still keeping without gun shott'. On 8/2/1706 '...about break of day the enemy with two ships of warr came within shott and fired their broadsides against the fforts and trenches between the Old Road and the ffort at Cole's Point. Wee having lately made a ffort at the Cotton Tree in the midway between the two former all which three fforts kept constantly firing at them and was believed and since confirmed by some deserters did them considerable damage in their hulls and rigging (and as is credibly reported killed their vice admiral and eight men) but thanks to God wee received no losses at all'.

C 31.8 Archaeological evidence:

The survey area examined at Cotton Ground extends along a low cliff for a length of c.375m from the ravine to the north-east of St. Thomas' church to the southern boundary of the Montpelier Beach Property.

Two/three buildings and a series of linear earthworks (Fig. C31c & Section C43.8.3) were surveyed, drawn and photographed. Cliff section drawings were also made where appropriate.

This cliff is rapidly eroding with at least 1-2m being lost between the walkover surveys of May 1999 and February 2000. From comparison with a series of OS 1:2,500 maps, between 25-75m of cliff has eroded between 1984 and 2000, an average rate of 1.8-5.4m per year (Fig. C31c).

From the walkover survey in May 1999 and February 2000, two/three sunken buildings had been identified. The first, Building A, is situated c.5m back from the coast, just 15m to the south of the Montpelier fence line. The other one/two buildings (Buildings B and C) are located at the centre of the examined area, c.200m to the south of Building A (Figs. C31d, C31h & C43d).



Figure C31b) Photo of Building A, looking north (scale 0.5m)

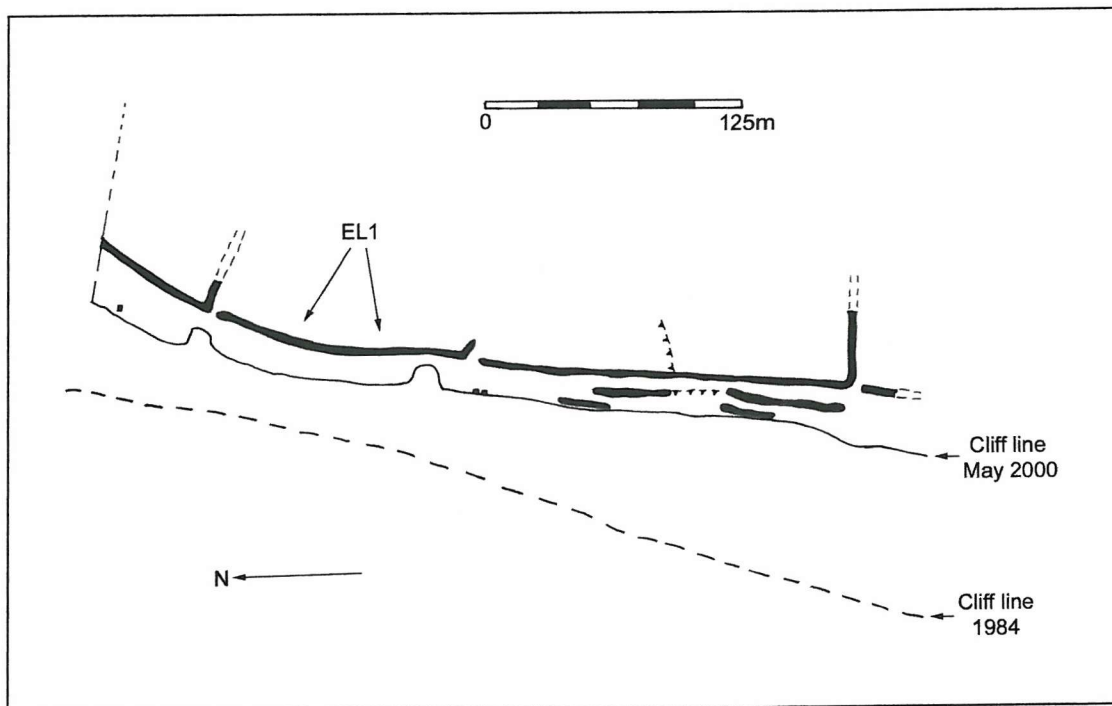


Figure C31c) Plan of earthworks at Cotton Ground with cliff lines 1984 and 2000 (From measurements made by A. Crosby & P. Bellamy)

C 31.8.2 The Buildings

Prior to excavation, Building A comprised three visible walls, with the presence of rubble attesting a possible fourth, western wall (Fig. C31b). The incomplete, northern wall runs for a distance of c.3m where it connects with the eastern wall, which measures 2.6m on the inner face. The exterior measurement is c.4m. The southern wall is obscured by overburden and could only be traced for c.1m. Within the walls, the interior drops to a depth of c.1m and is infilled with large stone rubble and vegetation. A slight bank occurs around the structure. On the interior of the walls, evidence of lime plaster facing can be seen.

Building A was trial trenched (Fig. C31e & C31f) to establish the nature of construction of the building and to retrieve dating evidence. Excavation on the site comprised two small trenches. Trench 1 was cut across the northern wall and Trench 2 cut across the south-east corner of the building.

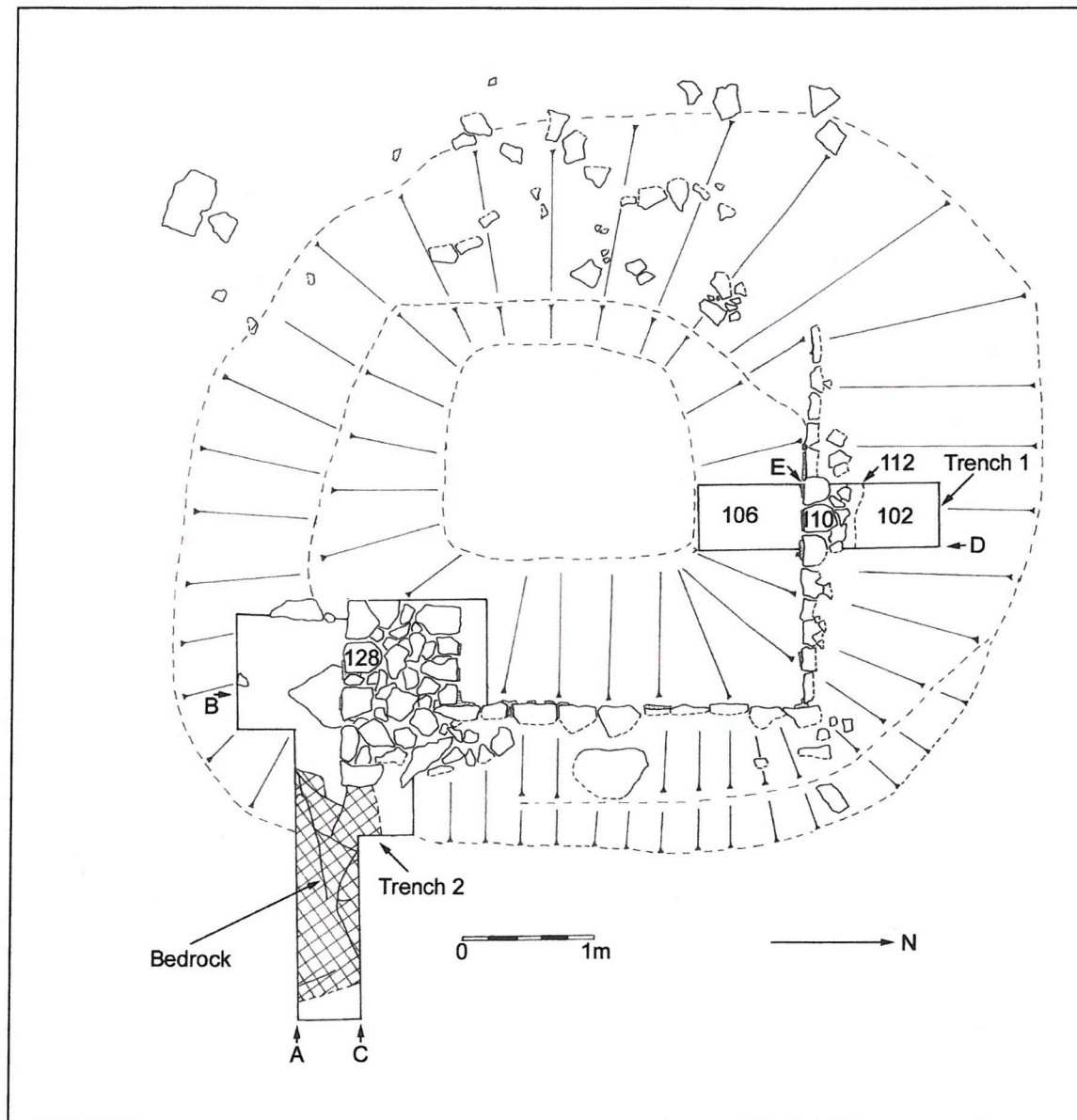


Figure C31d) Site plan of Building A (From plans and measurements made by T. Machling, A. Crosby & P. Bellamy)

Trench 1: This trench (1.8m x 0.5m) was dug to a depth of 1.15m on the south side of the northern wall and to a depth of 0.8m-1m on the northern side (Fig. C31e). The wall proved to be a dry stone

construction of coursed rubble. The wall proved to be only 0.3m thick with the interior surface built with large (c.30-40cm) faced stone blocks whilst the exterior surface was made of smaller (c.10-20cm) rougher stones. The entire depth of wall appears to have been plastered on the interior face, to c.1m below current ground level, further suggesting intentional building as a below ground structure. The exterior face, however, appears to have been roughly constructed and remained unfaced.

To the north of the wall, below topsoil, a thick layer (c.35cm) of compact rubbly fill (Context 101) was located. This fill is thought by the excavators to have been placed directly against the exterior of the wall. However, it is also possible that Context 101 represents the material excavated to provide the hole for the building, which was then straightened, and the northern wall built onto the face of this dump material. This material would have thus made the building even deeper below ground level and, if the structure is interpreted as a magazine, would have provided greater protection to the building. Either way would allow for a slighter wall than that necessary on the southern side of the building.

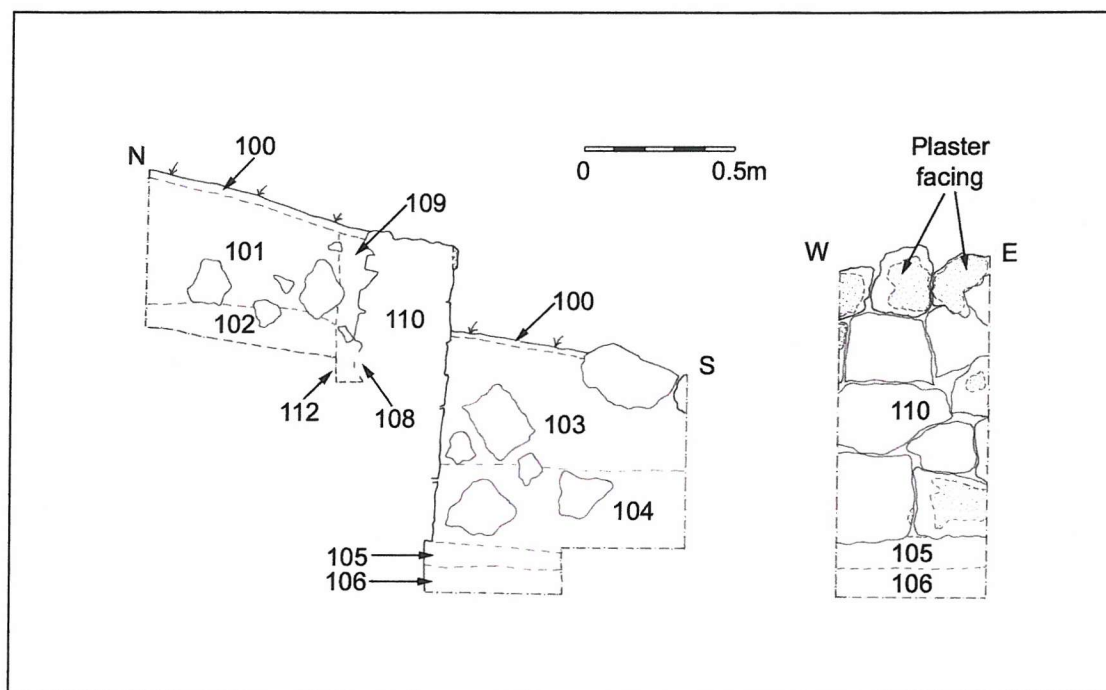


Figure C31e) West and south facing sections in Trench 1 (From sections and measurements made by A. Crosby & P. Bellamy)

The presence of Context 109 would suggest the wall leaned south, away from the dump material, the gap being infilled with this context. It is also possible that this context represents the infilling of the void between context 101 and the wall after the wall's construction.

Within the building, a thick layer (c.35cm) of modern fill was located (Context 103) above a similar, but without modern finds, fill of rubble, lime plaster and soil (Context 104), representing the ongoing collapse and erosion of material into the structure over many years. Below these layers at the base of the wall, a thin layer of small stones and lime plaster (Context 105) was located, apparently representing a levelling fill, presumably below wooden planks. However, the presence of lime plaster and small stones and the greyish colour may suggest the fill represents a badly eroded mortar floor, like that visible in the sunken

'magazine' at Fort Codrington or within the Newcastle Redoubt. Below this layer, natural fragmentary rock was encountered. This evidence would suggest a floor level 1m below ground surface.

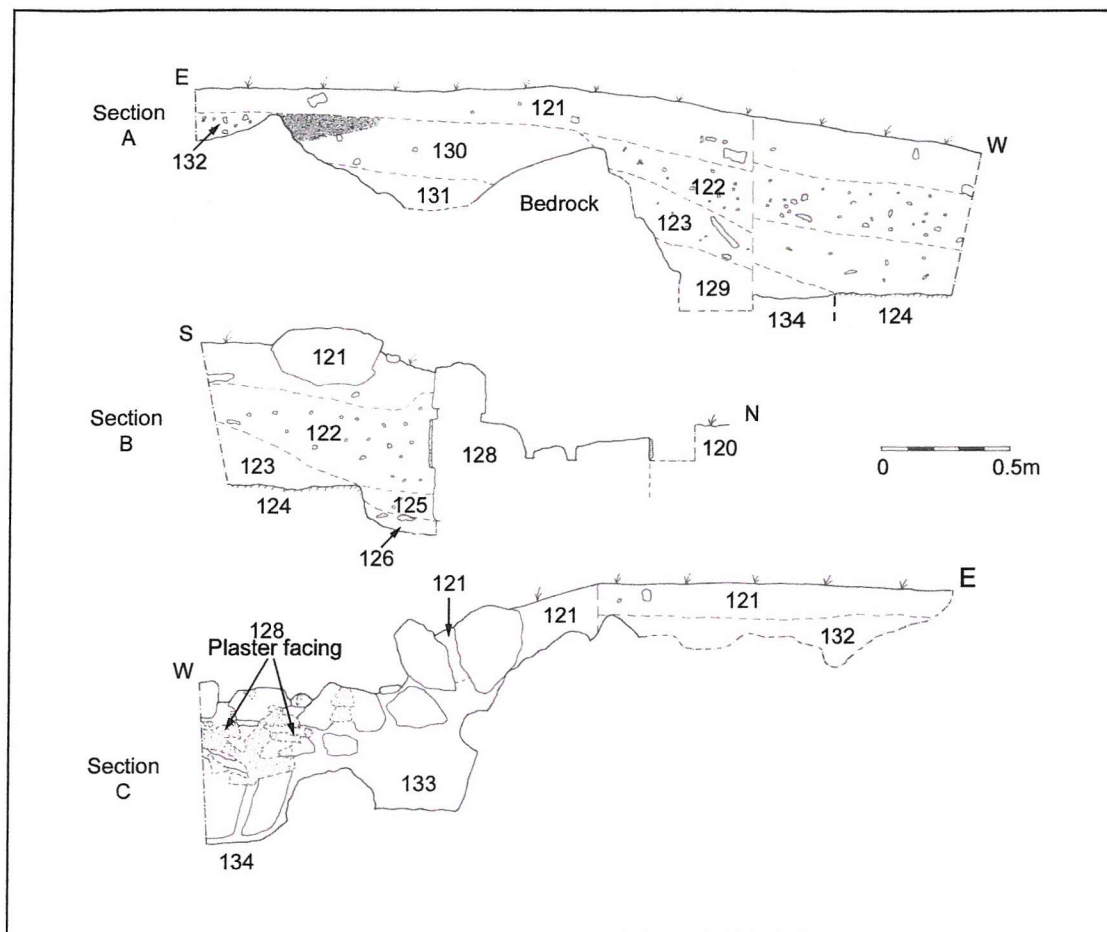


Figure C31f) North, east and south facing sections from Trench 2 (From sections and measurements made by A. Crosby & P. Bellamy)

Trench 2: This trench, originally 1m wide, extending south from the southern wall of Building A, was extended 1.1m to the east. This trench was dug to a maximum depth of 0.8m at the western end, to the south of the wall (Fig. C31f).

The southern wall proved to be 0.9m thick and constructed, on both the interior and exterior, of large (30-40cm) faced stones with a rubble infilled core. The eastern wall proved to be of slighter construction and was only 0.5m thick. At the eastern end of the trench a large natural bank was uncovered which appears to form the raised area to the east of Building A. This bank appears to have been utilized in a similar way to context 101, with the eastern wall being built into this bank, thus allowing a thinner wall than that to the south.

However, the western end of the trench was of a very different construction, with the wall showing evidence of lime plastering both on its interior and exterior faces, suggesting that the southern wall had been constructed with the exterior surface exposed above ground. The presence of a compact, apparently trampled, clay layer (Context 124) at the base of the trench may suggest a walkway on the south of the building, possibly to an as yet undiscovered entrance in the southern wall. Evidence of a construction trench was also located with two apparently contemporary fills (Contexts 125 and 126). Context 126 would appear

to represent a levelling deposit prior to the construction of the wall, with context 125 being deposited as packing fill after the wall's construction.

In the cliff section, to the west of Building A, two walls and a cut feature can be seen (Fig. C31g). The walls are 2.9m apart and exist to a depth of c.45cm below ground level. Between the walls, at between 30-40cm below ground, a layer composed of chunks of lime mortar/plaster can be seen. This layer apparently represents some kind of floor level.

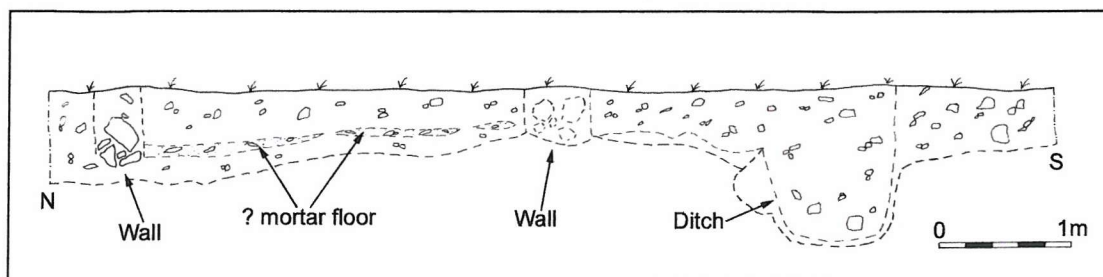


Figure C31g) Cliff section to the west of building A

The walls do not correspond with those of Building A and it would appear that they represent a second building closer to the sea, just to the SW of Building A. This building is not visible on the surface, at the top of the cliff. The cut feature, 1.2m to the south of the southern wall is approximately 1m wide by 1.2m deep. On the cliff top, to the south of Building A, this cut feature appears to be represented as a shallow linear depression running east to west, to 7-8m inland. The cut feature would therefore appear to represent a ditch type feature.

Buildings B and C, located 3.2m apart from each other, and some 200yards south of Building A, exist as partial remains, with only the eastern back walls surviving intact, the rest having eroded into the sea (Fig. C31h). Both buildings exist c.1.5m above the high tide mark, only feet away from the sea. To the south and north of the buildings, east to west aligned depressions apparently demarcate the limits of activity, with Earthwork 1 (EL1) marking the eastern boundary (see Section C43.8.3). The eastern ends of the southern and northern walls do survive although the entire western side of both buildings has been lost over the cliff. Both buildings have a floor level below ground.

Building B exists in a more ruinous condition than Building C (Figs. C31h, C31i, C31j & C31k). The maximum depths of walls are 0.5m below ground level, with evidence of a 10-20cm thick lime mortar floor, c.0.2m below the surface at the southern end of the building. The eastern wall is constructed from large irregular coursed blocks, faced with lime plaster on the interior, and extends to a length of c.4.5m on the exterior and c.2.9m on the interior.

Although the northern wall is in section, the location of the southern wall could only be ascertained from examination of the cliff top. The northern wall appears to be c.0.6m thick whilst the southern is 0.9m thick although the paucity of remains makes accurate measurements difficult. The south-eastern corner of the building, above the floor level is covered with a homogenous dark brown soil deposit, presumably hill wash from the eroding seaward sloping ground onshore from the building.

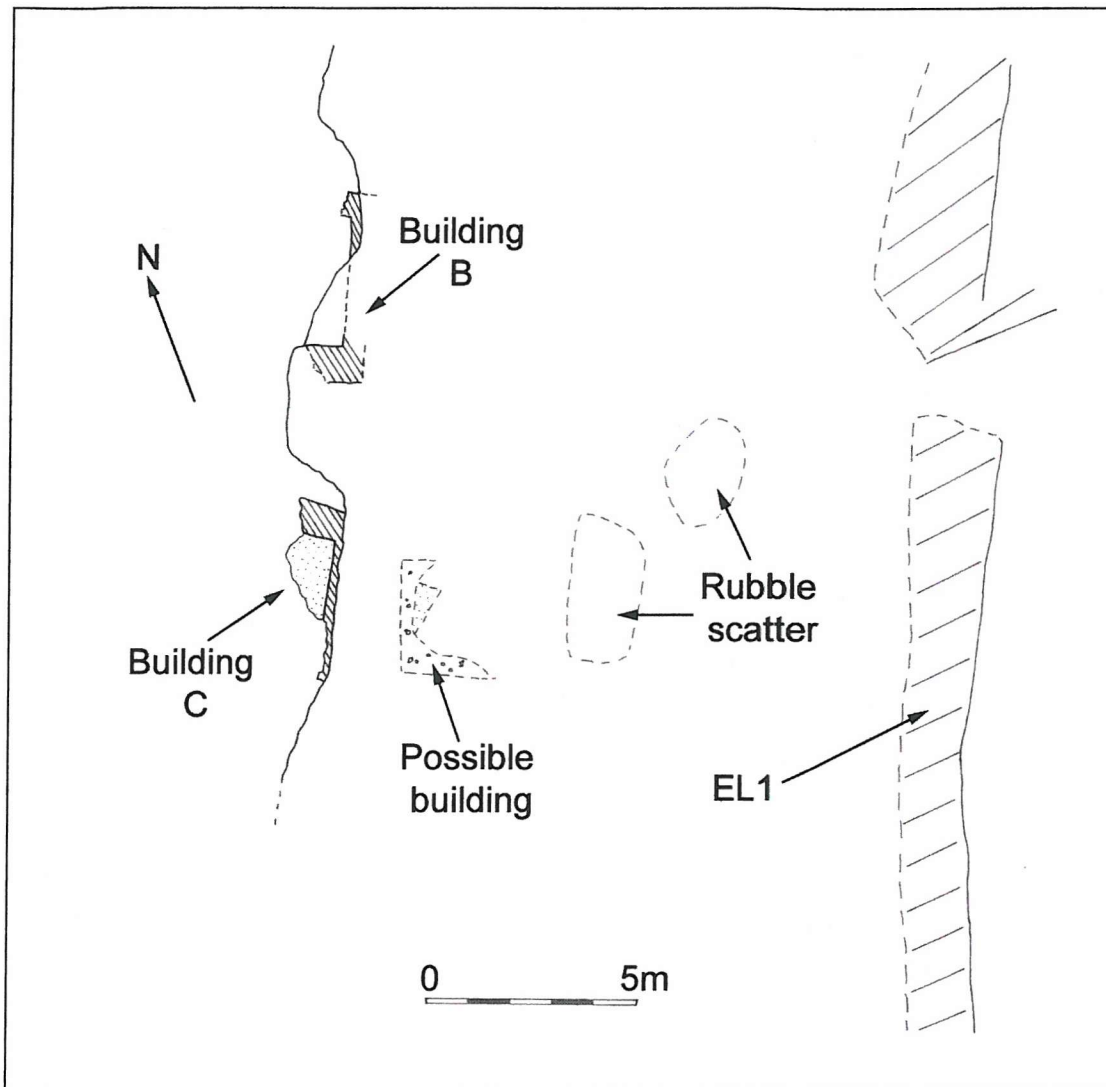


Figure C31h) Site plan of buildings B and C (From plans and measurements made by A. Crosby & P. Bellamy)

Building C, much better preserved than Building B, has had the entire interior fill removed by the sea, probably during Hurricane Lenny in November 1999. This building, although appearing to be deeper below ground than Building B, is in fact on approximately the same level (only c.20cm difference) with Building C having suffered less erosion on its upper levels than Building B. This building, again constructed from large (although generally smaller than those in Building B) irregular coursed blocks with a rubble infilled core, exists to a depth of c.1.4m below ground level.

The eastern wall, which is entire, extends to a length of 3.9m on the exterior and 2.6m on the interior. The thickness of this wall could not be ascertained due to overburden on the eastern face. The northern wall extends for c.1m out from the cliff edge and is c.0.9m thick. The southern wall is apparently similar although a precise thickness measurement could not be made.

At a depth of 1-1.2m a thick (35cm) floor, of large irregular rubble and mortar, has been built within the walls. Unlike Old Road Building A, this floor had been built after the construction of the walls although the thickness of the floor suggests a similar stabilizing purpose over the friable, irregular pyroclastic base rock (now eroded easily by the sea). Both floor and walls show evidence of plastering on

the interior surface with lime and, although more severe erosion at Building B may explain the difference, this plaster appears thicker and more 'solid' than that at Building B.

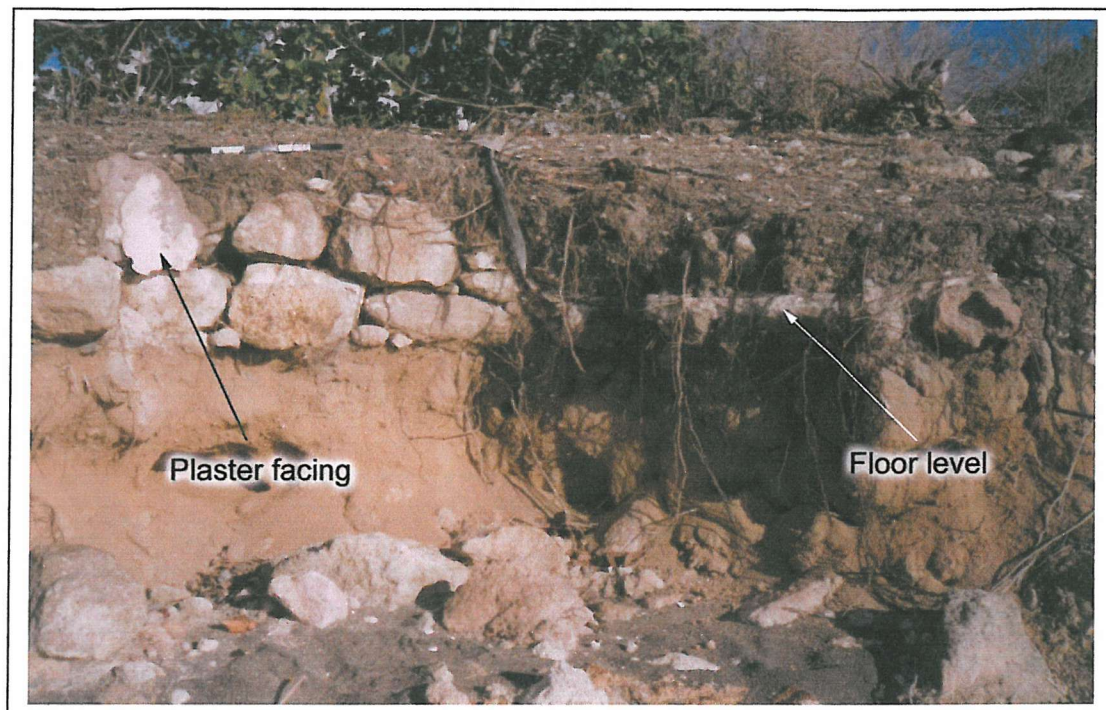


Figure C31i) Photo of building B in cliff section (scale 0.5m)

The close proximity and similarity of Buildings B and C might suggest that, rather than being two structures, both represent the 'wings' of a single building whose interconnecting walls have been lost over the cliff. Both Buildings B and C are angled towards each other, the southern wall of Building B pointing WSW and the northern wall of Building C pointing WNW, almost suggesting that the space between the buildings represents a funnelling entrance way, c.3m wide.



Figure C31j) Photo of building C (scale 0.5m)

To the rear of Building C a square patch (c.2.5m x 2.5m) of lime mortar and rubble spread would appear to attest the presence of a further building (Fig. C31h). The precise nature of this structure is impossible to discern without excavation but the dimensions would appear to suggest a similar structure to Buildings B and C. A pile of rubble and another rubble scatter were also present in the vicinity of Buildings B and C, further suggesting activity over an area of c.100m², behind the two buildings. It is also possible that the rubble pile and scatter represent the remnants of robbing of the buildings, thus explaining the paucity of above ground remains.

C 31.9 Artefactual evidence:

A small number of finds were recovered from Trenches 1 and 2 at Building A (Table C31a). The majority of finds were recovered from outside the building in Trench 2, with only one find, the iron fitting, coming from the interior. All can only be dated generally to the 17th or 18th century, but the absence of 19th century glass and stonewares, so prevalent in other parts of the island, would suggest a date within the earlier period and a termination of use prior to the 19th century.

Context	Afro-Caribbean Pottery (Colono-ware)	European Pottery	Brick	Clay Pipe	Glass	Iron	Bone
120						1 'L' shaped ?door fitting.	
121	4 sherds				1 small piece of bottle glass		
122	2 sherds			3 stems	1 small piece of bottle glass		
123		1 Rim from Staffordshire trailed slipware cup		2 stems		2 square headed, hand made nails	1 small unidentifiable piece
133			1 broken yellow ?Dutch brick	1 stem			

Table C31a) Finds from building A.

The yellow Dutch brick found in Context 133, below wall 128, would suggest a date in the 17th century for the wall construction. However, in the Caribbean this find is more likely to represent the late 17th century. The single find of European pottery from Context 123, further suggests a date range of 1650-1810, although again a slightly later date range is possible in the Caribbean.

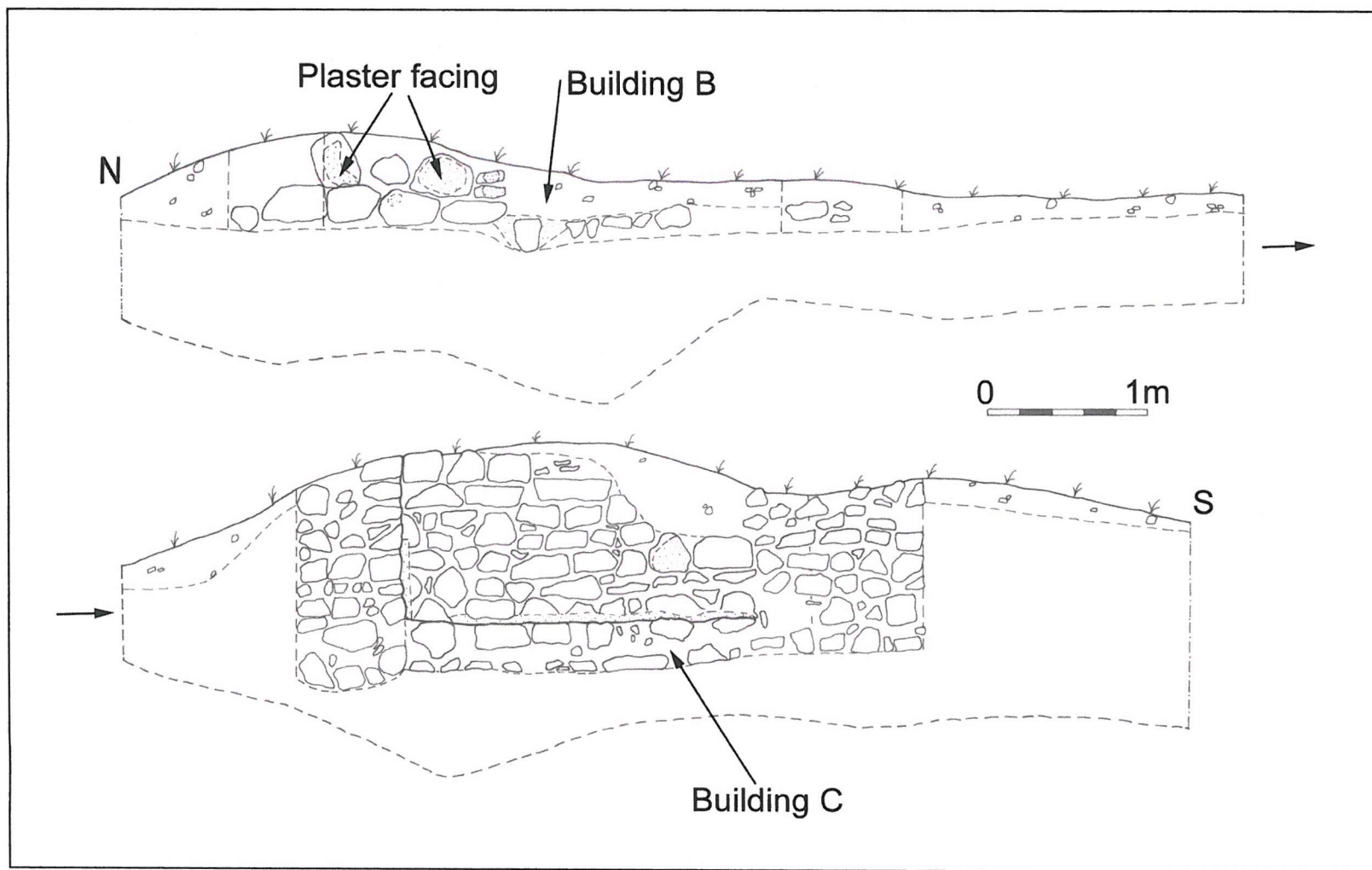


Figure C31k) Cliff section of buildings B and C

The discovery of several Afro-Caribbean (Colono-ware) sherds would attest to a slave presence on the site. This pottery is generally assumed to have been locally made, by slaves, for their own purposes (see Section 5.2.7.3). If this theory is accepted then the Afro-Caribbean ware at Building A must have been deposited by slaves either constructing or repairing the building. However, the almost entire absence of European pottery might suggest usage by soldiers stationed at the building. In the 17th/early 18th century, these people would almost certainly have been white, either local militia men or imported soldiers, as slaves would not be allowed, due to the fear of revolt, near the cannon, etc.

Although the amounts of pottery are very small and the find spots are located outside Building A, a non-slave use of Afro-Caribbean (Colono-ware) pottery is still a possibility. In the 17th/early 18th century the English soldiers stationed in the Caribbean were often treated as badly as slaves, and in 1700 were refused lodgings in Nevis unless they '...work in the fields with the Negroes' (CSP1700, No. 372). Such men, poorly paid and underfed, would have been likely to use the cheapest available vessels, in this case Afro-Caribbean Colono-ware.

If the structure is indeed late 17th/early 18th century, this would provide the earliest stratified example of Afro-Caribbean pottery (Colono-ware) known on Nevis, suggesting a much earlier date for the pottery than has previously been thought.

In 1989, two members of the Nevis Historical and Conservation Society were metal detecting in the vicinity of Building A (Fig. C311). They discovered a large broken section of cannon from the mid section of a '17th or 18th century' (Hubbard 1989) 12lber cannon, weighing 178lbs, lying approximately 0.2m below the surface. Several other small fragments of iron thought to be from a shattered cannon ball were also found in the area.



Figure C311) Photo of cannon fragment recovered from vicinity of Building A

Hubbard interprets this as being caused by a fractured cannon ball lodging in the muzzle upon firing, causing the cannon to explode, probably during the French attack of 1706. However, an alternative theory would suggest a purposeful blocking of the muzzle by an invader (probably the French in either 1706

or 1782) and the cannon being blown up intentionally. Either way is impossible to prove. However, it would be likely that an accidental explosion would have killed those firing the gun and would have merited report in some form of communication. This cannot be found, despite many mentions of other such accidents. Another (presently un-located) cannon was located in the vicinity of Building A, until being removed in the 1960s. The present location of this cannon is unknown.

One small sherd of blue and white sponged, European pottery was found on the shore in the vicinity of Building C. This sherd dates to the mid 19th century. It is almost certainly insignificant and its location is probably the result of hill wash and/or coastal erosion.

C 31.10 Discussion:

Although Abbott's and Duke's Sconce forts could not be definitively located, evidence to suggest a location for the fort/s has been retrieved. The finds of cannon close to Building A would suggest military activity in this area, however, there is no definite evidence to suggest that Buildings B and C served the same purpose.

The lack of mention by Johnson in 1705 would suggest that either Duke's Sconce had been abandoned by this date or that Abbott's/Cole's Point fort was a later manifestation of the same. No other fort is shown in the French intelligence maps (Figs. C1c, C1d & C1f) and it seems likely that one replaced the other. It is possible that during Johnson's work of 1705, the fort was re-located from a position at the centre of the cliff (Buildings B & C) to a position to the north at Cole's Point (Building A). This theory is supported by the fact that the northern end of the cliff is still referred to as Cole's Point. However, this cannot be proved with certainty.

The presence of all three buildings to the west of the coastal road/covered way would suggest they all had a, as yet unspecified, military purpose. It would appear that the forts proper have long since fallen into the sea, and despite diving reconnaissance along this coast no definite structural remains could be located. In this case, the buildings may represent ancillary buildings such as guardhouses/magazines. Their similar size, if compared to the possible guardhouse seen at Morton's Bay, would support such an interpretation.

C 32 In the spur to the north of Duke's Skonts (between Duke's Skonts and the spur at the south and of James Town)

C 32.1 Notes:

This gun emplacement, located within the coastal entrenchments, is only referred to in one document from 1701.

C 32.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (to the north of Duke's Sconce and to the south of James Fort)

C 32.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'In the spur to the north of Duke's Skonts, one gun pretty well mounted'.

C 32.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 32.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'In the spur to the north of Duke's Skonts, one gun pretty well mounted'.

C 32.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 32.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 32.8 Archaeological evidence: N/A

C 32.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 32.10 Discussion:

This emplacement could not be located, archaeologically, by the author. It is likely, as a probable timber and turf structure, that any remains have been destroyed. The lack of references to this emplacement would suggest that the structure was used only temporarily, and fell into disuse following the French attack in 1706.

C 33 In the spur to the south end of James Town (between the spur to the north of Duke's Skonts and the fort of James Town)

C 33.1 Notes:

This gun emplacement, located within the coastal entrenchments, is only referred to in one document from 1701.

C 33.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (to the north of Duke's Sconce and to the south of James Fort)

C 33.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'In the spur at the south end of James Town, one saker gun, wants a truck'.

C 33.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 33.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'In the spur at the south end of James Town, one saker gun, wants a truck'.

C 33.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 33.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 33.8 Archaeological evidence: N/A

C 33.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 33.10 Discussion:

This emplacement could not be located, archaeologically, by the author. It is likely, as a probable timber and turf structure that any remains have been destroyed. The lack of references to this emplacement would suggest that the structure was used only temporarily, and fell into disuse following the French attack in 1706.

C 34 Morton's Bay/James Fort/St James/Fort Ashby

C 34.1 Notes:

This fort, built to defend the late 17th century second town on Nevis (Morton's Bay/Jamestown, see Appendix A), was first built as a platform in the mid-late 17th century. It continued in use until the late 18th century, finally being used as an alarm gun position in 1773.



Figure C34a) Morton's Bay fort from the east

C 34.2 Grid ref.: W 62° 37' 26", N 17° 10' 46"

C 34.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

1672 (PRO CO154/1/114, CSP1669-1674, 1013): 'Laws Regulations and orders in force at the Leeward Islands, 1668-1672: Bath Bay, Ould Road, Morton's Bay, New Windward and Indian Castle should be lawful shipping places for any goods'.

1672 (PRO CO154/2/60): Nevis Act: 'Act for having stone or brick chimneys in the cook rooms of Charles Town and Morton's Bay'.

14/12/1672 (PRO CO1/29/161, CSP1669-1674, 987): 'The present state of the Leeward Islands' by Sir Charles Wheler: 'From Pellicans Point to Musketi Bay is all the leeward side of the island about five English mile in length, for the defence of which there are about thirty pieces of cannon mounted upon the platforms of Pellicans Point, the old rock, the old fort, Duke's Sconce, Morton's Bay and if I had stayed I would have raised one at Musketi Bay it being the best landing of the leeward side especially from St. Christopher...In the time of the warr the inhabitants did by the hands of their slaves run a line all along the coast, but I had persuaded them to make little redoubts, shut up as well to the land as to the sea that they might doe with the same expense of hands as their long line, because their line being very slight and without a trench (for I saw the ruins of it) an enemy would passe it anywhere which would endanger the losse of ye island, in regard their men were extended five mile in length and that an enemy might be landing at ye same time all along; but since my coming away I think they are distracted from it and will runne their slight line without any

fastness except that of Pellican Point, by reason it is on high land, in a kinde of promontary all the other platformes being open’.

10/5/1676 (PRO CO153/2): ‘An Account of the Caribbee Islands’ by Thomas Warner: ‘Nevis: Fort at Morton’s Bay with five guns, Duke’s Sconce with four guns, Old Road fort with nine guns, Black Rock fort with five guns, A platform at Charles Town with three guns, Pelican Point fort with seven guns’.

1687 (BL Sloane 45/35): William Hack: ‘A chart of the west end of Nevis and part of St. Christopher, originally described by Mr. John Jenifer, drawn in 1687 by William Hack’ (Fig. C1a): Moltons Bay fort with seven guns shown at position 7.

7/1701 (PRO CO152/4): Council of Nevis Minutes: ‘Upon motion of the Lt. Governor that a list of artillery stores that are wanting to be drawn and deliver’d him to send to his Excellency...the following list was accordingly drawn; two hundred good firelocks, four very long sakers, six 12lbbers and six 18lbbers of the longest size to lye in the forts as followeth: three guns for Long Point fort, four for Charles Fort, two for Black Rock fort, two for Old Road fort three for James fort, two for round hill platform. A sufficient quantity of shot fit for them’.

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: ‘In the fort at James Town, four guns well mounted. The battlements want to be new done’.

19/2/1702 (CSP1702, 132): John McArthur to Council of Trade and Plantations: The French are ‘...to attack Nevis, upon which they are advised by a person of that island, whom they stile their friend, to land somewhere near Morton’s Bay where they will have no occasion to make use of bombs’.

?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P5): French Intelligence Map: ‘Horse shoe battery of four cannon’ shown (Fig. C1c).

?1703 (NARCH): ‘Par Beauvilliers’ French Intelligence Map: ‘Horse Shoe battery of four cannon’ shown (Fig. C1d).

c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): ‘A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty’s island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty’s Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereigne lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep’: ‘St. James’ fort made to hold fourteen guns, with four guns viz. one 18lber, one 9lber, two 6lbbers, three barrels powder, three 24lb shot, ten 18lb shot, twelve 12lb shot, thirty eight 9lb shot, sixty seven 6lb shot, twenty six 3lb shot, six rammers, two ladles, one wad hook, on iron crow, four powder horns’.

15/9/1705 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1704-5, 1344): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: ‘I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair’d by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac’t...K. St. James’ fort by me erected commonly known by ye name of Moretons Bay, the figure being soe is that the water comes almost all round itt in ye center of the is a small point and the ground would afford noe other this is the same as to proportion as E, F, G,

H...The ambusers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'.

15/9/1705 (PRO CO700 ST.CHRISTOPHER AND NEVIS/2): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: Johnson's fort plan shows a half moon battery with fifteen embrasures (Fig. C34b). A guardhouse is shown on the interior. Around the front of the fort a 13 yards wide ditch is shown. The fort is c.76 yards by 39 yards. The wall is 4 yards thick and the platform 9 yards wide. A step 'entrance' is shown in the centre of the eastern wall.

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'An accompt of what new forts wee have lately built and where, what old ones repaired and the changes wee have beene at to doe the same': 'Morton's Bay ffort rebuilt from the very foundation a new guardhouse all of stone and lime £1200'.

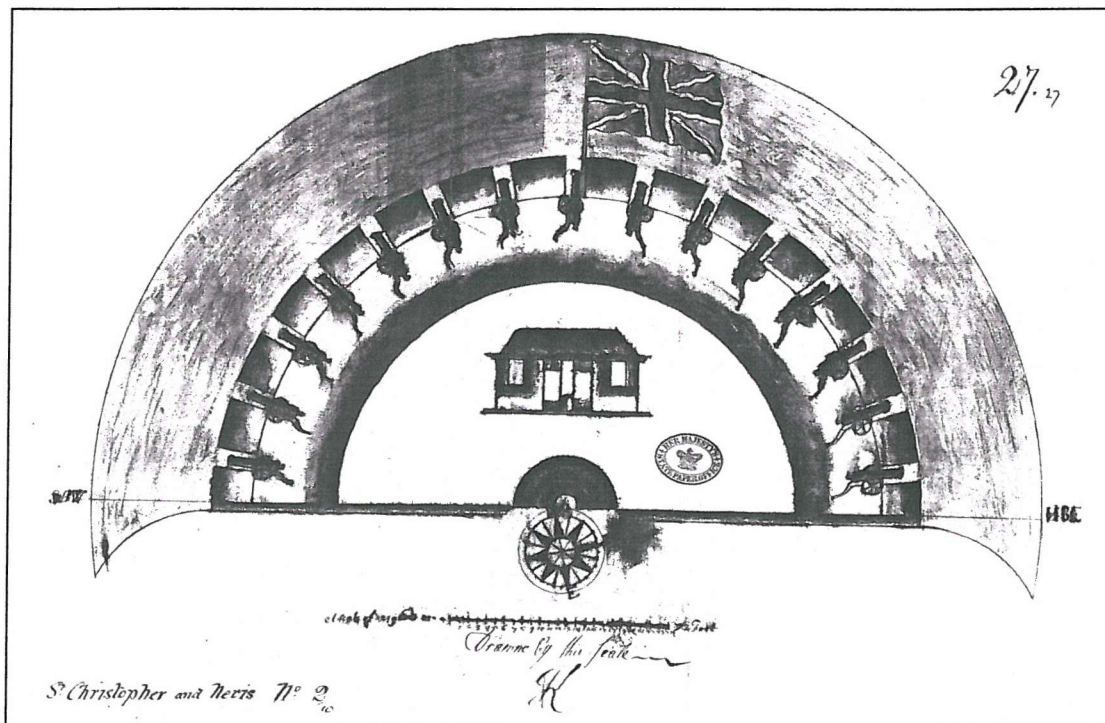


Figure C34b) Governor Johnson's plan of James Fort, Morton's Bay, 1705

19/3/1706 (PRO CO153/9): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...K. St. James' fort by me erected commonly known by ye name of Moretons Bay, the figure being soe is that the water comes almost all round itt in ye center of the is a small point and the ground would afford noe other this is the same as to proportion as E, F, G, H...The ambusers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'.

15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: 'An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores': 'Morton's Bay fort has one lowest demi-culverin or 9lber and two minions'.

1/9/1715 (PRO CO152/11): Fort Inventory: 'Moretons Bay one culverin'.

- 3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): 'An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island': 'James Fort guns mounted, one demi-culverin'.
- 31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...At Morton's Bay is a fort on the same line or entrenchments and a 12lber is mounted in it'.
- 1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin': 'Horse shoe battery with four pieces' shown at position D (Fig. C1f). This map appears to be a copy of the earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.
- 23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/31/11): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon James Fort two 9lbers in good condition.
- 23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/49/21): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon James Fort two 9lbers in good condition.
- 1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'About half mile still further to the northward [from Cotton Tree] is an half moon battery called Morton's Bay fort on which are two good 9lbers mounted the carriages in very bad order used as alarm guns. The walls and platform of this battery are in better order than any other in the island'.
- 20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'About half mile still further to the northward [from Cotton Tree] is an half moon battery called Morton's Bay fort on which are two good 9lbers mounted the carriages in very bad order used as alarm guns. The walls and platform of this battery are in better order than any other in the island'.
- 1875 (PRO CO187/49): Blue Book: There is a Frances Ashby on the officers list. She has been Matron of the Jail since 1871.

C 34.4 Descriptions from other sources:

- 2/3/1982 (NARCH): Letter from Franklin K. Paddock: Paddock records four cannon and says that a further one was located below the west side of the fort in 1981.

C 34.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

- 14/12/1672 (PRO CO1/29/161, CSP1669-1674, 987): 'The present state of the Leeward Islands' by Sir Charles Wheler: 'From Pellicans Point to Musketi Bay is all the leeward side of the island about five English mile in length, for the defence of which there are about thirty pieces of cannon mounted upon the platforms of Pellicans Point, the old rock, the old fort, Duke's Sconce, Morton's Bay and if I had stayed I would have raised one at Musketi Bay it being the best landing of the leeward side especially from St. Christopher...In the time of the warr the inhabitants did by the hands of their slaves run a line all along the coast, but I had persuaded them to make little redoubts, shut up as well to the land as to the sea that they might doe with the same expense of hands as their long line, because their line being very slight and without a trench (for I saw the ruins of it) an enemy would passe it anywhere which would endanger the losse of ye island, in regard their men

were extended five mile in length and that an enemy might be landing at ye same time all along; but since my coming away I think they are distracted from it and will runne their slight line without any fastness except that of Pellican Point, by reason it is on high land, in a kinde of promontary all the other platformes being open’.

10/5/1676 (PRO CO153/2): ‘An Account of the Caribbee Islands’ by Thomas Warner: ‘Nevis: Fort at Morton’s Bay with five guns, Duke’s Sconce with four guns, Old Road fort with nine guns, Black Rock fort with five guns, A platform at Charles Town with three guns, Pelican Point fort with seven guns’.

1687 (BL Sloane 45/35): William Hack: ‘A chart of the west end of Nevis and part of St. Christopher, originally described by Mr. John Jenifer, drawn in 1687 by William Hack’ (Fig. C1a): Moltons Bay fort with seven guns shown at position 7.

7/1701 (PRO CO152/4): Council of Nevis Minutes: ‘Upon motion of the Lt. Governor that a list of artillery stores that are wanting to be drawn and deliver’d him to send to his Excellency...the following list was accordingly drawn; two hundred good firelocks, four very long sakers, six 12lbers and six 18lbers of the longest size to lye in the forts as followeth: three guns for Long Point fort, four for Charles Fort, two for Black Rock fort, two for Old Road fort three for James fort, two for round hill platform. A sufficient quantity of shot fit for them’.

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: ‘In the fort at James Town, four guns well mounted. The battlements want to be new done’.

?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P5): ‘Horse shoe battery of four cannon’ shown (Fig. C1c).

?1703 (NARCH): ‘Par Beauvilliers’ French Intelligence Map: ‘Horse Shoe battery of four cannon’ shown (Fig. C1d).

c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): ‘A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty’s island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty’s Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereigne lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep’: ‘St. James’ fort made to hold fourteen guns, with four guns viz. one 18lber, one 9lber, two 6lbers, three barrels powder, three 24lb shot, ten 18lb shot, twelve 12lb shot, thirty eight 9lb shot, sixty seven 6lb shot, twenty six 3lb shot, six rammers, two ladles, one wad hook, on iron crow, four powder horns’.

15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: ‘An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores’: ‘Morton’s Bay fort has one lowest demi-culverin or 9lber and two minions’.

1/9/1715 (PRO CO152/11): Fort Inventory: ‘Moretons Bay one culverin’.

3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): ‘An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island’: ‘James Fort guns mounted, one demi-culverin’.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: ‘...At Morton’s Bay is a fort on the same line or entrenchments and a 12lber is mounted in it’.

1758 (NARCH) ‘Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin’: ‘Horse shoe battery with four pieces’ shown at position D (Fig. C1f). This map appears to be a copy

of the earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/31/11): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon James Fort two 9lbbers in good condition.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/49/21): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon James Fort two 9lbbers in good condition.

1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'About half mile still further to the northward [from Cotton Tree] is an half moon battery called Morton's Bay fort on which are two good 9lbbers mounted the carriages in very bad order used as alarm guns. The walls and platform of this battery are in better order than any other in the island'.

20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'About half mile still further to the northward [from Cotton Tree] is an half moon battery called Morton's Bay fort on which are two good 9lbbers mounted the carriages in very bad order used as alarm guns. The walls and platform of this battery are in better order than any other in the island'.

C 34.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 34.7 The fort at war:

19/2/1702 (CSP1702, 132): John McArthur to Council of Trade and Plantations: The French are '...to attack Nevis, upon which they are advised by a person of that island, whom they stile their friend, to land somewhere near Morton's Bay where they will have no occasion to make use of bombs'.

C 34.8 Archaeological evidence:

This site was visited in May 1999 and recorded in February 2000. At first sight, this is one of the best preserved forts on Nevis, despite having a disused café built on top of the structure (Figs. C34a & C34c). However, from local knowledge it became apparent that the site had been heavily repaired in the 1980s and it is uncertain how much of the original structure remains.

The repairs appear to have been carried out after the OS 1:2,500 map was drawn in 1984. This map clearly shows an identical structure but with fifteen embrasures still present on the top of the fort. These have now gone, to be replaced with four embrasures built to accommodate the four cannon present on the site.

The structure is c.30m long by c.15m, with five well built semi-circular steps leading up to the platform (Fig. C34d). The structure has been built from mortared irregular rounded stones with stone chips being used to fill in large patches of mortar between the stones. The interior of the fort has been concreted, with a stone flag floor being present for 2.6m back from the western face. In the south and north ends, modern café buildings obscure all evidence on the platform.

Surrounding the western front of the fort, a wide (c.5m), irregular water filled ditch is present, apparently fed by natural ghuts (drainage channels). The fort now lies c.120m inland and it is probable that

natural sand silting has led to the fort being further from the sea than it was when originally built (Fig. C34e).

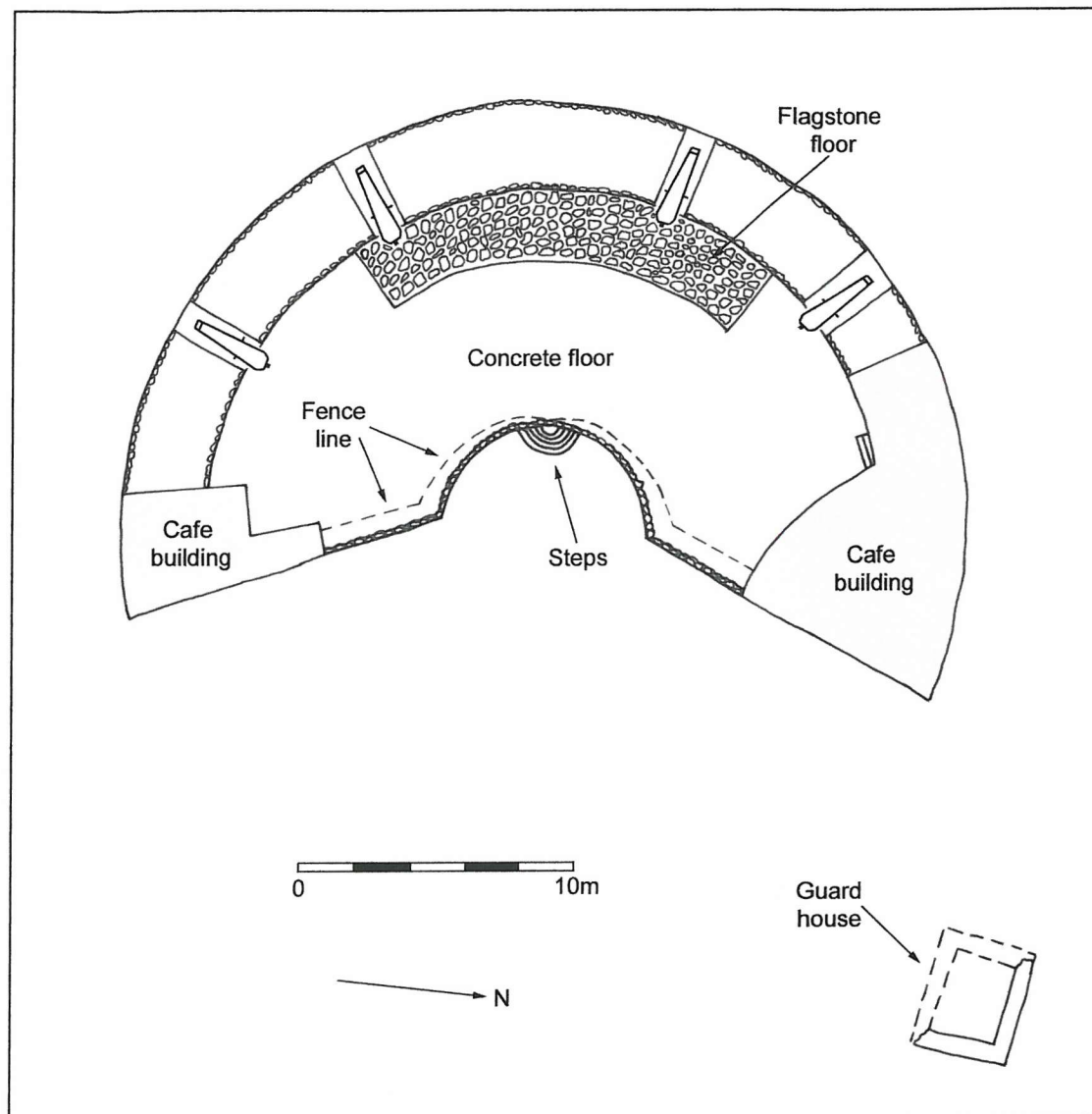


Figure C34c) Site plan of Morton's Bay fort (Fort Ashby)

To the north-east of the structure the remains of a single small building can be seen (Figs C34f, C34g & C34h). This structure has had a modern building constructed within its confines and exists only as a complete gable wall. The rest of the building can be seen as foundations. The gable wall is 2.9m high and shows evidence of a pitched roof down to a 1.45m high wall. The building has 0.6m thick walls and has been constructed from irregular rounded stone facing, with a rubble and mortar core, identical to that used in the main fort structure.

On the western side of the wall, a 15cm high by 9cm deep beam slot is visible, presumably representing a ceiling/loft level. The low height of this 'ceiling' might suggest the floor level was subterranean, although without further work this is impossible to prove.

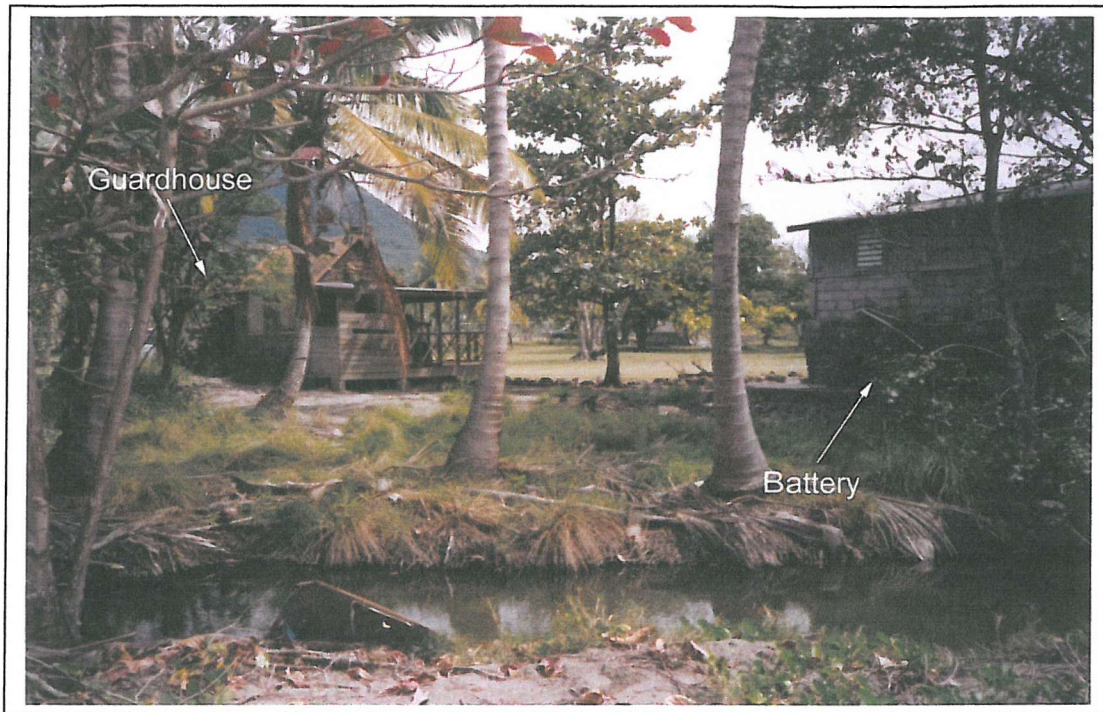


Figure C34d) Morton's Bay fort and guardhouse from the north-west



Figure C34e) The steps at Morton's Bay Fort

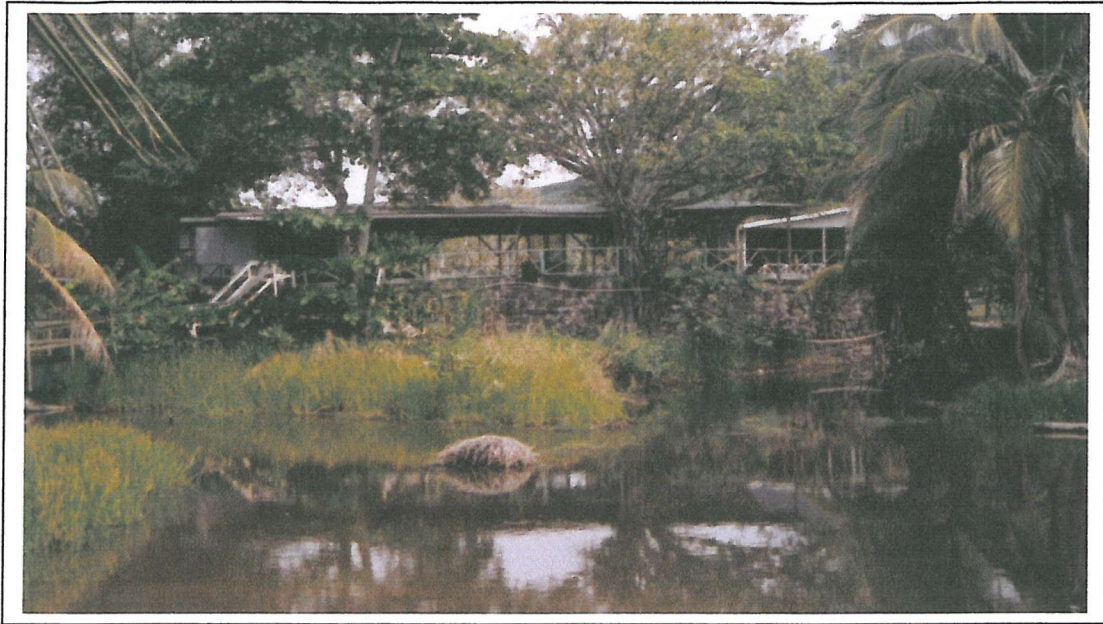


Figure C34f) Morton's Bay fort from the south-west

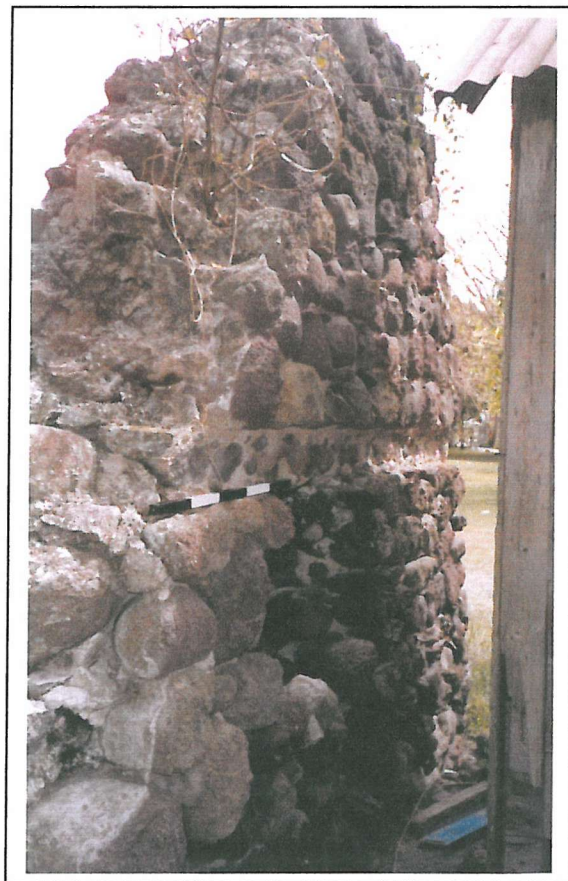


Figure C34g) Photo of guardhouse eastern wall

A large hole, c.25cm on the external face of the wall and c.60cm on the interior face is present in this wall (Fig. C34h). This hole appears extremely unusual. It is difficult to imagine how natural erosion would cause such a hole and it is unlikely that robbing would account for such a small aperture. It is possible that the hole represents a cannon ball hit, a large scar being formed behind the entry hole. If this is such a hole it is possible that this feature represents damage caused by the French either in 1706 or 1782.

It seems likely that this building is the guardhouse/magazine associated with the original 1705 fort, which was later abandoned as the fort fell out of use. It is possible that the building was re-used as a house after the fort's abandonment, but this is difficult to prove.

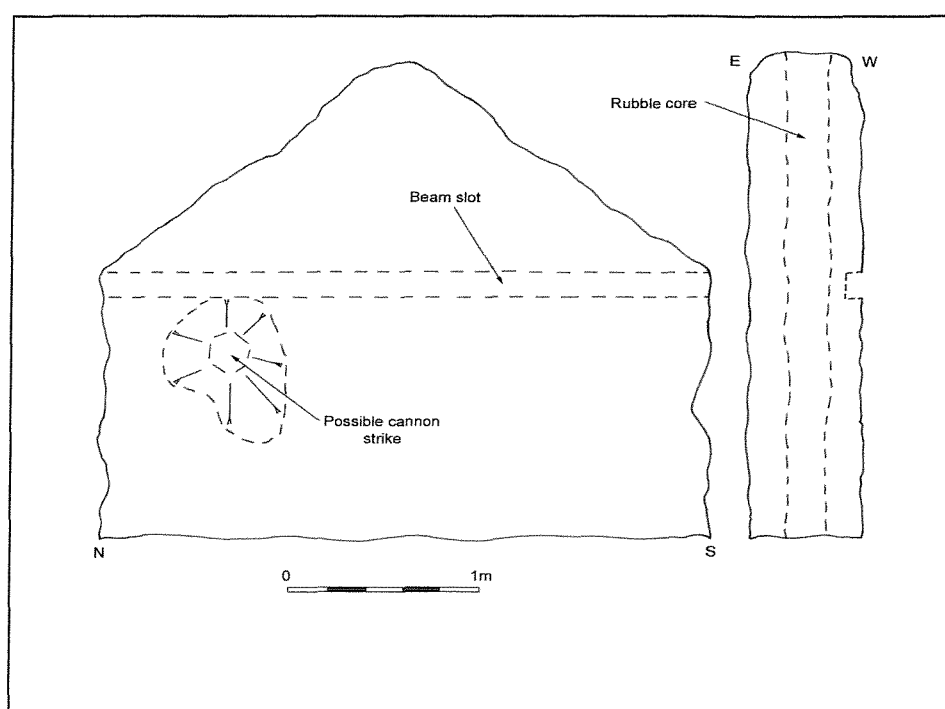


Figure C34h) Elevation drawing of eastern wall

C 34.9 Artefactual evidence:

Four cannon are present on the site, although it is uncertain whether the cannon were originally on the fort or whether they have been brought from elsewhere. In 1981, there were five cannon on the site, but one has since disappeared.

The four cannon now present are all mounted (in a fashion) within the fort, but none have carriages (Fig. C34i). Charles Trollope has identified the cannon, as follows (Trollope 2000). Gun 1 is an English 12lber of 9ft with 24-2-0 marked on the barrel. The cannon dates from the first half of the 17th century. Both trunnions are intact on this cannon and it has not been spiked. Gun 2 is an English culverin of 9ft with 37-2-0 marked on the barrel. This cannon has had one of the trunnions broken off and has not been spiked. The cannon dates from 1670-90.

Gun 3, a demi-culverin of 8 feet, has 23-2-? marked and dates from 1670-90. This cannon has lost a trunnion and has been spiked. The fourth cannon, a Swedish Finbanker, was cast in Sweden for the

Amsterdam Admiralty. This demi-culverin or 8lber, of 7 feet 6 inches, dates to the last quarter of the 17th /early 18th century. This cannon has been spiked (Trollope 2000).



Figure C34i) Photo of interior of Morton's Bay fort with cannon

C 34.10 Discussion:

This fort, located at the northern end of Jamestown and protecting the landing place at this site, is one of the best preserved batteries on Nevis. The history of Jamestown is controversial and needs explanation so that the fort may be understood. A full discussion of this issue can be found in Appendix A, however a shorter version is included here.

Popular legend records Jamestown as the first town on Nevis, founded by Virginian settlers en route to America in 1607. This town was supposedly then destroyed by a tidal wave in either 1680 or 1690. However, the author could locate no information for such an early town, nor for its destruction. From historical and archaeological work a foundation date in the late 17th century can be postulated. The name of James Town only appears in late 1684, just prior to the accession of James II, and it is likely that the town proper dates to this time. Johnson rebuilt and repaired the original late 17th century fort in 1705 and it continued in use, alongside the town, well into the late 18th century.

There are problems with the interpretation that Johnson's James Fort of 1705 is represented on the site. Although the fort shown by Johnson almost exactly matches, in form, the structure visible today, the dimensions are wildly different. James fort as shown in Johnson's plan, is three times larger than the present structure.

However, it is possible that the scale on the 1705 plan is incorrect and that the illustrator incorrectly identified feet with yards. In this case all the measurements given can be seen as feet and when stated in yards would match the dimensions now present very well. This explanation seems the most likely as the

building form and construction technique exactly match other 1704-5 forts (e.g. Mathew's, Old Road, Cotton Tree) identified on the island.

The origin for the name Fort Ashby, by which the fort is still known, could not be found. The name 'Ashby' is rare on Nevis both historically and contemporarily. Only three references to the name could be found, from 1677, 1707 and 1871. The 1677 and 1707 accounts come from censuses of those years that detail a George Ashby and Mary and Sarah Ashby being present on the island (Oliver 1914: 75 & 175). The 1871 reference records a Mrs. Ashby in a government position. In 1871, John Alexander Burke Isles, a government representative and historian, wrote a history of Nevis. This history is a work of typical Victorian romanticism and includes many historical errors (see Appendix A) and it is possible that Isles called the fort Ashby, as the land was owned at that time by a family of that name. This cannot be proved but it is almost certain that the name is of 'modern' derivation and has little connection with the original fort.

C 35 Willoughby's Platform

C 35.1 Notes:

This platform is mentioned only once in a reference from 1676. It is possible that this platform is an early form of one of the other batteries, if this is the case probably Morton's Bay, but this cannot be proved.

C 35.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (possibly in the vicinity of Morton's Bay/James Fort)

C 35.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

22/11/1676 (PRO CO1/38/152, CSP1675-6, 1152): Answers to enquiries about Leeward Islands by William Stapleton: 'There are neither fforts nor castles in any part of my government which may properly deserve that denomination, but such as are called soe and are but platformes... Willoughby's platforme vizt. One 18lber, one 8lber two 6lbers, two 3lbers, one brasse taper gun for the company at field, ten 8lb shot, sixty eight 6lb shot, twenty four 18lb shot, forty 3lb shot'.

C 35.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 35.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

22/11/1676 (PRO CO1/38/152, CSP1675-6, 1152): Answers to enquiries about Leeward Islands by William Stapleton: 'There are neither fforts nor castles in any part of my government which may properly deserve that denomination, but such as are called soe and are but platformes... Willoughby's platforme vizt. One 18lber, one 8lber two 6lbers, two 3lbers, one brasse taper gun for the company at field, ten 8lb shot, sixty eight 6lb shot, twenty four 18lb shot, forty 3lb shot'.

C 35.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 35.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 35.8 Archaeological evidence: N/A

C 35.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 35.10 Discussion:

This platform could not be located. It is mentioned after Duke's Sconce and therefore appears to have been built to the north of this fort. The area between Morton's Bay and Cades Bay was walked but no evidence of such a structure could be seen.

C 36 At Cades Bay (between James Town Fort and Musketto Bay)

C 36.1 Notes:

Johnson may have improved this platform, first mentioned in 1702, in 1704-5. However, the lack of a fort plan for this fort suggests it was only a minor structure. By 1707 the platform had only one cannon and by the mid-late 18th century was being used as an alarm post.

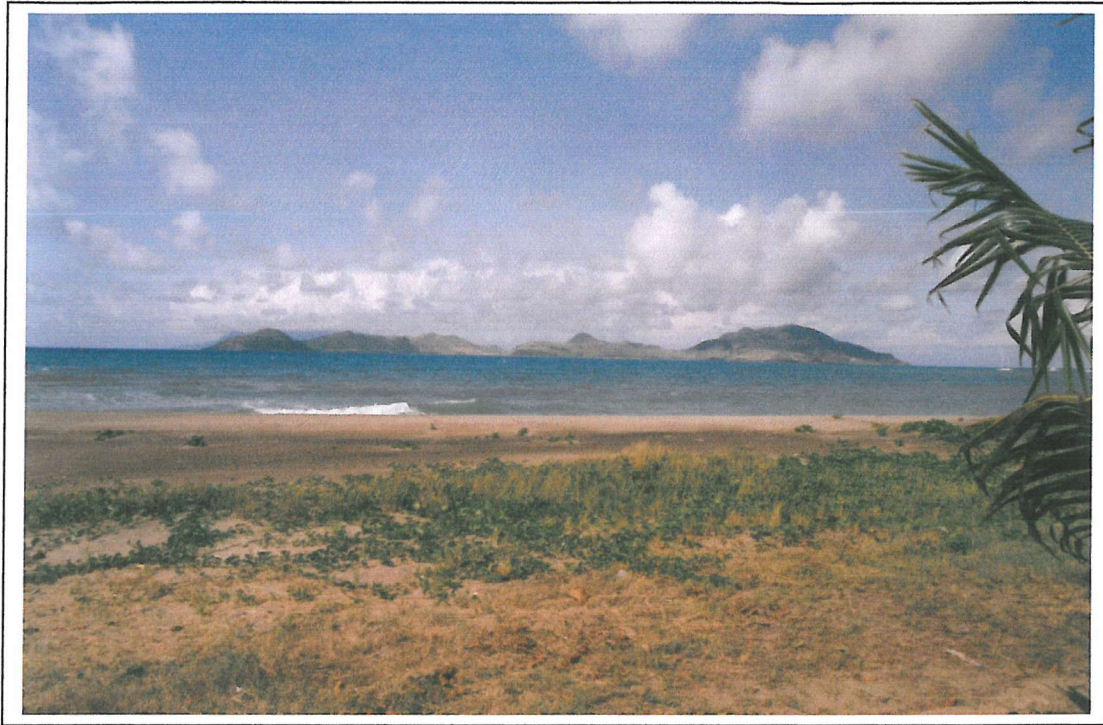


Figure C36a) Cades Bay, looking north-west to St. Kitts

C 36.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (on Cades Bay to the north of Morton's Bay Fort)

C 36.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'At Cades Bay, one small minion lying on the ground'.

c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): 'A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty's island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty's Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereign lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep': 'Cades Bay fort made to hold six guns, with three guns viz. two 3lbers and one 2lber [no stores of any kind]'.

15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: 'An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores': 'Cades Bay has one saker'.

3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): 'An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island': 'Cades Bay demolished with no cannon'.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...At Cades Bay beyond it is an old unserviceable 9lber'.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/31/11): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon the Bay battery: one 9lber in good condition.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/49/21): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon the Bay battery: one 9lber in good condition.

C 36.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 36.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'At Cades Bay, one small minion lying on the ground'.

c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): 'A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty's island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty's Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereigne lady Queen Anne': 'Cades Bay fort made to hold six guns, with three guns viz. two 3lbers and one 2lber [no stores of any kind]'.

15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: 'An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores': 'Cades Bay has one saker'.

3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): 'An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island': 'Cades Bay demolished with no cannon'.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...At Cades Bay beyond it is an old unserviceable 9lber'.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/31/11): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon the Bay battery: one 9lber in good condition.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/49/21): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon the Bay battery: one 9lber in good condition.

C 36.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 36.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 36.8 Archaeological evidence: N/A

C 36.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 36.10 Discussion:

The area between James Fort and the north end of Cades Bay (Fig. C36a) was walked but no evidence of such a platform could be located. It is likely, as a probable timber and turf structure, that any remains have been destroyed. The platform, although apparently repaired by Johnson in 1704-5, is not mentioned within his letters. Neither does a plan exist from 1705. It is therefore likely that the platform was small; the number and low type of cannon reported in the 1705 reference would support this interpretation.

When the distribution of forts on the western coast of Nevis is examined it would appear strange that, between Morton's Bay and Codrington's forts, a long stretch of coast was left undefended by a major fort. This appears even more odd when the ground is walked: the beach along this coast is flat and sandy, apparently a prime area for landing.

However, upon consulting historical maps and plans a reason for such minimal defence is shown. On a map of 1818 the area of sea to the north-west of Cades Bay is marked as 'foul ground' (Fig. C1i), and would have caused any approaching ships great difficulty, as they would have been unable to anchor close enough to shore to be able to disembark landing parties. As such, Morton's Bay fort and a small gun emplacement at Cades Bay, would have been sufficient to support this naturally defended area, with the elevated position of Codrington's fort (see C38) providing long range defence across the northern Musketi/Mosquito bay.

C 37 Long Bay battery

C 37.1 Notes:

This battery is mentioned only in 1769 and probably refers to a gun emplacement located to the north of Cades Bay.

C 37.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain (possibly to the north of Cades Bay and to the south of Codrington's Fort)

C 37.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/31/11): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Long Bay battery: one 9lber fit for service'.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/49/21): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Long Bay battery: one 9lber fit for service'.

C 37.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 37.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/31/11): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Long Bay battery: one 9lber fit for service'.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/49/21): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Long Bay battery: one 9lber fit for service'.

C 37.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 37.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 37.8 Archaeological evidence: N/A

C 37.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 37.10 Discussion:

This battery could not be located, archaeologically. It is likely, as a probable timber and turf structure, that any remains have been destroyed. A location to the south of the Codrington's fort is likely.

C 38 Codrington's/Musketi Bay & Musketa Poynt (and variations)/Hurricane Hill

C 38.1 Notes:

This fort, probably first built in the late 17th century, was repaired by Johnson in 1704-6. Although neglected after the French attack of 1706, this fort continued to be used for limited defence until the late 18th century. It was one of only four forts still named as such, although it had no artillery, in the late 19th century.

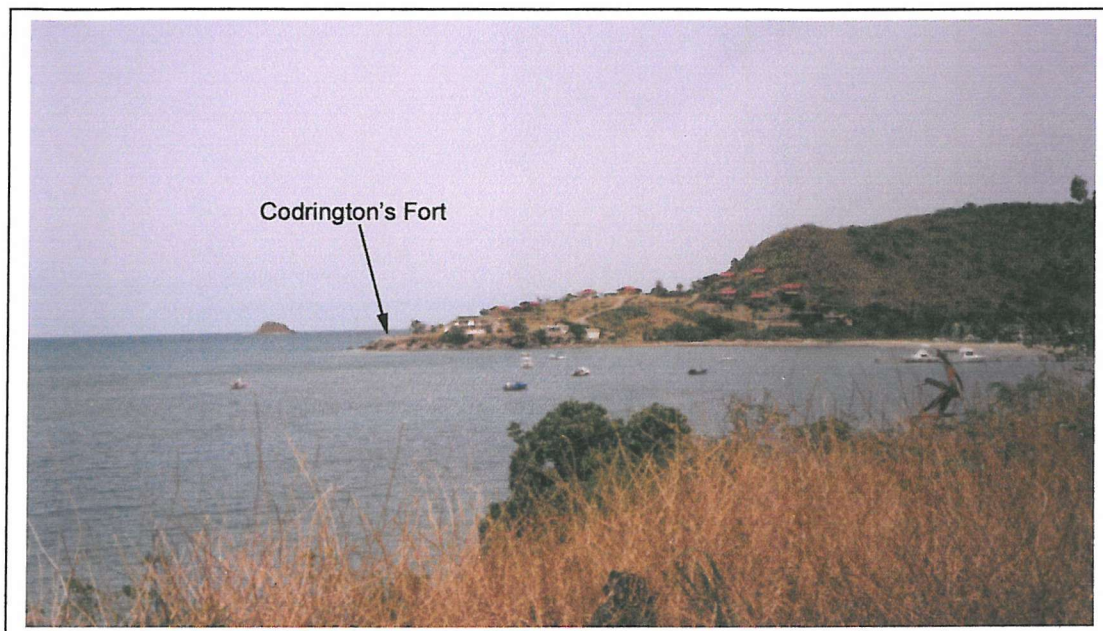


Figure C38a) Codrington's Fort from the south

C 38.2 Grid ref.: W 62° 36' 46", N 17° 12' 07"

C 38.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

14/12/1672 (PRO CO1/29/161, CSP1669-1674, 987): 'The present state of the Leeward Islands' by Sir Charles Wheler: 'From Pellicans Point to Musketi Bay is all the leeward side of the island about five English mile in length, for the defence of which there are about thirty pieces of cannon mounted upon the platforms of Pellicans Point, the old rock, the old fort, Duke's Sconce, Morton's Bay and if I had stayed I would have raised one at Musketi Bay it being the best landing of the leeward side especially from St. Christopher...In the time of the warr the inhabitants did by the hands of their slaves run a line all along the coast, but I had persuaded them to make little redoubts, shut up as well to the land as to the sea that they might doe with the same expense of hands as their long line, because their line being very slight and without a trench (for I saw the ruins of it) an enemy would passe it anywhere which would endanger the losse of ye island, in regard their men were extended five mile in length and that an enemy might be landing at ye same time all along; but since my coming away I think they are distracted from it and will runne their slight line without any

fastness except that of Pellican Point, by reason it is on high land, in a kinde of promontary all the other platformes being open’.

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: ‘Musketo Bay, extremely out of order, three large minion guns lying in the middle of the bay. They want carriages. Tis the opinion of the Council of War that two of said guns ought to be mounted upon the north of the bay being a very advantageous place and the other with an addition of one or two more to be placed at the south end of the bay where some guns were formerly’.

?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P 5): French Intelligence Map: ‘Battery of three cannon’ shown (Fig. C1c).

?1703 (NARCH): ‘Par Beauvilliers’ French Intelligence Map: ‘Battery of three cannon’ shown (Fig. C1d).

c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): ‘A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty’s island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty’s Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereigne lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep’: ‘Codrington’s fort made to hold twelve guns, with five guns viz. two 9lbars, three 6lbars, 3½ barrels powder, twelve 9lb shot, thirty six 6lb shot, thirty 3lb shot, three rammers, two ladles, two wad hooks, two sheepskins, one powder horn and one lanthorn’.

15/9/1705 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1704-5, 1344): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: ‘I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair’d by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac’t...L. Codrington’s Fort repaired by me itt stands upon a point or ledg of rocks, commands the narrows between St. Christopher’s and Nevis...The ambusers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without’.

15/9/1705 (PRO CO700 ST.CHRISTOPHER AND NEVIS/2): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: Johnson’s fort plans show a rectangular fort with seven embrasures (Fig. C38b). A guardhouse is shown within. The fort has dimensions of c.25 yards by 20 yards. The walls are 4 yards thick. The fort does not show a platform. An entrance gateway is shown on the western side and two lookout posts are shown.

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: ‘An accompt of what new forts wee have lately built and where, what old ones repaired and the changes wee have beene at to doe the same’: ‘At Musketa Bay a new ffort, guardhouse, platforme and cisterne of lime and stone £543.10.3. Better guns are wanted for this ffort’.

19/3/1706 (PRO CO153/9): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: ‘I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair’d by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac’t...L. Codrington’s Fort repaired by me itt stands upon a point or ledg of rocks, commands the

narrows between St. Christopher's and Nevis...The ambusers upon each of the platforms, although the figures do not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'.

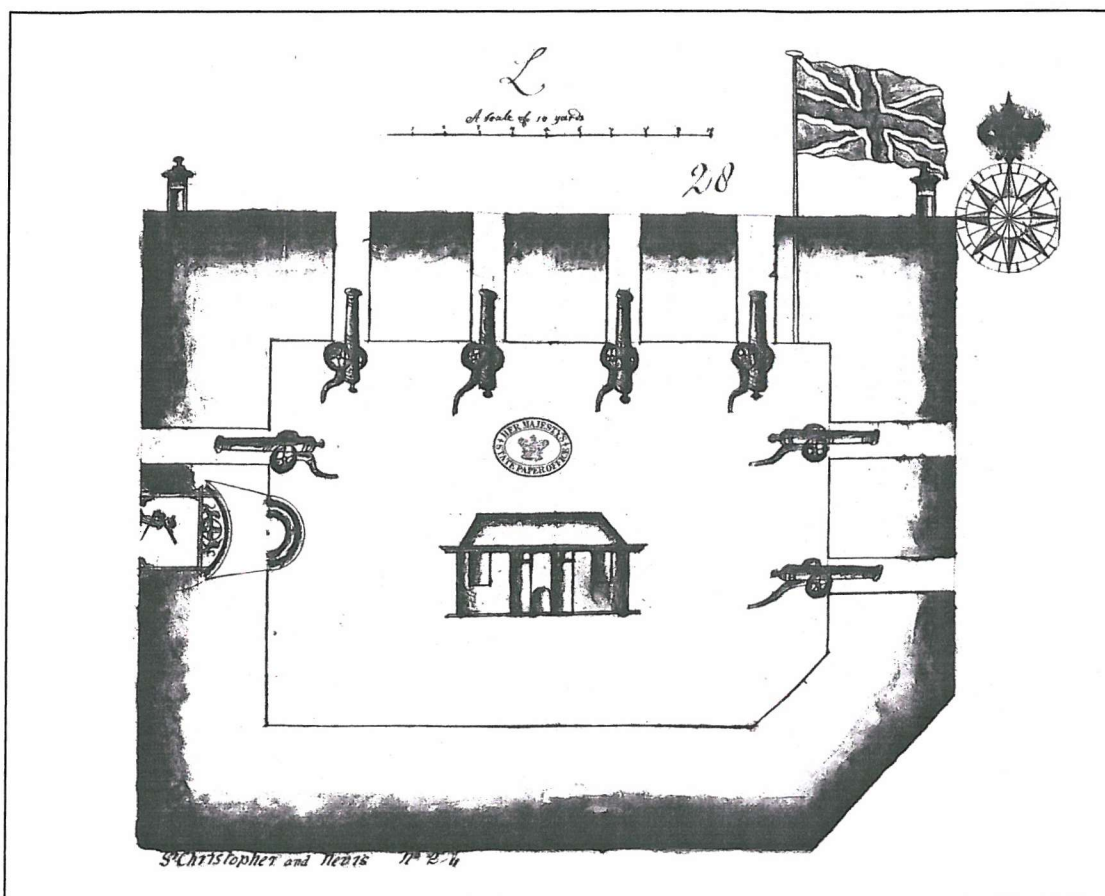


Figure C38b) Governor Johnson's plan of Codrington's Fort, 1705

15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: 'An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores': 'Musketo Poynt fort has two sakers'.

1/9/1715 (PRO CO152/11): Fort Inventory: 'Musketo Platforme one culverin'.

14/1/1723 (PRO CO186/1): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: '...this island to be put in the best posture of defence...we therefore have ordered four guards out of His Majesty's regular troops viz. at Long Point, Pelican Point, Black Rock and Musquitta Point and since these troops cannot subsist without provisions...supply each man with 1lb beef and 1lb bread per day'.

3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): 'An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platformes in this island': 'Muskitto Bay fort guns dismantled, one platform with five sakers'.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...at Musqueto Point is a 12lber, an 8lber and a 6lber all three dismantled'.

1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin': 'Battery of three pieces' shown at position C (Fig. C1f). This map appears to be a copy of the earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.

- 23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/31/11): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Musketo Point battery: two 6lbers in good condition'.
- 23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/49/21): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Musketo Point battery: two 6lbers in good condition'.
- 1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'Still further to the north about two miles [from Morton's Bay] is another battery called Musketto Point fort in a most ruinous condition on which are five small cannon, two only fit for service, those 6lbers, without carriages'.
- 20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'Still further to the north about two miles [from Morton's Bay] is another battery called Musketto Point fort in a most ruinous condition on which are five small cannon, two only fit for service, those 6lbers, without carriages'.
- 15/6/1778 (PRO CO152/66): Minutes of the Council and Assembly of Nevis: 'To be added to Muskitt Bay battery four 8lb cannon complete with carriages and four carriages of 6lb cannon now in the battery and two hundred round shot for them'.
- 1868 (PRO CO187/42): Blue Book: 'Forts and Batteries: There are 4 detached parcels of land in this island dedicated to the purposes of fortification...In St. Thomas, there is also another battery called Hurrican Hill but it is wholly devoid of artillery'.
- 1869 (PRO CO187/43): Blue Book: The forts, Saddle Hill and Hurricane Hill, situated, the former on the confines of the parishes of St. John and St. George and the latter in the parish of St. Thomas are quite overgrown with brush wood and cover and area of about 30 acres'.

C 38.4 Descriptions from other sources:

- 2/3/1982 (NARCH): Letter from Franklin K. Paddock: Paddock records two cannon, one on the shore and one within the fort.

C 38.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

- 14/12/1672 (PRO CO1/29/161, CSP1669-1674, 987): 'The present state of the Leeward Islands' by Sir Charles Wheler: 'From Pellicans Point to Musketi Bay is all the leeward side of the island about five English mile in length, for the defence of which there are about thirty pieces of cannon mounted upon the platforms of Pellicans Point, the old rock, the old fort, Duke's Sconce, Morton's Bay and if I had stayed I would have raised one at Musketi Bay it being the best landing of the leeward side especially from St. Christopher...In the time of the warr the inhabitants did by the hands of their slaves run a line all along the coast, but I had persuaded them to make little redoubts, shut up as well to the land as to the sea that they might doe with the same expense of hands as their long line, because their line being very slight and without a trench (for I saw the ruins of it) an enemy would passe it anywhere which would endanger the losse of ye island, in regard their men were extended five mile in length and that an enemy might be landing at ye same time all along; but

since my coming away I think they are distracted from it and will runne their slight line without any fastness except that of Pellican Point, by reason it is on high land, in a kinde of promontary all the other platformes being open’.

25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: ‘Musketo Bay, extremely out of order, three large minion guns lying in the middle of the bay. They want carriages. Tis the opinion of the Council of War that two of said guns ought to be mounted upon the north of the bay being a very advantageous place and the other with an addition of one or two more to be placed at the south end of the bay where some guns were formerly’.

?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P 5): ‘Battery of three cannon’ shown (Fig. C1c).

?1703 (NARCH): ‘Par Beauvilliers’ French Intelligence Map: ‘Battery of three cannon’ shown (Fig. C1d).

c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): ‘A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty’s island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty’s Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereigne lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep’: ‘Codrington’s fort made to hold twelve guns, with five guns viz. two 9lbers, three 6lbers, 3½ barrels powder, twelve 9lb shot, thirty six 6lb shot, thirty 3lb shot, three rammers, two ladles, two wad hooks, two sheepskins, one powder horn and one lanthorn’.

15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: ‘An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores’: ‘Musketa Poynt fort has two sakers’.

1/9/1715 (PRO CO152/11): Fort Inventory: ‘Musketo Platforme one culverin’.

3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): ‘An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island’: ‘Muskitto Bay fort guns dismounted, one platform with five sakers’.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: ‘...at Musqueto Point is a 12lber, an 8lber and a 6lber all three dismounted’.

1758 (NARCH) ‘Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin’: ‘Battery of three pieces’ shown at position C (Fig. C1f). This map appears to be a copy of the earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/31/11): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: ‘The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands’: Upon Musketo Point battery: two 6lbers in good condition’.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/49/21): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: ‘The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands’: Upon Musketo Point battery: two 6lbers in good condition’.

1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): ‘A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis’: ‘Still further to the north about two miles [from Morton’s Bay] is another battery called Musketto Point fort in a most ruinous condition on which are five small cannon, two only fit for service, those 6lbers, without carriages’.

20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'Still further to the north about two miles [from Morton's Bay] is another battery called Musketto Point fort in a most ruinous condition on which are five small cannon, two only fit for service, those 6lbbers, without carriages'.

15/6/1778 (PRO CO152/66): Minutes of the Council and Assembly of Nevis: 'To be added to Muskitt Bay battery four 8lb cannon complete with carriages and four carriages of 6lb cannon now in the battery and two hundred round shot for them'.

1868 (PRO CO187/42): Blue Book: 'Forts and Batteries: There are 4 detached parcels of land in this island dedicated to the purposes of fortification...In St. Thomas, there is also another battery called Hurrican Hill but it is wholly devoid of artillery'.

C 38.6 Evidence for manning:

14/1/1723 (PRO CO186/1): President and Council to Assembly of Nevis: '...this island to be put in the best posture of defence...we therefore have ordered four guards out of His Majesty's regular troops viz. at Long Point, Pelican Point, Black Rock and Musquitta Point and since these troops cannot subsist without provisions...supply each man with 1lb beef and 1lb bread per day'.

C 38.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 38.8 Archaeological evidence:



Figure C38c) Codrington's Fort during excavation, 1998 (Photo: P. Rookley)

This fort, first seen by the author in June 1996, has been extensively excavated and rebuilt since this date (Figs. C38c & C38d). The landowner, with good intent, wished to preserve the fort for future generations. Unfortunately, what has been built on the site does not appear to represent the original structure, with little recoverable information available from the non-contextually recorded artefacts found.

In the 1980s the remains of a further building stood to the east of the current structures. The landowner did not draw a plan of this building, but a description follows. This building was described as being 6.4m by 4.4m, with three steps of 2.4m wide by 0.3m high each. The interior to the south comprised a flat, mortared base with the northern half comprising a 'cellar' of 3m by 4.4m dimensions. This cellar had 'arrow slits' measuring 15cm width on the exterior and 60cm on the interior. This building was pulled down and rebuilt on a larger scale, with a swimming pool built 'where the cellar used to be' (Holland 2000b).

A friend of the landowner (Mr Peter Rookley) made a plan of the remains as they stood in May 1995, prior to excavation by the Nevis Historical and Conservation Society of the gun platform in 1997/8 (Fig. C38e). The author revisited the site in May 1999 and February and May 2000 whilst building was still being undertaken. When visited in October 2000, the site had been finished with the reconstructed fort representing a facsimile of the design shown in Johnson's plan of 1705 (Figs. C38a & C38f).

The lower platform, as at May 1995, comprised the remains of a 0.6m wide wall running along the south-eastern cliff edge for c.17m. About 5m to the north-east of this wall a low (c.0.5m) retaining wall ran parallel to it (Fig. C38e). The area in between these walls was excavated in 1997/8 and a flag stone floor was uncovered. This floor, made of local volcanic squared stone blocks, was found to extend over the whole area between the walls.



Figure C38d) Codrington's Fort, under construction, February 2000

The upper structure, measuring c.11m by 5.5m, was located upslope to the north-east of the retaining wall (Fig. C38g). This structure had four low 'windows' c.1.2m wide and 0.5m up from ground level, on the north-eastern face. The most westerly of these apertures was lower than the others, having only

two courses below the sill as opposed to three. The stone work of this structure had been carried out using irregular rounded mortared facing with a rubble and mortar core. Small stone chips had been inserted between the stones where the stones were of a particularly awkward shape. The walls were again c.0.6m thick. In the western face, a faced break in the wall evidenced a possible doorway with a series of mortar 'bases' suggesting the presence of steps down to the lower platform.

To the north-east of this structure, the owner has constructed a small building, 'the powder store', for use as a museum. This building apparently follows the trace of foundations located by the owner, however, these were not immediately apparent on the 1995 plan and from photographs appear to have been excavated at a later date. Within the building a mortar floor (Fig. C38h), similar to that seen at the Newcastle Redoubt was visible, laid directly onto bedrock, and existing c.0.5m below ground level. It is difficult, without further evidence, to suggest a precise form, or date, for this structure. It would seem possible that this structure represents a magazine, and in this scenario would almost certainly pre-date the 'guardhouse', probably as a structure associated with the earlier 'en barbette' gun platform.

C 38.8.2 Construction phasing at Codrington's Fort

At Codrington's fort, the reconstructed fort has been built under the assumption that the north arrow on Johnson's plan is incorrect. However, the author believes this interpretation to be false. On the fort, the phases of construction are far more complex than those suggested by the reconstruction. Although the reconstructed fort has been built according to Johnson's plan, the reconstruction has turned the fort almost 180° counter clockwise from its plan alignment. However, upon examination of the 1995 plan another scenario can be postulated which may explain the apparently incorrect north point on the plan.

Above the gun platform, the rectangular building known as the guardhouse (Fig. C28f) has been refaced during reconstruction. This building was seen by the author in June 1996 and has changed very little, apart from the addition of a path up to the structure, since its restoration in 2000. With four low apertures in its northern wall, this building has an apparent doorway, leading to steps, on its north-western wall.

The north-western, north-eastern, and south-eastern walls all form right angles with each other, however, the south-western wall is shown on the 1995 plan as leading off from the eastern wall at an oblique angle (Fig. C38e). On the northern side of the doorway, a step down suggests the possibility of a further aperture. A similar step down can be seen on the south-eastern wall, although too little of this wall survives to be certain of the structure.

From the above information, if one compares this building/structure with Johnson's plan for Codrington's fort, the similarities are too marked to be coincidence. This would make the alignment of Johnson's plan correct. It would also explain the absence of gun embrasures on the gun platform present in May 1996, despite their definite presence being marked on Johnson's plan.

The dimensions of this structure, at 11.6 by 7 yards, however, would be far too small. But, if again (as has been discussed in Section 5.2.4.2) the scale on the plan is wrong, then when treated as feet, the dimensions of Johnson's plan would be almost identical. As well as the comparable features of oblique wall, northern doorway, four northern low apertures and the correct compass alignment, the width of the structure, at sixteen feet, would be sufficient to allow the recoil of small cannon.

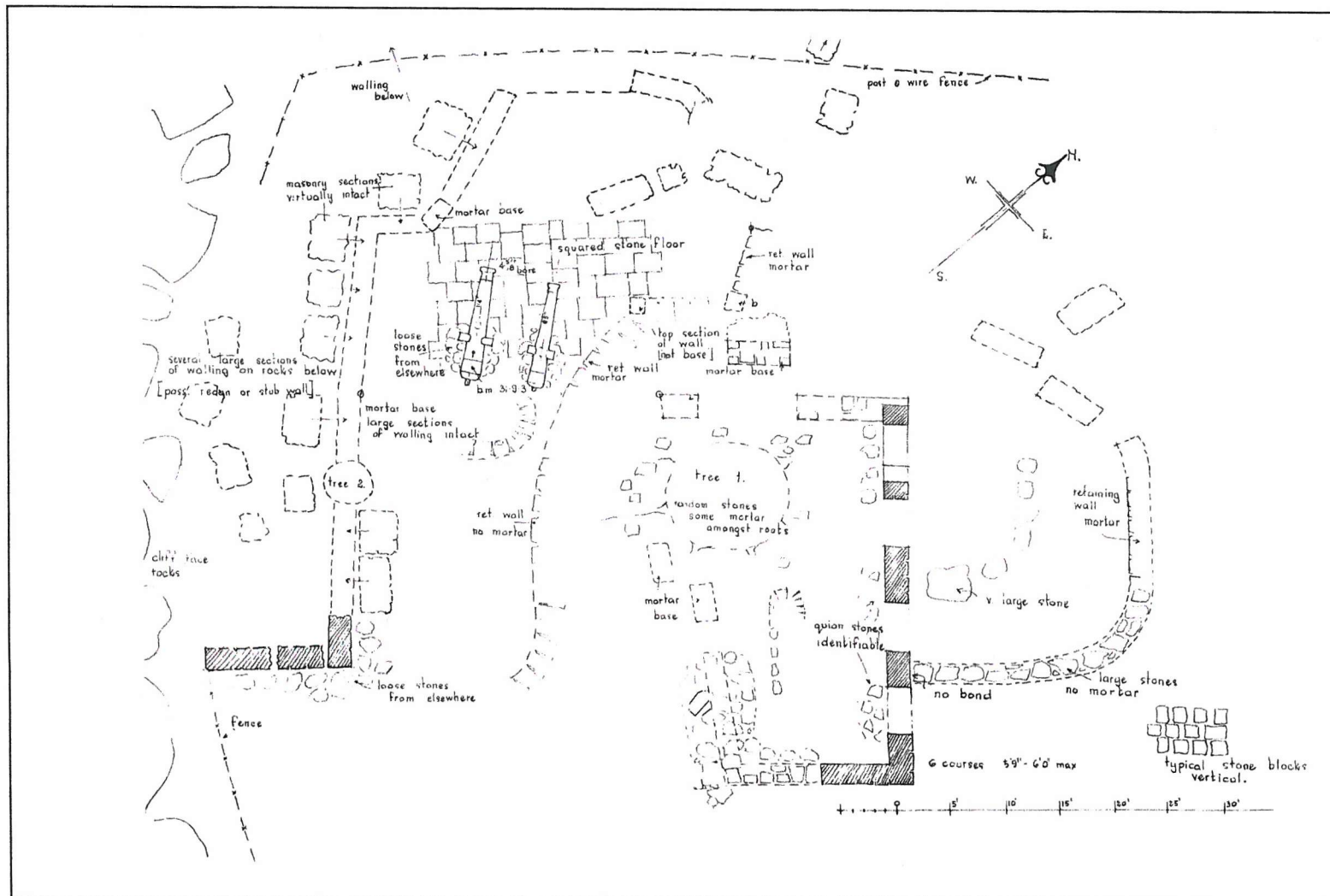


Figure C38e) Plan of Codrington's Fort, May 1995 (Illustration by P. Rookley)

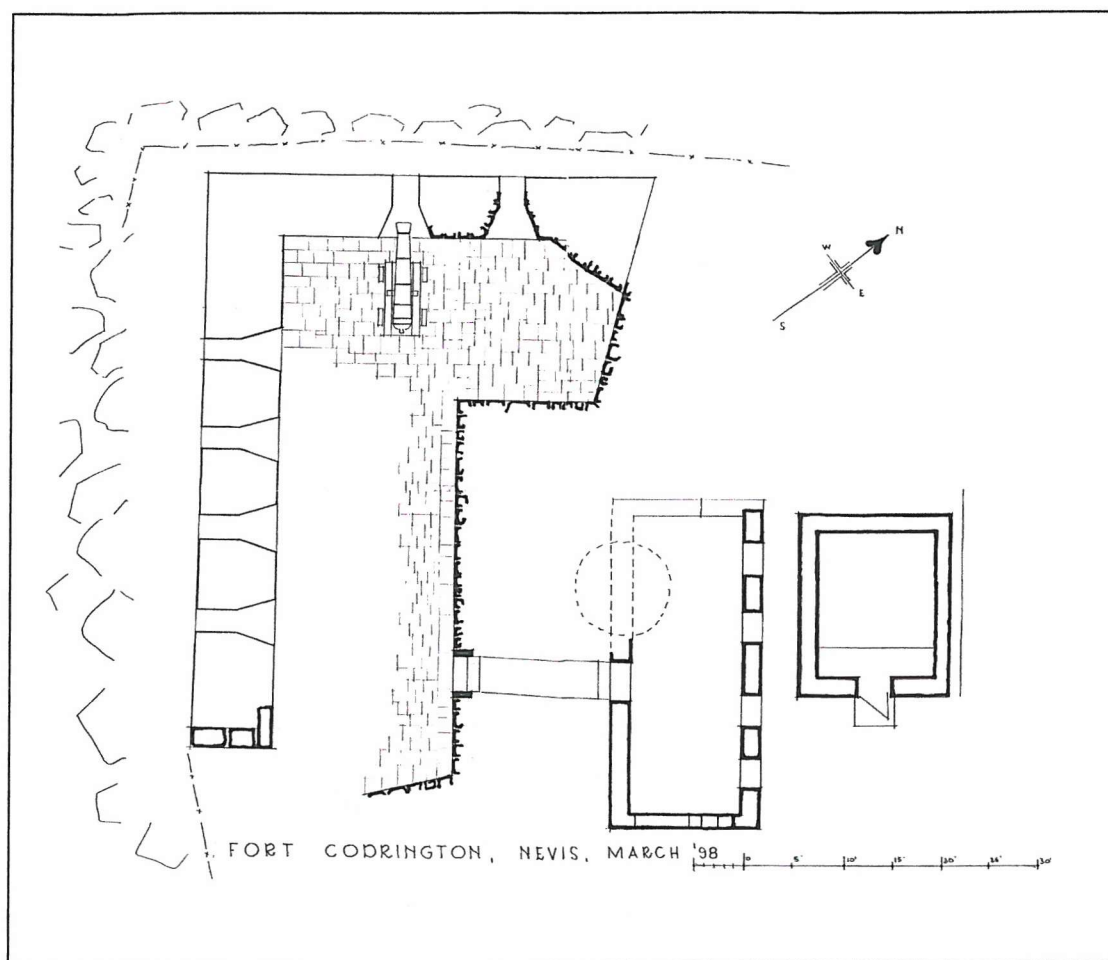


Figure C38f) Plan of Codrington's Fort as rebuilt (Illustration by P. Rookley)



Figure C38g) The 'guardhouse' following reconstruction



Figure C38h) Interior of 'powder magazine' showing mortar floor

In this scenario, the lower, 'en barbette', gun platform would be the earliest fort on the site. It is probable that the reconstructed 'powder magazine' was contemporary with this structure, the presence of a mortar floor being laid directly onto bedrock being paralleled by the same technique at the early period Newcastle Redoubt.

In the early 1700s, this powder magazine would have been demolished and the south-western wall cut through for the foundations of Johnson's additional upper gun platform. It is possible that the powder magazine was repositioned to the location of the current swimming pool and was built to contain, not only a magazine but also a guardhouse, hence the compartmentalised nature of the structure recorded by the landowner.

This interpretation would provide a simple gun platform and magazine in its earliest phase, with all-round gun cover being provided in the early 1700s. To support this interpretation further, Johnson's account of his work on the fort from 1705 (John Johnson, PRO CO152/6: 15/9/1705) describes how he has *repaired* the fort, suggesting the presence of another structure on the site in advance of his building works.

Although the above interpretation appears probable, the excavation of the site and its subsequent reconstruction and restoration has removed all traces of the earlier fort. With no contextual information recorded during the excavation, all that remains is the 1995 pre-restoration plan (Fig. C38e). This plan and the author's visit to the site in 1996 would appear to support the above interpretation, however, without further information, the precise history and archaeology of Codrington's fort is likely to remain uncertain.

C 38.9 Artefactual evidence:

Several hundred artefacts were recovered during the excavations of 1997/8 (Holland 2000b). However, none of these artefacts were recorded or quantified contextually and the wide range of types and dates present (17th-19th centuries) makes close analysis difficult: the artefacts must be examined as an unstratified assemblage. The collection remains unsystematically analysed, and time was not available during this study to carry out more than a brief examination of the material. Further work will be necessary on this collection before any definite conclusions can be reached.

A range of pottery including Afro-Caribbean (Colono-ware), blue and white transfer prints, creamwares, stonewares, tin-glazed earthenwares, slipwares, etc have been recovered ranging in date from the 17th to 19th centuries. A large quantity of bottle glass including some from onion bottles, square case bottles and a Dutch cherry brandy bottle was recovered along with other bottle glass ranging in date from the early 18th to 20th centuries. Clay pipes from the mid 18th century onwards were also recovered.



Figure C38i) Cannon at Codrington's Fort

A range of iron work including nails, belt buckles, and horseshoes, an apparent flag pole holder and a flat iron were also recovered. Five buttons, three brass and two bone, ranging in date from the 18th to mid 19th century were also found. At least one of these, from the early 19th century is thought to be a military uniform button. Four musket balls and two Stang bullets were also found along with four cannon balls of unrecorded type. A fragment from a military chin-strap was also located.

Two cannon are also present on the site (Figs. C38i & C38j). The first, an English 'Rose and Crown' 9lber of 10 feet, has 31-0-3 weight marked on the barrel. This was cast by P. Gott in 1702. In 1982 this cannon had lain on the beach below the fort and must have been lifted to its current location at a later date. The other cannon, an English demi-culverin of 7 feet dates to c.1660, however little more could be discerned from this gun unless it could be turned over (Trollope 2000).

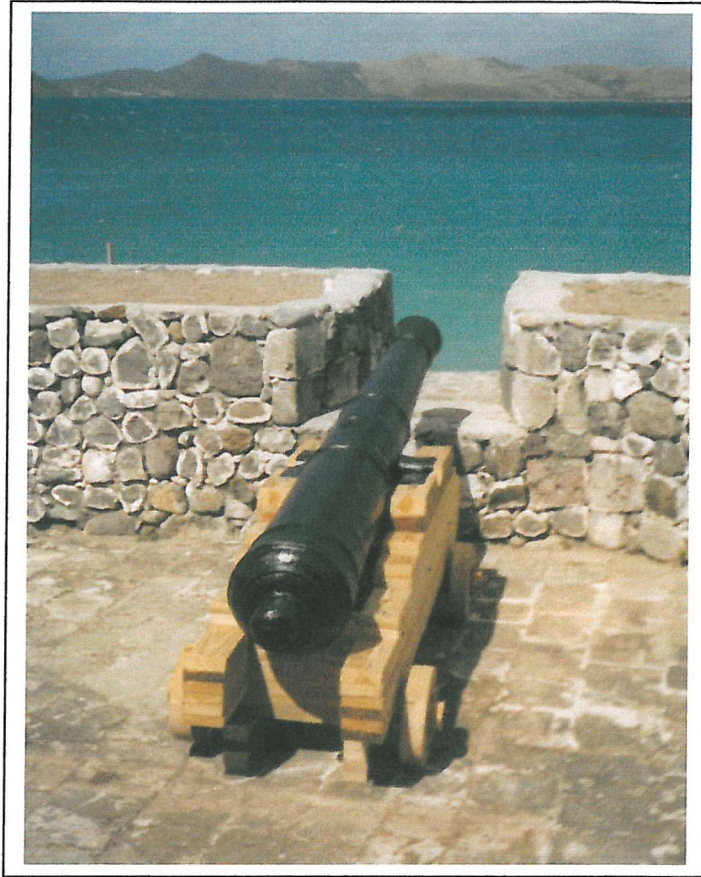


Figure C38j) The 9lber, newly painted and mounted on the reconstructed Fort Codrington, 2000 (Photo: P Rookley)

Until 1997, this site remained one of the best preserved forts on Nevis. Its location out of reach of the sea offered the possibility of stratified artefacts and in situ recording of activity at the fort. The reconstruction and excavation on the site since this date, despite being carried out with the best of intentions by the owner, has removed the possibility of examining this site further. The reconstruction raises many questions about the implementation of heritage management and preservation strategies on Nevis, questions that must be addressed so that this sort of excavation and reconstruction can be carried out within a more regulated framework (see Chapter 7).

However, even in its present condition, the fort does offer the chance for people to visit a historic fort site and to gain some idea of what the Nevis forts would once have looked like. Therefore, despite its archaeological negativity, the fort's value now lies in raising the profile of these fragile structures.

C 39 Round Hill

C 39.1 Notes:

This battery, the smallest Johnson period fort in Nevis, was first built as a platform in 1701. In 1705, Johnson rebuilt the fort. By 1734 the platform had only two 6lbbers, which were described as not fit for service.



Figure C39a) Aerial photograph showing location of Round Hill Battery (Photo: R. Leech).

C 39.2 Grid ref.: W 62° 36' 03", N 17° 12' 14"

C 39.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

7/1701 (PRO CO152/4): Council of Nevis Minutes: 'Upon motion of the Lt. Governor that a list of artillery stores that are wanting to be drawn and deliver'd him to send to his Excellency...the following list was accordingly drawn; two hundred good firelocks, four very long sakers, six 12lbbers and six 18lbbers of the longest size to lye in the forts as followeth: three guns for Long Point fort, four for Charles Fort, two for Black Rock fort, two for Old Road fort three for James fort, two for Round Hill platform. A sufficient quantity of shot fit for them'.

?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P5): French Intelligence Map: 'Battery of four cannon' shown (Fig. C1c).

?1703 (NARCH): 'Par Beauvilliers' French Intelligence Map: 'Battery of four cannon' shown (Fig. C1d).

c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): 'A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty's island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in

Chief of all her Majesty's Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereign lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot deep': 'Round Hill fort made to hold six guns, with five guns viz. two 6lbers, two 3lbers, one 2lber [no stores of any kind]'.

15/9/1705 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1704-5, 1344): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...M. Round Hill fort erected by me the wings from it is a dry ditch of thirty foot broad and twelve foot deep with a sodd breastwork which commands it, the demention are the same as E, F, G and H. The ambusiers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'.

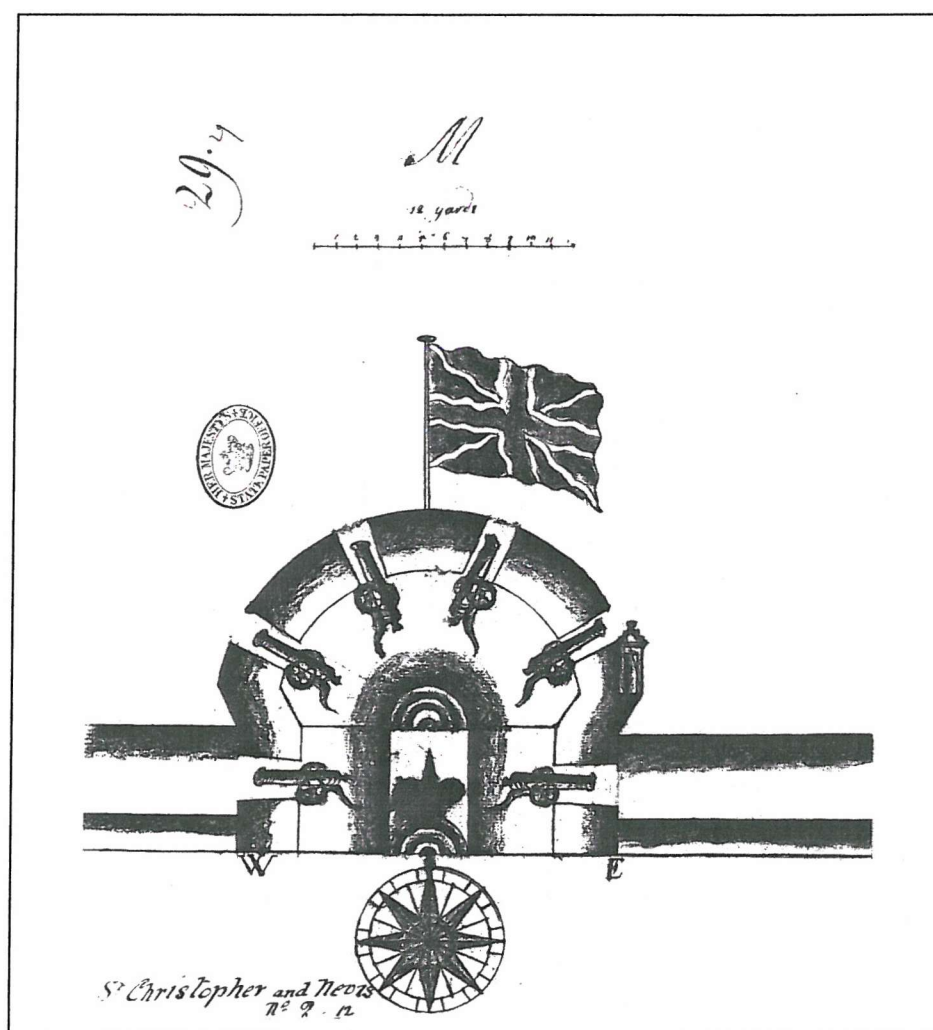


Figure C39b) Governor Johnson's plan of Round Hill Battery, 1705

15/9/1705 (PRO CO700 ST.CHRISTOPHER AND NEVIS/2): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: Johnson's fort plans show a crescent shaped small battery with protruding wings on the east and west (Fig. C39b). There are six embrasures shown. The dimensions of the fort are c.20

yards by 16 yards. The walls are 3 yards thick and the platform is 5 yards wide. One lookout post is shown. A step entrance is shown on the southern side.

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'An accompt of what new forts wee have lately built and where, what old ones repaired and the changes wee have beene at to doe the same': 'At Round Hill bay a new ffort built and must have a guardhouse, platforme and cisterne of stone and lime. Changes hath and will be £850'.

19/3/1706 (PRO CO153/9): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...M. Round Hill fort erected by me the wings from it is a dry ditch of thirty foot broad and twelve foot deep with a sodd breastwork which commands it, the demention are the same as E, F, G and H. The ambusers upon each of the platforms, although the figures doe not show it, are two foot and a half within side and fourteen foot without'.

15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: 'An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores': 'Round Hill Bay fort has one saker and two minions'.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...at Round Hill bay battery are two 6lbers but not fit for service'.

1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin': 'Battery of four pieces of cannon shown at position B (Fig. C1f). This map appears to be a copy of the earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.

C 39.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 39.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

7/1701 (PRO CO152/4): Council of Nevis Minutes: 'Upon motion of the Lt. Governor that a list of artillery stores that are wanting to be drawn and deliver'd him to send to his Excellency...the following list was accordingly drawn; two hundred good firelocks, four very long sakers, six 12lbers and six 18lbers of the longest size to lye in the forts as followeth: three guns for Long Point fort, four for Charles Fort, two for Black Rock fort, two for Old Road fort three for James fort, two for Round Hill platform. A sufficient quantity of shot fit for them'.

?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P5): French Intelligence Map: 'Battery of four cannon' shown (Fig. C1c).

?1703 (NARCH): 'Par Beauvilliers' French Intelligence Map: 'Battery of four cannon' shown (Fig. C1d).

c.1705 (PRO CO154/5): 'A list of all the forts and fortifications in her Majesty's island of Nevis now all finished whereof ten of them were built by the Honourable John Johnson, Esq. Commander in Chief of all her Majesty's Leeward Caribbee Islands in America in the 3rd and 4th years of the reign of our sovereigne lady Queen Anne, each of said new forts being twenty foot high from the foundation and fifteen foot thick with a large trench around them of forty foot broad and ten foot

deep': 'Round Hill fort made to hold six guns, with five guns viz. two 6lbers, two 3lbers, one 2lber [no stores of any kind]'.

15/12/1707 (PRO CO152/7): James Milliken: 'An account of what ordnance mounted and what not mounted with all other stores': 'Round Hill Bay fort has one saker and two minions'.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...at Round Hill bay battery are two 6lbers but not fit for service'.

1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin': 'Battery of four pieces of cannon shown at position B (Fig. C1f). This map appears to be a copy of the earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.

C 39.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 39.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 39.8 Archaeological evidence:



Figure C39c) Photo of Round Hill battery, looking north to St. Kitts

This fort was located during the walkover survey of May 1999. A taped plan (Figs. C39a, C39c & C39d) and photographic record was made at this time. The site comprises a low turf bank c.26m by 9m. At the western end and traces of stonework in the bank suggest that it was revetted with a stone wall on the southern face.

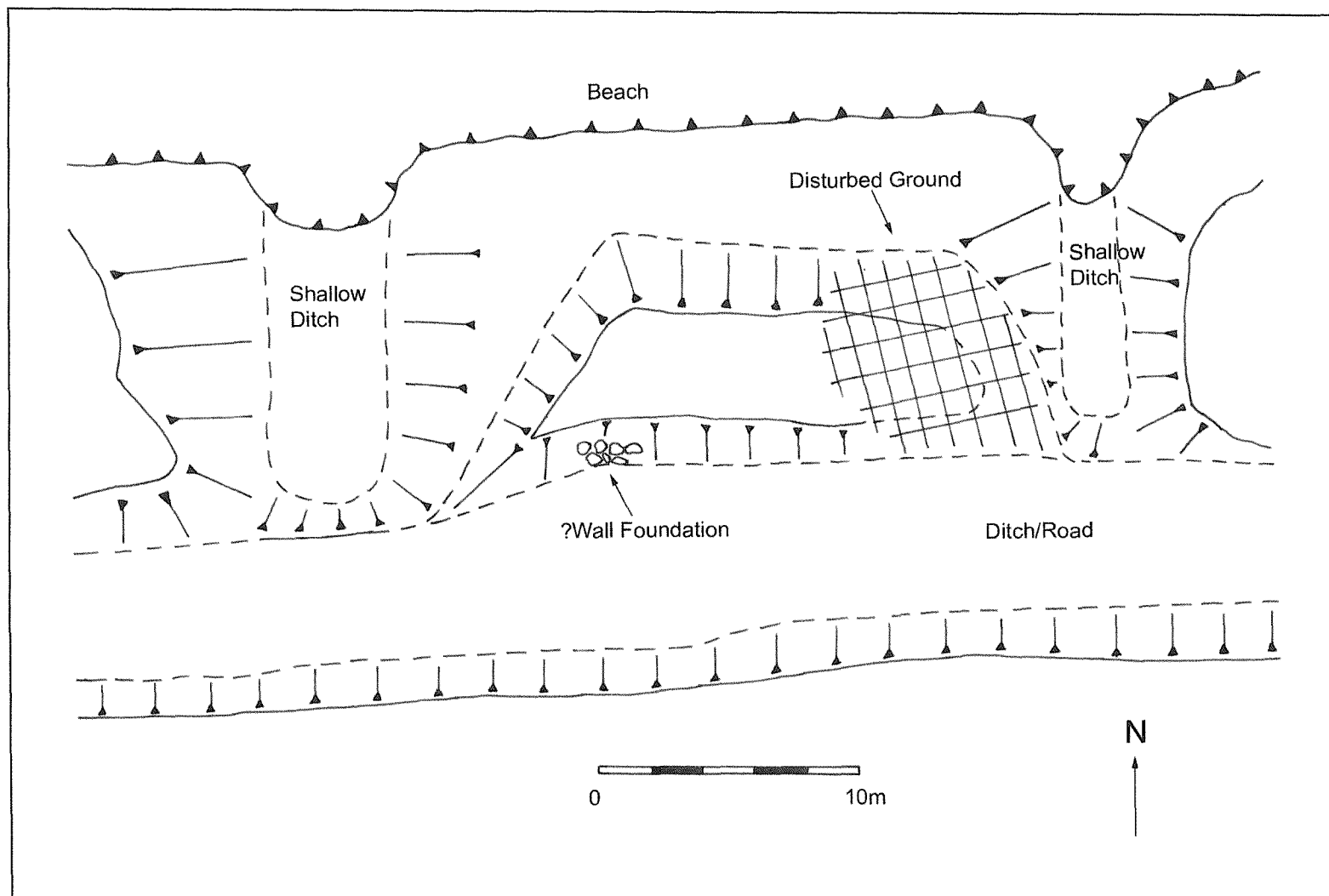


Figure C39d) Site Plan of Round Hill Battery, May 2000.

To the east and west of the bank, two shallow ditches c.3m wide can be seen. It is possible that these ditches are the result of the bank construction, with soil being taken from them to build the mound. Running east to west behind the mound, a hollow-way/road/ditch can be seen. This 'road' is 6-7m wide and, from aerial photographs (Fig. C39a) can be seen extending from the coast road to the east, running parallel to the coast along Round Hill Bay, and continuing west towards Hurricane Hill.

C 39.9 Artefactual evidence:

A small, unidentified cannon in private hands at Clay Ghut is thought to have come from this area and a further cannon from this area in a private garden in the Golden Rock area has been identified as an English falcon of 4 feet. It is dated to c.1690 and is a typical merchant ship gun of the period (Trollope 2000).

C 39.10 Discussion:

The dimensions of the mound, allowing for erosion, compare very favourably with those shown in Johnson's plans of 1705. This little battery is very different from all others so far located on Nevis. Built mainly from turf, it is probable that the structure now visible is the only surviving example of a fort built within the entrenchments that ran the length of the coast. In recent times the ditch/road behind the mound was used as a road, and it is likely that, like Cotton Ground (see C43.8.3), this feature served a dual purpose as a military 'covered way' and domestic road.

C 40 Newcastle Redoubt

C 40.1 Notes:

This small, square redoubt, was described as old in 1706, but a definite date for construction cannot be ascertained. A date in the mid 17th century seems likely.



Figure C40a) The Newcastle Redoubt from the north

C 40.2 Grid ref.: W 62° 35' 15", N 17° 12' 16"

C 40.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P5)

French Intelligence Map: 'Redoubt at the northern point' shown (Fig. C1c).

?1703 (NARCH): 'Par Beauvilliers' French Intelligence Map: 'Redoubt at the northern point' shown (Fig. C1d).

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'An accompt of what new forts wee have lately built and where, what old ones repaired and the changes wee have beene at to doe the same': 'Repairing the old stone ffort at Newcastle will cost at least £300'.

31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...the north east is inaccessible from a ridge of rocks that cover it at about half a mile or lesser distance from the shore except at a little decay'd town on the north side of this island call'd Newcastle where is a small channel for sloops to come in under a pilots care'.

- 1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin':
 'Redoubt at the northern point with six pieces of cannon' shown at position A (Fig. C1f). This map appears to be a copy of the earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.
- 1871 (BL 10470.i.7): An account descriptive of the island of Nevis, West Indies by John Alexander Burke Isles (JP and late Colonial Secretary of the island): '...the aboriginal Carib, whose sole mausoleum is to be seen at the extreme north of the island where the remains of a small crenellated building still exist through which they shot their last arrows and died in the hope of that bright reversion of which heaven itself had never bereft the savage beast'.

C 40.4 Descriptions from other sources:

- 1999: Morris, E. L., Read, R., James, S. E. and Machling, T. 1999. ' "...the Old Stone Ffort at Newcastle..." The Redoubt, Nevis, Eastern Caribbean'. *Post-Medieval Archaeology*. **33**: 194-221.
- 1990: Smith, V.T.C. 1990. *Newcastle Tower, Nevis*: Letter to Nevis Historical and Conservation Society.

C 40.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

- ?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P5)
 French Intelligence Map: 'Redoubt at the northern point' shown (Fig. C1c).
- ?1703 (NARCH): 'Par Beauvilliers' French Intelligence Map: 'Redoubt at the northern point' shown (Fig. C1d).
- 1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin':
 'Redoubt at the northern point with six pieces of cannon' shown at position A (Fig. C1f). This map appears to be a copy of the earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.

C 40.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 40.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 40.8 Archaeological evidence:

In 1995 and 1996, this fort was fully recorded and trial excavated on the interior (Figs. C40c & C40d). The redoubt was 6.7m by 6.7m with a door (2m high by 1.22m wide) on the northern face (Fig. C40d). The walls were 0.85m thick, constructed of irregular stones with ashlar quoins at the door and on each corner. Two large loopholes (0.36-0.61m wide) were located c.3.m above ground level on all sides. On the east, south and west faces, three smaller loopholes (0.1-0.5m wide) were located 1.37m above ground level. The roof of the structure was crenellated. After excavation, a mortar floor, laid directly onto the undulating bedrock, was located.

Abutting, and to the east of, the main structure, a later building (Building A) existed at foundation level. This building had a flagged stone floor. At the south-eastern corner, a later cylindrical cistern had been

added. This cistern, which blocked the lower embrasures/loopholes, was built from ashlar stone facing blocks with a rubble core and would appear to have utilised the roof for water collection (Morris et al. 1999: 203). The date of both the cistern structure and Building A is uncertain.



Figure C40b) The Newcastle Redoubt from the south-east

C 40.9 Artefactual evidence:

A range of artefacts was recovered from the 1996 excavations. These included pottery, glass and metalwork. Unfortunately, due to disturbed stratigraphy, precise dating of the contexts excavated was not possible, and therefore a date range from 17th century-modern times is postulated.

The finds include 522 sherds of local pottery including Afro-Caribbean (Colono-ware) and some modern locally made ceramics. Fifty-nine sherds of imported pottery were found including 19th century blue and white transfer prints, 18th century tin-glazed earthenwares, 19th century polychrome sponged wares, 18th–19th century stonewares, 18th-19th century slipwares. Of particular interest were two sherds of 17th-18th century Spanish olive jars (Morris et al. 1999: 211).

Metalwork recovered included an 18th century pewter spoon handle, a lead perforated (?fishing) weight, a sheet from a copper alloy bowl and a copper alloy horseshoe nail. A large iron nail and 116 fragments of barrel-band were also found.

Bottle glass, including case bottles, was located dating from 18th century-modern times. Twenty-six pieces of bone from sheep/goat, chicken, fish and pig were recovered as well as a single bone button of probable 18th century date (Klippel and Schroedl 1999: 222). Several, unidentifiable, clay pipe stems were also found.

A cannon recovered from Newcastle beach in 1995 is now located at the Administration Building in Charlestown. This cannon, a civil pattern 9lber of 5 feet is based on John Armstrong's ordnance design and dates to c.1750 (Trollope 2000).

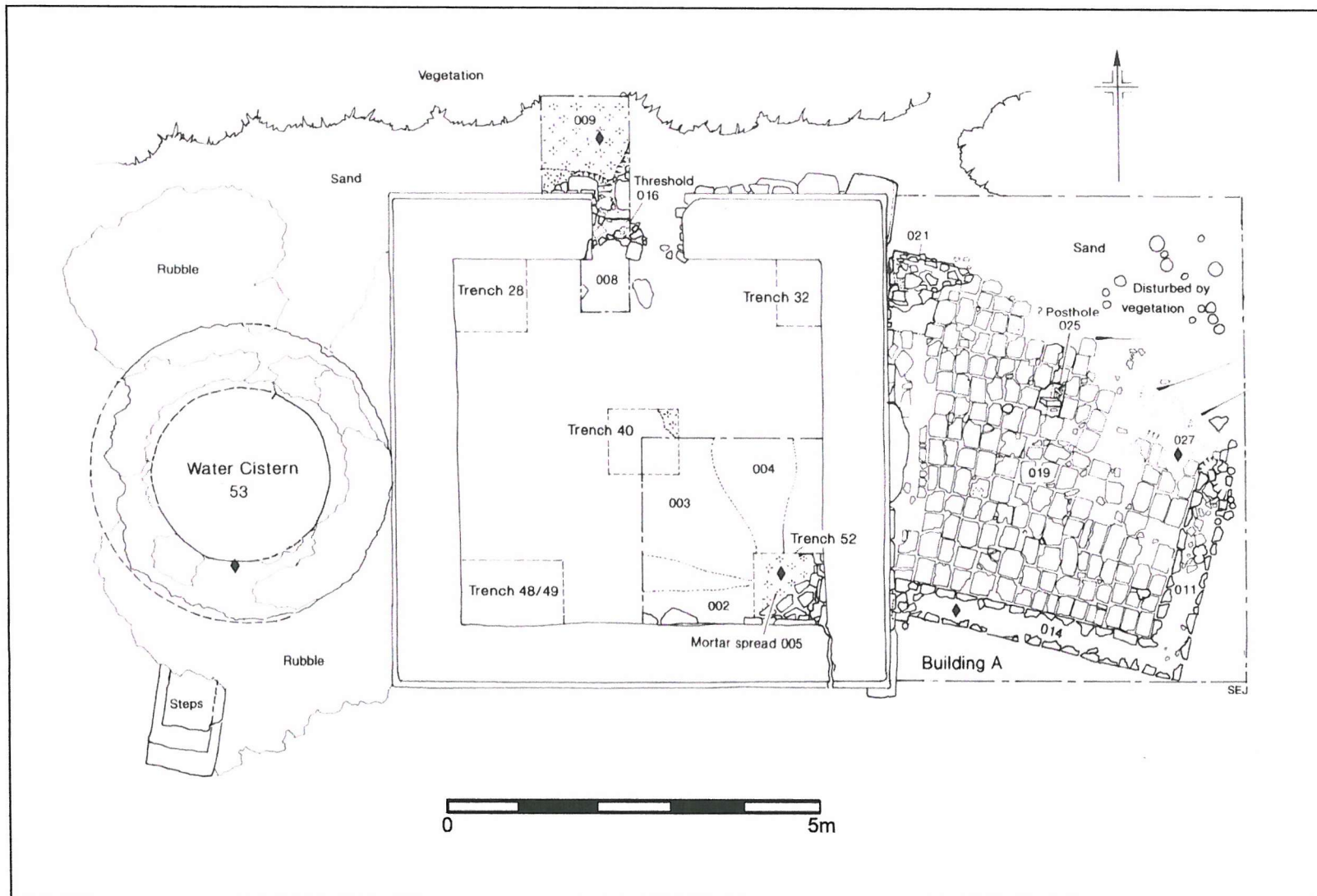


Figure C40c) Site plan of Newcastle Redoubt (after Morris et al, 1999).

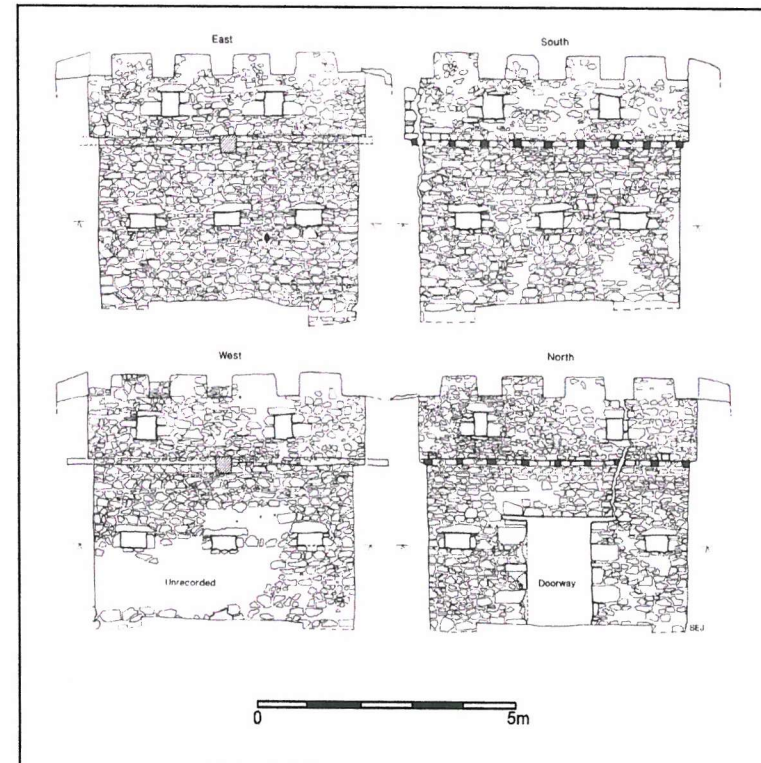
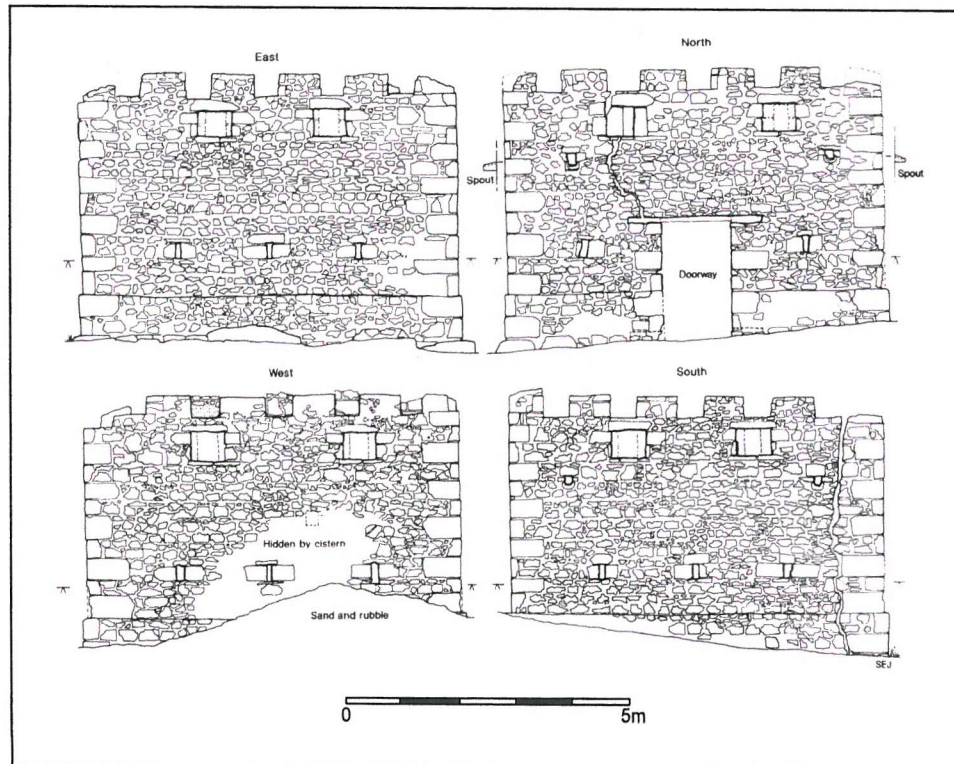


Figure C40d) Exterior (left) and interior (right) elevations (after Morris, et al 1999).

C 40.10 Discussion:

This small fort, excavated and recorded in June 1996, was demolished to make way for an airport runway, in November of that year. It is possible that this structure was one of the earliest forts in the Caribbean (Smith 1990) and the similarity to Bermuda's early 17th century forts (Harris 1986: 311) cannot be ignored. However, a definite date and use cannot be ascertained. Time did not allow for further investigation of the surrounding area and it is possible that other remains were located in the vicinity, which would help to elucidate this problem.

This fort was unique on the island of Nevis and as such its loss is tragic. The location of the fort close to Newcastle village, which itself showed evidence of early warehouses, etc. (unrecorded and now lost) showed a link between domestic and military life on Nevis, however, this connection cannot now be explored.

C 41 Saddle Hill

C 41.1 Notes:

This fort, first mooted in 1714, does not appear to have been finished until the 1740s. The fort is described as ruined by 1773, and it is likely that, even in the fort's hey-day, it was used as little more than a signalling and alarm gun position.

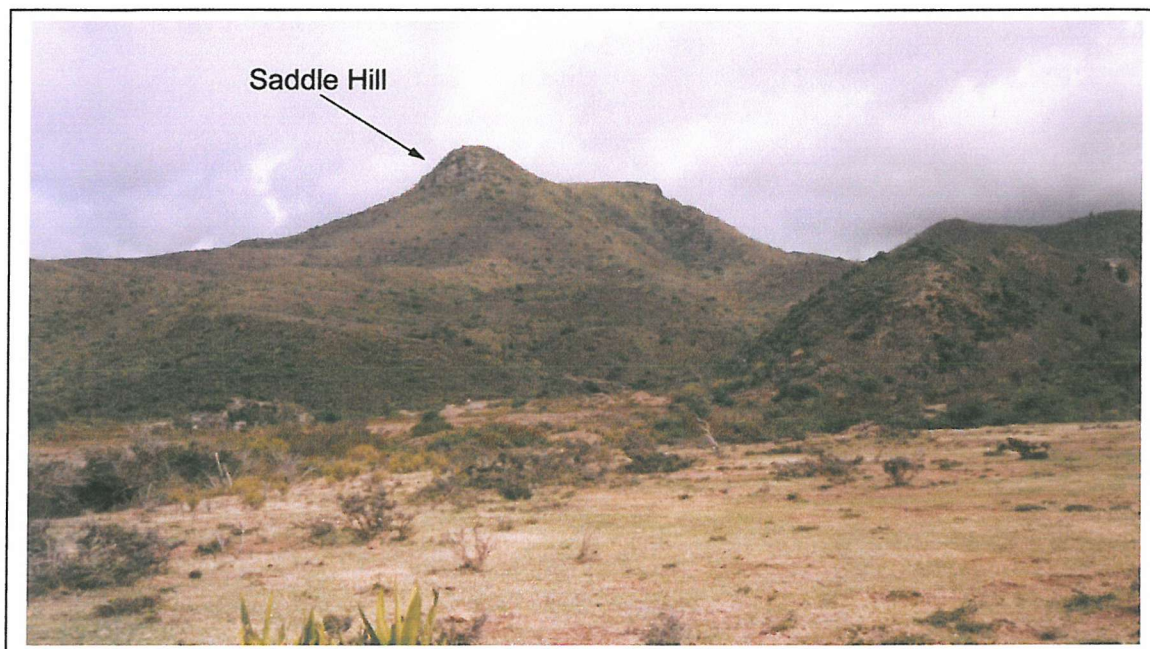


Figure C41a) Saddle Hill from the south

C 41.2 Grid ref: W 62° 34' 43", N 17° 07' 05"

C 41.3 Citations in maps and documents by date:

1714 (PRO CO185/2): Nevis Act: 'An act for raising and making a fortification on Saddle Hill'.

1/3/1716 (PRO CO152/10/82, CSP1716-7, 66): Mr. Secretary Stanhope to Council of Trade and Plantations:

'We your Majesty's most dutiful and loyal subjects having by sad experience found this island not tenable in time of war without an inland fortification have therefore thought it our duty and interest to set apart a small hill in this island to be well fortified in order to which we have by an act for raising and making a fortification on Saddle Hill bought some land on and near said hill for your Majesties use. But in regard the devastation made by the French in 1706, have render'd us most unable of our selves to go on with so great and good a work, the more for that no ingineer is here on any terms to be hired to lay out proper ground for walls, retrenchments or platforms, etc. or to direct in prosecution thereof; therefore we do in most humble manner become your Majesty's most humble supplicants for an ingineer and for stores'.

15/6/1722 (PRO CO186/1): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: Cost '...to hire a lookout for Saddle Hill £40'.

- 10/9/1722 (PRO CO186/1): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: A committee is to inspect Saddle Hill to see '...what works will be necessary'.
- 3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): 'An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island':
'Saddle Hill alarme guns dismounted three rabinetts'.
- 19/12/1732 (PRO CO186/2): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: In 1736, £840.8.6 was paid to about one hundred slave owners for work done by slave on Saddle Hill.
- 11/2/1734 (PRO CO152/20/116, CSP1734-5, 39): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I am under more apprehensions for Nevis than the other three islands...no inland fortification or retreat nor will provide any'.
- 31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations:
'...There is a hill in that island call'd Saddle Hill that is inaccessible by nature or with very little art might be made so and a very safe retreat for all the inhabitants and most of their effects if an enemy should drive them to it. Had they kept this when the French took the island, they had not probably lost a quarter as many negroes as they did as I observ'd before there was some years ago a summe rais'd and apply'd for fortifying this hill but they have spent the money and the hill is as twas'.
- 11/8/1735 (PRO CO186/2): Assembly to President and Council of Nevis: Although the Saddle Hill act has been passed, the Assembly suggest that the fort could be built somewhere else, e.g. Earles Mountain.
- 20/8/1735 (PRO CO186/2): Assembly to President and Council of Nevis: Saddle Hill is finally agreed upon as the site for the new fort, but the land has yet to be bought and will cost £500.
- 16/10/1735 (PRO CO152/22/39, CSP1735-6, 136): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'The inhabitants of Nevis have at last agreed to an inland fortification which I hope will hereafter preserve that island from a total conquest, preserve women and children and best effects and encourage the people to a vigorous defence. I have laid the works for this purpose at a place call'd Saddle Hill and they are actually carrying on as fast as the strength of that island can afford'.
- 18/12/1735 (PRO CO153/16): George Lord Forbes to William Mathew: 'We are glad to find that you have been able to prevail with the inhabitants of the island of Nevis to build a fortification for their own safety and defence and we hope soon to hear of its being completed'.
- 9/4/1736 (CSP1735-6, 285): William Mathew to Mr. Popple: 'The news of the peace has quite restored the people of Nevis to their usual indolence. The fortifying Saddle Hill which was carried on most vigorously for six months is now all over'.
- 17/3/1740 (PRO CO185/4): Nevis Act: 'An act for raising and making a fortification on Saddle Hill'. The inhabitants of Nevis are required '...to send a sufficient number of slaves with a bill and hook each'.
- 7/4/1740 (PRO CO153/16): Nevis Act: 'An act for raising and making a fortification on Saddle Hill'.
- 7/4/1740 (PRO CO154/6): Nevis Act: 'An act for raising and making a fortification on Saddle Hill'.
- 12/1740 (PRO CO186/3): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: Saddle Hill has still not been finished.
The slaves have been put back to work on it.
- 16/10/1742 (PRO CO152/24/145): William Mathew: 'A state of the Leeward Islands for their defence': This island is by much the weakest of the four. I prevailed upon them to fortify Saddle Hill and they went chearfully to work but a faction has prevailed and this work is quitted. They are told they are poor and cannot afford it: that tis a caprice of mine and unnecessary and yet they have born less

burthen by four fold than this island has in proportion to their estates and they were ruined for want of one...They are told discipline is the first step to tyranny'.

24/5/1744 (PRO CO186/3): Assembly to President and Council of Nevis: The Assembly wish to use the Saddle Hill money for repairs on the other forts.

1/11/1749 (PRO CO155/8): Council of Nevis Minutes: John Huggins to be discharged from lookout duty at Saddle Hill.

12/6/1764 (PRO CO186/5): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: Robert Huggins is the Gunner at Saddle Hill. He previously received £40 p.a. but the Council and Assembly have reduced this to £25 p.a. as it is now peace time.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/31/11): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Saddle Hill battery: two 6lbers much honeycombed.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/49/21): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: 'The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands': Upon Saddle Hill battery: two 6lbers much honeycombed.

1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'Within land is the ruins of an intended fortification called Saddle Hill on which are two very bad 6lbers used as alarm guns not mounted there are three other small cannon fixed in different situations also within land for the same purpose not mounted'.

20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): 'A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis': 'Within land is the ruins of an intended fortification called Saddle Hill on which are two very bad 6lbers used as alarm guns not mounted there are three other small cannon fixed in different situations also within land for the same purpose not mounted'.

26/9/1778 (PRO CO153/24): William Mathew Burt to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'In order that I might not be surprized, I had given orders to the island of Nevis on the appearance of a fleet, which they do not know, by day to fire three guns at five minutes distance from each other if by night to make two large fires; the one on Saddle Hill, the other at Pelican point'.

12/9/1778 (NARCH): Assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'First the gunner is to remain at Saddle Hill night and day and not to quit his post either night or day without leave obtained from the President. Second, the Gunner upon observing five vessels from a ship down to a sloop standing for this island shall fire two guns at the distance of time of two minutes between each gun and provided such vessles should be discovered after sunset then the gunner shall set fire to the pile now erected by way of bon fire in obedience to the General's directions'.

24/11/1778 (PRO CO186/7): William Mathew Burt to Council of Nevis: Mathew Burt wants them to use Saddle Hill and Pelican Point for alarm beacons.

7/12/1778 (PRO CO152/59/75): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: The Saddle Hill beacon has been maliciously lit. A reward of five 'Johannes' is offered for information on the person responsible.

30/4/1779 (PRO CO186/7): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: The Saddle Hill Gunner is to get a pay rise. A house is to be built for him in the fort and a flag staff and colours are to be bought to use for signals.

16/2/1782 (PRO CO152/62/190): John R. Herbert to General Shirley: 'On the first intelligence that we might expect an visit from the enemy I got up carriages for the two alarm guns at Saddle Hill and sent up

a quantity of amunition that I might at least take post there for a day or two if the inhabitants desired in case we were summoned to surrender at discretion’.

1861 (PRO CO187/35): Blue Book: ‘Hanley is Capt. Gunner at Saddle Hill.

1868 (PRO CO187/42): Blue Book: ‘Forts and Batteries: There are four detached parcels of land in this island dedicated to the purposes of fortification...On the southern confines of the parishes of St. John and St. George and on the crest of Saddle Hill there are 30 (probably 37 acres of land) on which were erected at different salient points, military masonry, cisterns, etc. This spot is now enveloped in thick and impenetrable jungle; these lands are peculiarly colonial in contradistinction to crown; they were purchased by the colonists at second hand from the Crown grantees. At best of times it appears only to have been mounted with three cannon’.

1869 (PRO CO187/43): Blue Book: The forts, Saddle Hill and Hurricane Hill, situated, the former on the confines of the parishes of St. John and St. George and the latter in the parish of St. Thomas are quite overgrown with brush wood and cover and area of about 30 acres’.

C 41.4 Descriptions from other sources:

8/1986 (NARCH): Notes concerning Saddle Hill Battery made by Vince Hubbard: Included in this pamphlet is a taped plan of the entire fortification complex (Fig. 41b).

C 41.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition:

3/10/1727 (PRO CO152/16/159): ‘An accompt of all his Majesties forts and platforms in this island’: ‘Saddle Hill alarme guns dismounted three rabinetts’.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/31/11): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: ‘The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands’: Upon Saddle Hill battery: two 6lbers much honeycombed.

23/2/1769 (PRO CO152/49/21): William Woodley to Earl of Hillsborough: ‘The state and condition of ordnance upon the forts and fortifications of the Leeward Islands’: Upon Saddle Hill battery: two 6lbers much honeycombed.

1/2/1773 (PRO CO152/32): ‘A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis’: ‘Within land is the ruins of an intended fortification called Saddle Hill on which are two very bad 6lbers used as alarm guns not mounted there are three other small cannon fixed in different situations also within land for the same purpose not mounted’.

20/4/1773 (PRO CO152/53/54): ‘A return of the forts and batteries in the island of Nevis’: ‘Within land is the ruins of an intended fortification called Saddle Hill on which are two very bad 6lbers used as alarm guns not mounted there are three other small cannon fixed in different situations also within land for the same purpose not mounted’.

26/9/1778 (PRO CO153/24): William Mathew Burt to Lords of Trade and Plantations: ‘In order that I might not be surprized, I had given orders to the island of Nevis on the appearance of a fleet, which they do not know, by day to fire three guns at five minutes distance from each other if by night to make two large fires; the one on Saddle Hill, the other at Pelican point’.

16/2/1782 (PRO CO152/62/190): John R. Herbert to General Shirley: 'On the first intelligence that we might expect an visit from the enemy I got up carriages for the two alarm guns at Saddle Hill and sent up a quantity of amunition that I might at least take post there for a day or two if the inhabitants desired in case we were summoned to surrender at discretion'.

1868 (PRO CO187/42): Blue Book: 'Forts and Batteries: There are four detached parcels of land in this island dedicated to the purposes of fortification... On the southern confines of the parishes of St. John and St. George and on the crest of Saddle Hill there are 30 (probably 37 acres of land) on which were erected at different salient points, military masonry, cisterns, etc. This spot is now enveloped in thick and impenetrable jungle; these lands are peculiarly colonial in contradistinction to crown; they were purchased by the colonists at second hand from the Crown grantees. At best of times it appears only to have been mounted with three cannon'.

C 41.6 Evidence for manning:

15/6/1722 (PRO CO186/1): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: Cost '...to hire a lookout for Saddle Hill £40'.

19/12/1732 (PRO CO186/2): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: In 1736, £840.8.6 was paid to about one hundred slave owners for work done by slave on Saddle Hill.

17/3/1740 (PRO CO185/4): Nevis Act: 'An act for raising and making a fortification on Saddle Hill'. The inhabitants of Nevis are required '...to send a sufficient number of slaves with a bill and hook each'.

12/1740 (PRO CO186/3): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: Saddle Hill has still not been finished. The slaves have been put back to work on it.

1/11/1749 (PRO CO155/8): Council of Nevis Minutes: John Huggins to be discharged from lookout duty at Saddle Hill.

12/6/1764 (PRO CO186/5): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: Robert Huggins is the Gunner at Saddle Hill. He previously received £40 p.a. but the Council and Assembly have reduced this to £25 p.a. as it is now peace time.

12/9/1778 (NARCH): Assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'First the gunner is to remain at Saddle Hill night and day and not to quit his post either night or day without leave obtained from the President. Second, the Gunner upon observing five vessels from a ship down to a sloop standing for this island shall fire two guns at the distance of time of two minutes between each gun and provided such vessels should be discovered after sunset then the gunner shall set fire to the pile now erected by way of bon fire in obedience to the General's directions'.

30/4/1779 (PRO CO186/7): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: The Saddle Hill Gunner is to get a pay rise. A house is to be built for him in the fort and a flag staff and colours are to be bought to use for signals.

1861 (PRO CO187/35): Blue Book: 'Hanley is Capt. Gunner at Saddle Hill.

C 41.7 The fort at war:

16/2/1782 (PRO CO152/62/190): John R. Herbert to General Shirley: 'On the first intelligence that we might expect an visit from the enemy I got up carriages for the two alarm guns at Saddle Hill and sent up

a quantity of amunition that I might at least take post there for a day or two if the inhabitants desired in case we were summoned to surrender at discretion’.

C 41.8 Archaeological Evidence:

The site has recently been conserved and restored by the landowner, Mr. Edward Herbert. However, the site is subject to a landownership battle and the precise nature of access rights had yet to be established at the time of the author’s fieldwork. In view of this, and taking into account the recent fines imposed on people who accessed the site, it was deemed unwise to visit the location and the site was not seen.

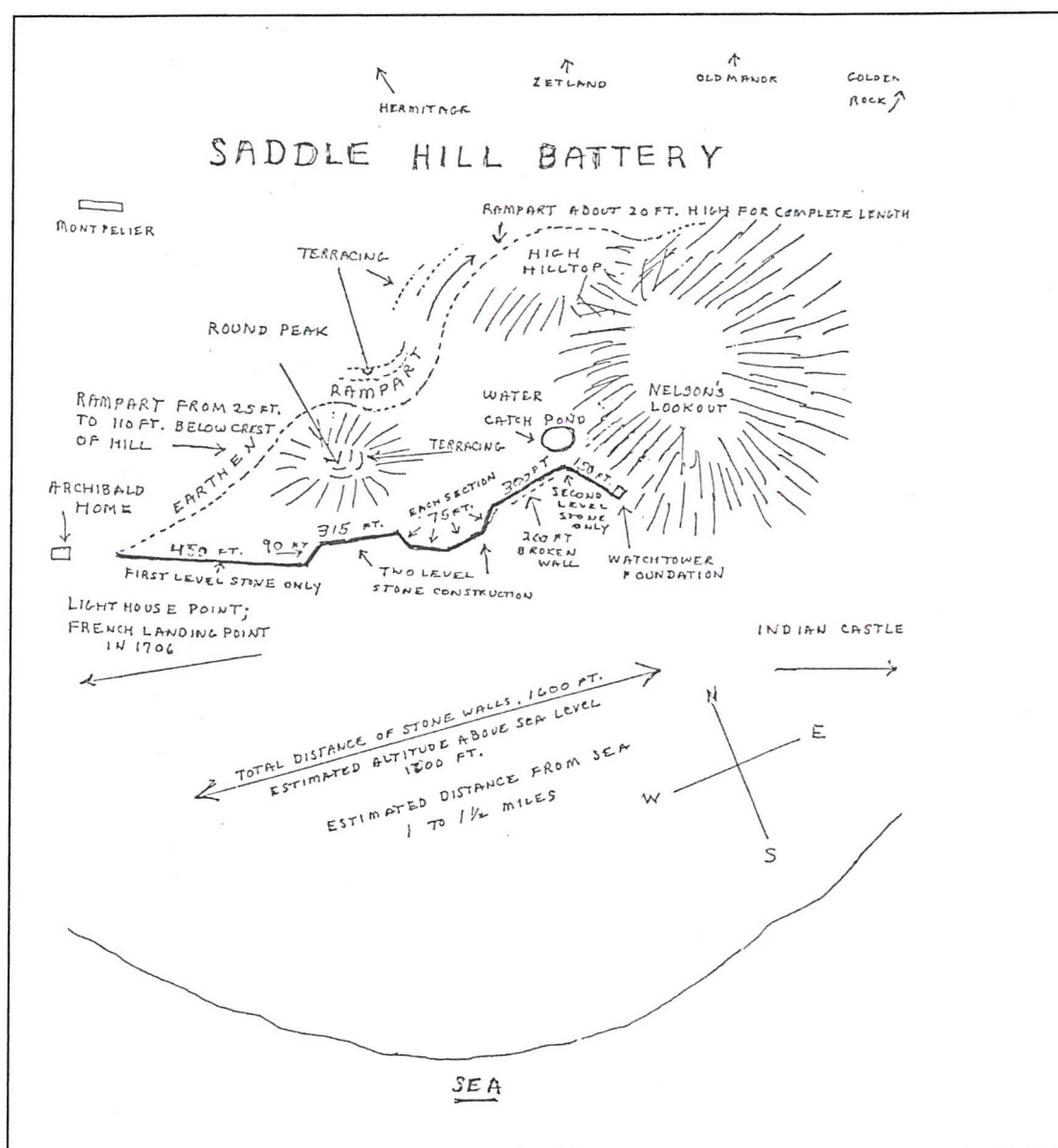


Figure C41b) Sketch plan of Saddle Hill (Illustration by V. Hubbard)

However, a series of photographs had previously been taken, by other visitors, and these were used to examine the remains on the site. A sketched site plan (Fig. C41b) was also published in the August 1996

edition of the Nevis Historical and Conservation Society newsletter. To date, no archaeological work has been carried out on the site.

C 41.9 Artefactual Evidence:

Two commercial, 4lber cannon were recovered from the fort and now lie in a private garden in the Golden Rock area. These guns are of John Armstrong type and date to the mid 18th century. Cannon One is 5'4" long with 9-2-7 marked on the barrel. Cannon Two is 5'5" long with 9-1-0 marked (Trollope 2000).

A further cannon, thought to be a 6lber, was found on the site (Hubbard 2000) but the current location of this cannon is unknown.

C 41.10 Discussion:

The fort comprises a series of walls and ramparts enclosing the hilltop, c.1,000ft above sea level. Within the walls, a water catchment pond provided access to fresh water for the inhabitants. The raised area of 'Nelson's Lookout' would have provided a good 270° view of much of south, east and western Nevis, providing the opportunity of quickly signalling to all of these areas.

Although never utilised in war, the fort remains the largest fortified area in Nevis. This fort, mythologically connected to Nelson (who was on the island enforcing Navigation Acts in the 1780s), has been heavily reconstructed in recent times and due to the difficulties of access, an evaluation of this work has not been possible.

C 42 Deodand/Deodan/Deodard/Dodang

C 42.1 Notes:

The term deodand/deodan/deodard/dodang refers to the defended retreat used by the Nevis inhabitants, prior to the construction of Saddle Hill. The probable location of this site, on the south-eastern side of Mount Nevis, above Liburd's Estate, is marked on maps of 1703 and 1758. Although strictly not a military structure, it has been included due to the presence of cannon and its role during periods of military activity.

C 42.2 Grid ref.: Uncertain, possibly in the vicinity of W 62° 34' 09", N 17° 09' 33" or further south-west above Morgan Estate

C 42.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

22/5/1693 (PRO CO155/1): Anonymous: A place in Nevis is to be 'classified and fortified...for securing of women and children'.

24/6/1693 (CSP1693-6, 426): Council of Nevis Minutes: 'Agreed to grant compensation to Mrs. Earle for damage to her property in the fortifying of Mount Mary'.

13/10/1699 (PRO CO153/6, CSP1699, 863): Christopher Codrington III to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...there is in Nevis a very good deodard'. Codrington says that deodards are good for those who cannot fight '...but often those who could fight are tempted to flee to it, rather than stay and fight'.

?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P 5) French Intelligence Map: 'Redoubt where the English retreated to' shown on the eastern side of mount Nevis (Fig. C1c).

?1703 (NARCH): 'Par Beauvilliers' French Intelligence Map: 'Redoubt where the English retreated to' shown on the eastern side of mount Nevis (Fig. C1d).

18/4/1706 (PRO CO184/1/18, CSP1706-8, 275): captain David Dunbar to Colonel Thomas Whetham: 'The dodang is surrounded by a deep gully on one side and a steep woody mountain on the other, but neither provision of any kind, water or ammunition, their coming was so sudden'.

11/2/1734 (PRO CO152/20/116, CSP1734-5, 39): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I am under more apprehensions for Nevis than the other three islands...no inland fortification or retreat nor will provide any'.

8/1739 (PRO CO186/3): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: The 'Deodan' is going to be cleaned up and they want arms and cannon to put in it.

1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin': On the eastern side of Mount Nevis the 'keep, well supplied with artillery' is shown at position Q (Fig. C1f). This map appears to be a copy of the earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.

C 42.4 Descriptions from other sources: N/A

C 42.5 Evidence for Arms and Ammunition: N/A

C 42.6 Evidence for manning: N/A

C 42.7 The fort at war: N/A

C 42.8 Archaeological evidence: N/A

C 42.9 Artefactual evidence:

Two cannon, a falcon and another unidentified gun have been found on the mountain above Morgan's Estate (Trollope 2000). It is uncertain whether the location of these guns represents an alarm position, the deodand or whether they were en route to the deodand when they were abandoned.

C 42.10 Discussion

This site has not been located, however, the discovery of cannon from the Morgan Estate area might suggest that the deodand was located in this area. However, when examined topographically, the location above Liburd's Estate seems more probable and this area is marked as the site of the retreat on the French maps of 1703 and 1758 (Figs. C1c, C1d & C1f). Without further survey work, this will be impossible to prove.

C 43 Entrenchments/Trenches/Military Roads, etc.

C 43.1 Notes:

The entrenchments, first built in the mid to late 17th century, were integral to the defences of Nevis and linked each coastal fort. Spurs were constructed on the entrenchments between each fort, and were designed as 'places of arms' to hold cannon and men. The entrenchments seem to have been closely linked with the coast road and at Cotton Ground it is possible that the coast road and entrenchments were represented by the same structure. By the mid 18th century the entrenchments had fallen into ruin.

C 43.2 Grid ref.: Various: see 1703 and 1758 French maps (Figs. C1c, C1d & C1d).

C 43.3 Citations in maps and documents, by date:

6/6/1666 (PRO CO1/20/165, CSP1661-8, 1212): Francis Sampson to John Sampson: '...made desperate by examples of misery here amongst us are intrenching and building in land and sea forts'.

14/12/1672 (PRO CO1/29/161, CSP1669-1674, 987): 'The present state of the Leeward Islands' by Sir Charles Wheler: 'From Pellicans Point to Musketi Bay is all the leeward side of the island about five English mile in length...In the time of the warr the inhabitants did by the hands of their slaves run a line all along the coast, but I had persuaded them to make little redoubts, shut up as well to the land as to the sea that they might doe with the same expense of hands as their long line, because their line being very slight and without a trench (for I saw the ruins of it) an enemy would passe it anywhere which would endanger the losse of ye island, in regard their men were extended five mile in length and that an enemy might be landing at ye same time all along; but since my coming away I think they are distracted from it and will runne their slight line without any fastness except that of Pellican Point, by reason it is on high land, in a kinde of promontary all the other platformes being open'.

18/2/1678 (PRO CO153/2, CSP1677-1680, 604): William Stapleton to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...all hands to the sea side to repair our former workes or trenches and to erect breastworks where is any wanting'.

1/4/1678 (CSP1677-1680, 642): William Stapleton to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...is night and day at the sea side with all the white men in arms and some Negroes with lances and all the rest completing our trenches'.

15/3/1679 (NARCH): William Stapleton to the Lords of Trade and Plantations: "The forme of the fortifications at Pellican Poynt fort nere Charlestown in Nevis". 'His Excellency Captain Generall Stapleton having more over caused curtaines and breast workes of expedient height and thickness to be raised and continued of sods and grassy turfes at BS, etc (Fig. C9a) before all the roads harbours bayes, creekes and landing places with bastions sconces and ravelins fitted with parapets and foot banks where ever necessary with in this island for preventing of invaders landing takeing also a very large thicke and unpassable prickle peare fence betwixt those breastworks and the sea, the shoare being either cliffety or environed with dangerous rises in the other places, rendering it formidable to the attaqueants.'

- 8/5/1680 (PRO CO154/2/32): Nevis Act: 'Breadth of common paths act: all paths are to be at least 18 feet wide'.
- c.1685 (PRO CO155/1): 'An order to Council' by William Stapleton: The 'common' paths are to be at least 18 feet wide.
- 27/8/1685 (PRO CO1/58/92, CSP1685-8, 337): Assembly of Nevis Minutes: Proposed that the fortifications and trenches are to be repaired. Consented to by the Council and Governor. 8d per day per slave is to be paid to the planters.
- 19/8/1689 (CSP1689-1692, 361): Carpenter and Belchamber to the Commissioners of Customs: 'On the news of the Prince of Oranges landing in England, $\frac{3}{4}$ of the negroes here were ordered to repair the trenches and forts, which are now much better than ever, so that little but that work and the guarding of them was thought about'.
- 12/6/1693 (CSP1693-6, 394): Council of Nevis Minutes: A '...joint committee appointed to make a new division of the trenches'.
- 16/5/1696 (PRO CO155/2): Anonymous: The trenches are to be repaired.
- 11/6/1696 (CSP1696-7, 30): Council of Nevis Minutes: The trenches are to be repaired.
- 26/11/1700 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1700, 942): Hugh Simms, Engineer: '...28/7/1692, came...to Nevis, I viewed ye severall breastworks and forts here and gave what orders necessary for their repair'.
- 13/2/1701 (PRO CO185/3): Nevis Act: 'An act for repairing the breastworks'.
- 26/2/1701 (PRO CO153/7): Nevis Act: 'An act for repairing breastworks and round paths'.
- 25/8/1701 (PRO CO152/4, CSP1701, 784): Christopher Codrington III to Commissioners for Trade and Plantations: 'The breastworks from Long Point to Charles Fort are in good repair'.
- ?1703 (NARCH, original thought to be in Bibliothèque Nationale de France, Ref: Ge SH Pf 154 Div 22 P 5): Zigzagging lines of defence are shown from the south of Nevis running west around the coast to Hurricane Hill (Fig. C1c).
- ?1703 (NARCH): 'Par Beauvilliers' French Intelligence Map: Zigzagging lines of defence are shown from the south of Nevis running west around the coast to Hurricane Hill (Fig. C1d).
- 1705 (PRO CO185/2/58): Nevis Act: 'An act for repairing the breastworks and other fortifications and also the round paths of this island. Whereas the inhabitants of this island have heretofore been at very great charges and expence to erect a fort and make breastworks and trenches to secure and defend it against any enemy that may attempt or attack the same'.
- 15/9/1705 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1704-5, 1344): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...betwixt each fort where the sandy bags are is strong sodd breastwork with a ditch without side of thirty foot broad and half way between each fort is a strong spur which will hold five hundred men'.
- 12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: 'An accompt of what new forts wee have lately built and where, what old ones repaired and the changes wee have beene at to doe the same': 'Besides the worke of two hundred negroe men who have been constantly employed to tend the masons and to repair and finish the trenches and breastworks that goe along and joyne from fort to fort from Pelicans Point to Morton's Bay'.

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis: 'An account of the proceeding of the French fleet against Nevis February 1706': '...a resolution taken that one able Negro man out of every thirty living negroes on this island be forthwith set on work to repair and put in order the breastworks, trenches and other fortifications of this island'.

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis: 'An account of the proceeding of the French fleet against Nevis February 1706': The French comprised '...in all thirty six sayle'. On 6/2/1706 they '...tooke greate numbers of men out of their ships of warr into small boates...as if they intended to attack us...but the wind...occasioned a great cockling sea where they rid at anchor and a high surfe on shoare and the great diligence and readiness they observed all along our trenches which were well manned ready to receive them as also the severall fforts being soe neare one the other that left to land where they would they must be open and exposed to the shott of two battery's at once they...took their men into the ships again'. On 8/2/1706 '...about break of day the enemy with two ships of warr came within shott and fired their broadsides against the fforts and trenches between the Old Road and the ffort at Cole's Point. Wee having lately made a ffort at the Cotton Tree in the midway between the two former all which three fforts kept constantly firing at them and was believed and since confirmed by some deserters did them considerable damage in their hulls and rigging (and as is credibly reported killed their vice admiral and eight men) but thanks to God wee received no losses at all'.

13/3/1706 (PRO CO153/9, CSP1706-8, 168): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...perceiving the roughness of all the forts, platformes and trenches which were observ'd to be well lin'd, twas thought adviseable to remand them on board'.

13/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6/44): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: The French '...perceiving the roughness of the forts, platforms and trenches which were observ'd to be well lin'd, 'twas thought advisable to remand them on board'.

19/3/1706 (PRO CO153/9): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I have by your Lordships commands sent plans of the platforms erected and repair'd by me which your Lordships will find where they are situate and how, a draft of the whole island of Nevis [now lost] your Lordships will also receive and according to the marks in the margin will find at what parts of the island they are plac't...betwixt each fort where the sandy bags are is strong sodd breastwork with a ditch without side of thirty foot broad and half way between each fort is a strong spur which will hold five hundred men'.

2/5/1706 (PRO CO185/1): Nevis Act: 'An act for repairing the breastworks and other fortifications and also the round paths of this island'.

9/12/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 653): Daniel Parke to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I desired the people of Nevis to throw up a line about the town that they might have some place to retreat to that might be defended. I promised to lay it out and see it done but they refused tho it would have cost them nothing but the labour of their negroes and they have still above two thousand left. Collonell Johnson who understood nothing of the matter, poor man he could neither write nor read...put them to soe much charge in building of a little fort and platformes that were of noe use to him that I can't get them now to do anything; there is a trench as they called it that is a straight ditch and the ditch on the wrong side; one would think soe many officers that was here should know better'.

- 10/2/1707 (PRO CO153/9): Daniel Parke to Lords of Trade and Plantations: 'I desired the people of Nevis to throw up a line about the town that they might have some place to retreat to that might be defended. I promised to lay it out and see it done but they refused tho' it would have cost them nothing but the labour of their negroes and they have still above two thousand left. Collonell Johnson who understood nothing of the matter, poor man he could neither write nor read...put them to soe much charge in building of a little fort and platformes that were of noe use to him that I can't get them now to do anything; there is a trench as they called it that is a straight ditch and the ditch on the wrong side; one would think soe many officers that was here should know better'.
- 6/7/1733 (PRO CO186/2): Council and Assembly of Nevis Minutes: The work at Charles Fort has started, but thirty more slave have been requested whilst '...the Negroes belonging to Charles Fort go off to repair the breastworks'. The planters will be paid 18d per slave per day.
- 31/8/1734 (PRO CO152/20/148, CSP1734-5, 314): William Mathew to Lords of Trade and Plantations: '...From Black Rock quite to Round Hill which is the north west point of this island is almost a continuous bay and a fine sandy beach where is landing for an enemy almost anywhere and it extends at least six miles. To cover this there have been lines thrown up for the whole length a good ditch and rampart and it was by this intrenchment which may be easily be repaired well to be defended at distance were something like platt bastions'.
- 15/11/1737 (PRO CO186/2): Assembly of Nevis Minutes: '...wee have viewed the paths and breastworks and allotted them to be mended as followeth, vizt. St. Georges parish to amend from Indian Castle to Long Point, St. Johns parish from Long Point to Charles Fort and the fort, St. Pauls parish from Charles Fort to Mrs. Pineys Pond, St. Thomas parish from Mrs. Piney's Pond to Cades Bay Pond, St. James parish from Cades Bay Pond to Ratcliffs Pond'.
- 1755 (PRO CO152/29): Nevis Act: 'An act to repair and widen several roads and making new paths'.
- 30/5/1755 (PRO CO154/6): Nevis Act: 'An act for the more commodiously widening the several roads of this island'.
- 1758 (NARCH) 'Geographical description of the Antilles Islands possessed by the English by Mr Bellin': 'The anchorage and the landing are defended by retrenchments along the shore...all that coast is one with little bays where it is easy to disembark and alight; this has obliged the inhabitants to build retrenchments here'. The lines of defence are shown running from Indian Castle to Hurricane Hill.' Retrenchments along the coast' are shown on the western coast of Nevis (Fig. C1f). This map appears to be a copy of the earlier, ?1703 French maps and almost certainly reflects the early 18th century positions rather than those of the mid 18th century.
- 27/1/1764 (PRO CO185/7): Nevis Act: 'An act for repairing the highways'. The surveyor has permission to take any materials from the guts that he might find useful.
- 14/12/1767 (PRO CO153/22): James Verchild to Lords of Trade and Plantations: An act to repair highways has been approved.
- 8/12/1768 (PRO CO186/7): William Woodley to Lords of Trade and Plantations: Woodley describes a piece of land in St. Paul's parish as '...banded to the east with the breastwork path and to the west with the sea'. The length of the piece of land from north to south is 190 feet and from east to west is 140 feet. He grants this land to Benjamin Lees.

C 43.5 Evidence for arms and ammunition: N/A

C 43.6 Evidence for manning:

13/3/1706 (PRO CO153/9, CSP1706-8, 168): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: ‘...perceiving the roughness of all the forts, platformes and trenches which were observ’d to be well lin’d, twas thought adviseable to remand them on board’.

13/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6/44): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: The French ‘...perceiving the roughness of the forts, platforms and trenches which were observ’d to be well lin’d , ‘twas thought advisable to remand them on board’.

C 43.7 The defences at war:

12/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6, CSP1706-8, 167): Council and Assembly of Nevis: ‘An account of the proceeding of the French fleet against Nevis February 1706’: The French comprised ‘...in all thirty six sayle’. On 6/2/1706 they ‘...tooke greate numbers of men out of their ships of warr into small boates...as if they intended to attack us...but the wind...occasioned a great cockling sea where they rid at anchor and a high surfe on shoare and the great diligence and readiness they observed all along our trenches which were well manned ready to receive them as also the severall fforts being soe neare one the other that left to land where they would they must be open and exposed to the shott of two battery’s at once they...took their men into the ships again’. On 8/2/1706 ‘...about break of day the enemy with two ships of warr came within shott and fired their broadsides against the fforts and trenches between the Old Road and the ffort at Cole’s Point. Wee having lately made a ffort at the Cotton Tree in the midway between the two former all which three fforts kept constantly firing at them and was believed and since confirmed by some deserters did them considerable damage in their hulls and rigging (and as is credibly reported killed their vice admiral and eight men) but thanks to God wee received no losses at all’.

13/3/1706 (PRO CO153/9, CSP1706-8, 168): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: ‘...perceiving the roughness of all the forts, platformes and trenches which were observ’d to be well lin’d, twas thought adviseable to remand them on board’.

13/3/1706 (PRO CO152/6/44): John Johnson to Lords of Trade and Plantations: The French ‘...perceiving the roughness of the forts, platforms and trenches which were observ’d to be well lin’d , ‘twas thought advisable to remand them on board’.

C 43.8 Archaeological evidence:

Earthworks were identified at three sites on the western coast of Nevis. All three would appear to represent the breastworks and entrenchments described from the 17th century. In addition, further lengths of the old coast road were located on the eastern coast in the vicinity of Coconut Walk/Hichmans and on the northern coast at Round Hill (Fig. C39a).

C 43.8.1 The earthworks at Golden Rock Pavilion (Mathew's Fort)

At 110m to the east of Mathew's Fort a shallow v-shaped ditch, 0.4m deep by 6-12m wide was detected (Fig. C43a). This ditch ran from the south of the fort running north until being lost at the Four Seasons Resort southern property boundary. Landscaping of the Four Seasons Resort has removed all trace of the feature within the property.

The ditch runs parallel to the coast for over 330m, turning west at its southern end. The sharp angle change present makes it unlikely to be a road. The probable use for such a feature would be as a defensive trench running behind the coastal forts on Pinney's Beach, the angle change representing one of the 'spurs' described by Johnson in 1705 and shown on the French Intelligence Maps of the 18th century (Figs. C1c, C1d & C1f).

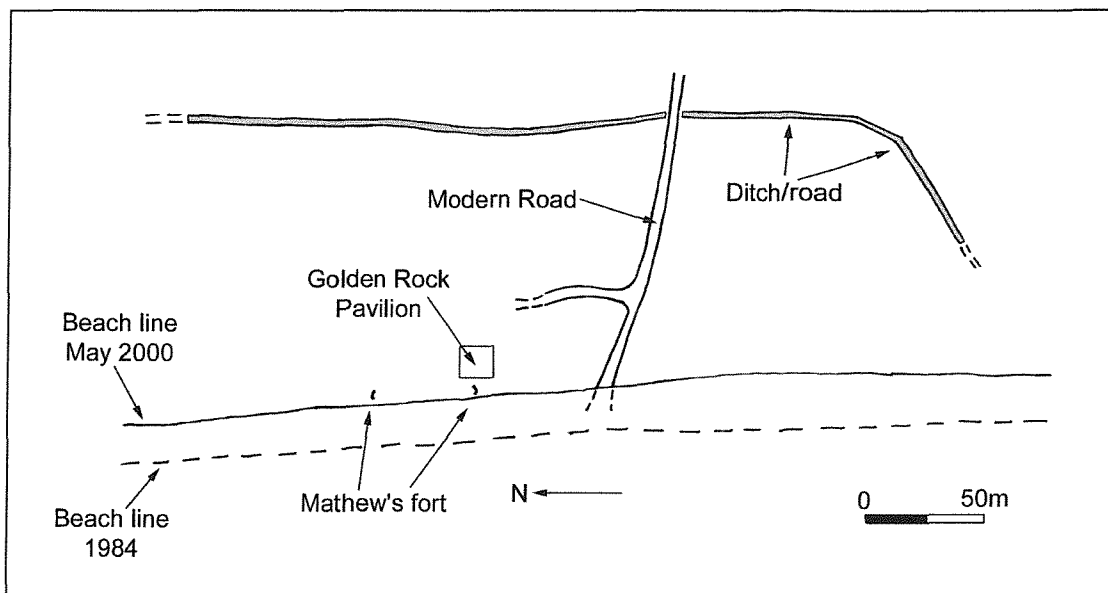


Figure C43a) Plan of ditch/road at Mathew's Fort

C 43.8.2 The earthworks at Beachcombers beach bar

This feature runs north from the northern edge of the Four Seasons Resort c.100m east of the shore (Fig. C43b). At this point the ditch is more shallow and narrow than that seen at Golden Rock Pavilion, being 0.2-0.3m deep by 5-7m wide. Along part of the length, a sand and rubble bank was located although this was thought to be modern, the product of beach clearance.

The ditch runs for at least 120m before difficulties of access made following of the feature impossible. If the ditch continued south, it would pass c.100m behind the onshore building at Old Road Fort, and therefore, c.140m east of the underwater gun platform at Old Road. Towards its northern end, the ditch dog-legs to the east, possibly representing one of the 'spurs' described by Johnson in 1705 and shown on the French intelligence maps of the 18th century (Figs. C1c, C1d & C1f).

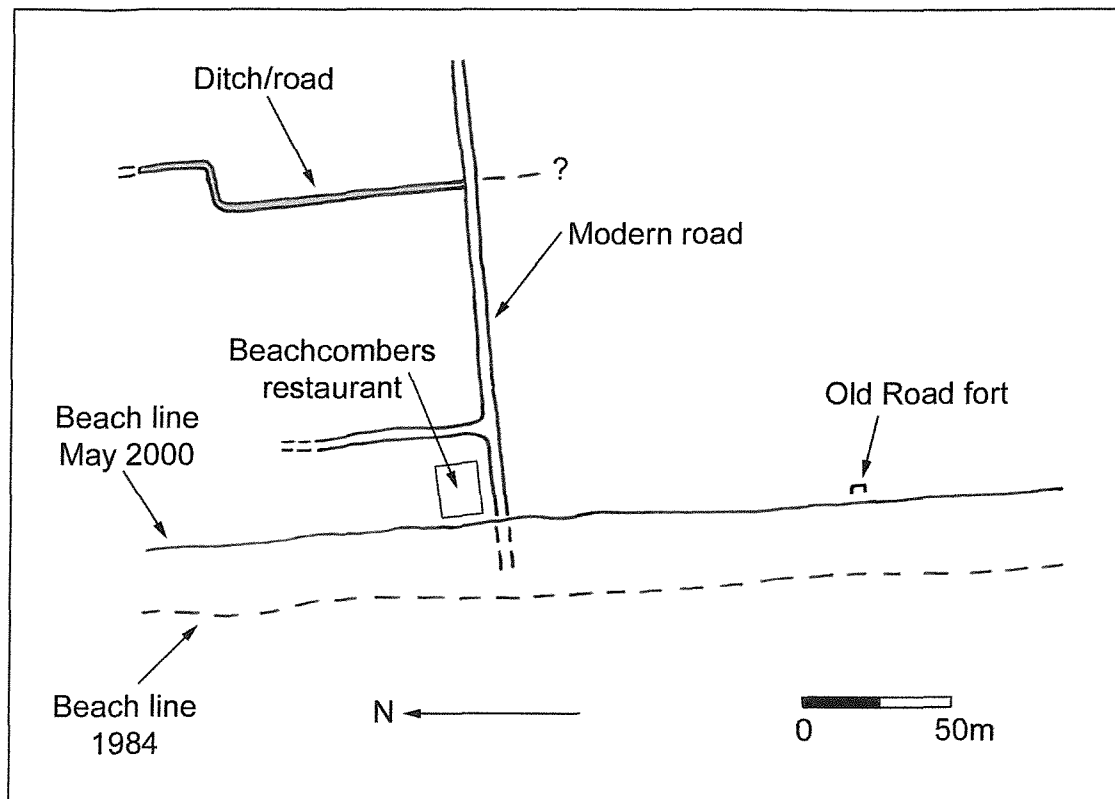


Figure C43b) Plan of ditch/road at Beachcombers

C 43.8.3 The earthworks at Cotton Ground (Abbott's Fort).

The earthworks surveyed run north to south from the Montpelier fence line (Fig. C43d), with four east to west sections running off the line at regular intervals. At the southern end of the area three parallel north to south aligned earthworks can be seen running 5-7m apart from each other. The area between the earthwork lines shows evidence of a slightly flattened depression.

The line of earthworks continues a further $\frac{1}{4}$ mile north from Montpelier, crossing the gardens of a private home and finally joining up with the current coast road at Cotton Ground. However, restrictions in time and manpower did not allow for the examination of this feature north of Montpelier and the survey concentrated on the range of features to the south of Montpelier, stopping at the east to west ravine running just north of St. Thomas Church.

The area slopes down from the coast road to the east, but flattens near the coast to a plateau, c.70-100m wide along the length of a cliff, c.3m high. This plateau rises slightly to the south and, at the southern extent, is covered in scrub vegetation with some small trees on the coastal side. At the northern end of the survey area, at Cole's Point, is a slight promontory. Two ghuts puncture the coastline in the centre and northern end of the cliff.

Earthwork Line (hereafter EL) 1, runs the entire length, some 375m, of the cliff, about 20-25m from the cliff edge apparently continuing southwards across the ravine (Figs. C43c & C43d). This 1m high bank, shows evidence of being constructed in stone with a large proportion of the line comprising a 1.2-1.4m wide, well constructed wall/revetment. This revetment/wall is often faced on both sides, but more usually the

facing only survives on the western side. This bank/wall is punctured by four apparent east to west 'access' breaks, defined by earth and stone banks/walls.

The first 'access' break is c.65m, the second c.175m, the third c.290m and the fourth c.375m from the Montpelier fence line. The first two east to west breaks are just to the east of ghuts and the fourth runs along the top of the ravine at the southern boundary of the survey area. All four run upslope eastwards from EL1 and were traced for at least 25m in all cases. EL2, c.0.4-0.7m high, runs for some 125m from the southern end of the survey area, c.7-8m west of EL1. This 'earthwork', like EL1, is constructed in stone with some areas comprising a substantial wall, c.1.8m wide, with one or both sides faced.

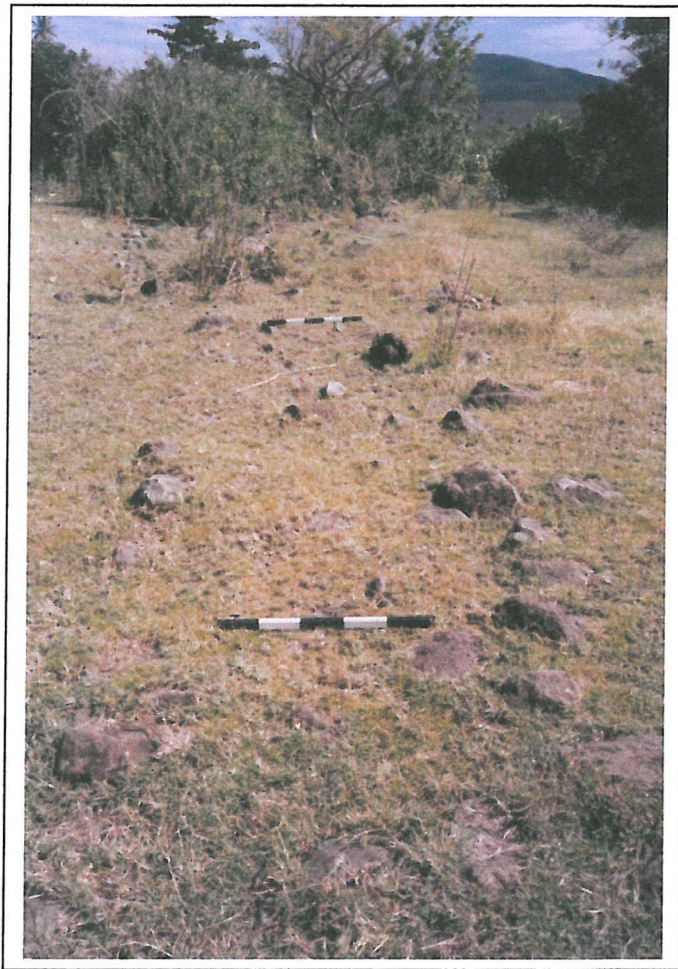


Figure C43c) Photo of EL1, looking south

EL3, although broken at several points, would appear to have extended only over the south of the survey area. However, 145m south of the Montpelier fence line a few lines of rubble in the cliff may attest to the presence of the feature further north. This bank occurs on the cliff edge and a significant amount of the structure appears to have been lost through cliff erosion. Again, much of the extent shows a stone construction and, although more slight than EL1 or EL2, consists of a wall faced on the eastern side for much of the length.

EL4 runs from beyond the Montpelier fence line through to a ghut to the north of Building B, a distance of c.165m. This low bank, falling from west to east, appears to be a natural formation (as seen in Trench 2, Building A at Abbott's/Cole's Point, see Section C31), probably utilized as a continuation from

the northern limit of either EL2 or EL3, although the distance west from EL1 would suggest a continuation of EL2, rather than EL3. Scattered along the length of the survey area, although clustering close to the earthworks at the southern end, are piles of deliberately deposited stone rubble. A pile also occurs close to Buildings B and C (Fig. C31h).

These earthworks would appear to represent the remains of the old coast road, which ran along the coast of Nevis from Charlestown to Hurricane Cove. This road would have originally joined Cotton Ground to the northern boundary of Charlestown, until erosion caused the road to be re-routed, to dog-leg east along one of the parallel inland roads. From old maps it would appear that this took place at some time in the late 19th/early 20th century as the road is shown on a map by John Alexander Burke Isles in 1871 (Fig. C1k).

This road, like many others on Nevis (e.g. Indian Castle and Hichmans) appears to have had banks of stone on either side. These banks are probably the result of stone clearance from fields and would probably also serve as field and estate boundaries. Roads such as these on Nevis are often slightly sunken through wear. The survey area clearly shows evidence of such a system with transverse walls running inland from the main 'road' possibly providing access from the plantations along the side of land boundaries.

However, this interpretation does not explain the well-built nature of the walls alongside the road, or the third line of walling at the southern end of the survey area. It is unlikely that two roads would be built beside each other and a repositioning of the road so close to the old would appear unlikely. A possible explanation may be provided by the presence of an apparently 19th century house platform at the southern end of the survey area: EL3 may represent field terracing in this area, with the cleared stones being deposited in the rubble piles present.

From historical maps, it is known that from the mid 17th century, a line of zigzagging entrenchments was built behind the forts and in front of the coast road on the western coast. This feature has yet to be definitively located on Nevis. One of the aims of the Cotton Ground survey was to establish whether any evidence of the entrenchments survived within the survey area or whether the features present represented only the coast road.

The precise nature of these entrenchments is uncertain and they are referred to as 'entrenchments', 'a line without a trench', 'a trench', 'a straight ditch' and as 'breastworks', which although slightly different, seem to describe the same feature, which was altered and repaired from the 17th century onwards. The military definitions for such a feature are quite precise and if assumed to be correct, the entrenchments should comprise a bank/parapet and a ditch, to face the direction of attack. In a situation such as the Nevis coast, where the entrenchments ran for several miles, the term 'lines of entrenchment' (Duane 1810) can be applied.

In entrenchments, the parapet should be 18-20ft wide and 4-6ft high. Although turf is usually recommended for this, some designers advised that if constructed by the sea '...they must be fortified with a good parapet supported by a strong wall' (Ozanam 1711). The ditch should be wider than the largest tree on the island (Anonymous 1702, Lochée 1780) although other fortification designers believed a lesser ditch or trench of 8-10ft wide by 6-7ft deep could be used if necessary (Allingham 1702). This entrenchment was to be built 'on the side of the land' (Bisset 1751) behind the forts, and should comprise a series of returns to stop enfilading fire (Lochée 1780). 'Breastworks' (or *épaulements*) can be used to describe the parapet of an entrenchment and also any such work on a fortification (Duffy 1975: 184).

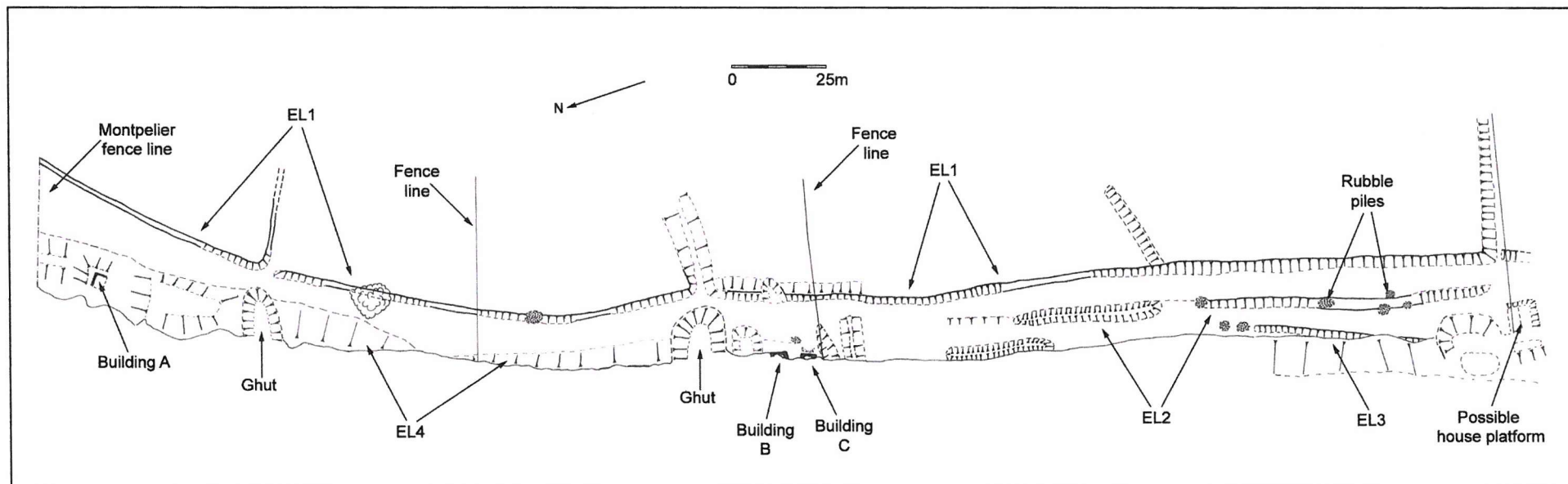


Figure C43d) Survey of earthworks at Cotton Ground (from plans and measurements taken by A. Crosby & P. Bellamy)

On Nevis, however, it is not necessarily expected to find a precise manifestation of such descriptions. Many of the contemporary writers who describe this feature would not necessarily have known the exact military terminology and would instead have described the defences as what they thought them to be, rather than what they perhaps were. It is also unlikely that such well constructed defences would be built along the coast of Nevis, as the reluctance of Nevis planters to spare their slaves for the work would suggest that works were carried out to the minimum requirement, rather than as large defensive trenches and banks.

Therefore on Nevis, it is likely that smaller, less conforming, entrenchments may be prevalent. The earthworks below Cotton Ground may provide evidence of such a construction, combined in this instance with the coastal road.

Although it is almost certain that at least EL1 and EL2 represent the old coast road, it would appear likely that, in such close proximity to the assumed military buildings, this road would have performed some sort of military function, at the minimum as a communications and supply route between the forts in time of war, a type of covered way. The east to west aligned sections of wall leading east from EL1 would also suggest that this line had a role as a property boundary, delimiting the extent of various plots of land.

The presence of such well-built walls along the length of this feature would also, although perhaps not of primary intent, have acted as a line of defence as any wall, no matter how small, would have been a potential hazard to an invading army. A wall of at least 1m high, as in this case, would have provided a difficult obstacle either to attackers from the sea or to a land based attack towards the forts. This cliff top wall would have also offered cover for any retreating army and would have provided an ideal position for musket fire or as a base for barbette cannon attack.

Although EL3 may well be later than EL1 and EL2, it is possible that EL3 is contemporary with the other earthworks. In this scenario, EL3 may represent part of the entrenchments/covered way located behind the forts and in front of the roads. The rubble piles might then be considered as piles of stones used to repair the stone walls/banks.

Therefore the earthworks would appear to fulfil several functions; as property boundaries and roads and as military defences and supply routes. As such, these earthworks almost certainly represent the boundary between the military and civilian zone, with predominantly military activity to be found to the west and plantation activity to the east. However, without further archaeological work in the area and more generally across Nevis as a whole, it is impossible to determine with any certainty the precise purpose and date of construction of these features.

C 43.9 Artefactual evidence: N/A

C 43.10 Discussion:

The three areas of possible entrenchments discovered represent two different environments of construction. The Golden Rock Pavilion and Beachcomber sites represent beach environments where deep ditches with banks would have been essential for defence. The Cotton Ground cliff site, where such defences would be unnecessary, shows evidence of a road with a possible defensive function. It is difficult to know whether all three areas were connected, however, it does seem likely that Beachcombers and Mathew's may well have been connected with a possibility that Cotton Ground represents the extension of this line, further to the north.

References

- Adams, D. 1998. 'Tiny Caribbean Island Votes on Breakaway'. *The Times*. 12. (11th August 1998).
- Ahlman, T. 1997. *Archaeological Evidence of African Slave Occupation at Brimstone Hill Fortress National Park, St. Kitts, West Indies: Brimstone Hill Archaeological Project Report No. 2*. University of Tennessee, Knoxville.
- Ahmed, B. and Afroz, S. 1996. *The Political Economy of Food and Agriculture in the Caribbean*. James Currey, London.
- Alleyne, W. and Sheppard, J. 1990. *The Barbados Garrison and its Buildings*. Macmillan Caribbean, London.
- Allingham, W. 1702. *The New Method of Fortification As Practised by Monsieur de Vauban, Engineer General of France*. 3rd Ed. Printed for W. Freeman, London.
- Amory, V. 2002. 'Nevis Tourism Authority Travels to New Building'. *The St. Kitts-Nevis Observer*. 15. (6th-12th September 2002).
- Anderton, M. J. 2001. 'The Battle for Britain and the Larger Than Life Battle'. 265-268. In Freeman, P. W. M. and Pollard, A. (eds.). *Fields of Conflict: Progress and Prospect in Battlefield Archaeology*. BAR International Series 958. Archaeopress, Oxford.
- Andrews, J. R. 2002. 'Evidence for a Tsunami Associated with the 1690 Earthquake'. 67-68. In Morris, E. (ed.) *Nevis Heritage Project: Interim Report 2001*. Nevis Heritage Project, University of Southampton, Southampton.
- Anonymous. 1690. '*An Account of the Late Dreadful Earthquake in the island of Mevis and St. Christopher &c. Which Happened in the Beginning of April of this Present Year 1690*'. London. 24th June 1690. Brit. Lib. MIC.B.56/2541(6).
- Anonymous. 1692. *An Epitome of the Whole Art of War*. Printed for J. Moxon, London.
- Anonymous. 1702. *A Military Dictionary Explaining all Difficult Terms in Martial Discipline, Fortifications and Gunnery, by an Officer who Served Several Years Abroad*. Printed for J. Nutt, London.
- Aplin, G. 2002. *Heritage: Identification, Conservation and Management*. Oxford University Press, Oxford.
- Appleby, J. C. 1996. 'English Settlement in the Lesser Antilles during War and Peace, 1603-1660'. 86-105. In Paquette, R. L. and Engerman, S. L. (eds.). *The Lesser Antilles in the Age of European Expansion*. University Press of Florida, Gainesville.

- Armony, L. 2000. *Brimstone Hill Fortress: World Heritage Site: Symposium and Inscription Ceremony, 3rd-4th October 2000*. Brimstone Hill Fortress National Park Society, Basseterre.
- Armstrong, D. V. 1985. 'An Afro-Jamaican Slave Settlement: Archaeological Investigations at Drax Hall'. 261-287. In Singleton, T. (ed.) *The Archaeology of Slave and Plantation Life*. Academic Press, San Diego.
- Armstrong, D. V. 1991. 'Recovering an Early 18th Century Afro-Jamaican Community: Archaeology of a Slave Village'. 344-362. *Proceedings of the Ninth International Congress for the Study of Pre-Columbian Cultures in the Lesser Antilles*, held in Curacao 1989.
- Arnold, T. F. 1995. 'Fortifications and the Military Revolution: The Gonzaga Experience 1530-1630'. 201-226. In Rogers, C. J. (ed.) *The Military Revolution Debate*. West View Press, Oxford.
- Ayinde, T. 1999. *And Society Grows: Poetry from the Heart*. Nevis Printing Limited, Charlestown.
- Aytoun, J. 1984. *Redcoats in the Caribbean*. Blackburn Recreation Services, Blackburn.
- Bacchus, C. 1999a. 'Heritage Society Celebrates Emancipation'. *The St. Kitts-Nevis Observer*. (6th-12th August 1999).
- Bacchus, C. 1999b. 'Heritage Society Pushes for Change'. *The St. Kitts-Nevis Observer*. 21. (20th-26th August 1999).
- Bacchus, C. 1999c. 'Huge Project Under Way'. *The St. Kitts-Nevis Observer*. 1. (11th-18th June 1999).
- Bacchus, C. 2000a. 'Brimstone Hill Declared World Treasure'. *The St. Kitts-Nevis Observer*. 1. (6th-12th October 2000).
- Bacchus, C. 2000b. 'Brimstone Hill Fortress National Park Now a World Heritage Site'. *The St. Kitts-Nevis Observer*. 11. (8th-14th September 2000).
- Ball, E. 1999. *Slaves in the Family*. Penguin, London.
- Barka, N. F. 2001. 'Changing Settlement Patterns on St. Eustatius'. 103-141. In Farnsworth, P. (ed.) *Island Lives: Historical Archaeologies of the Caribbean*. The University of Alabama Press, Tuscaloosa.
- Barker, D., Morris, E., Hardwick, W. and Higgins, D. A. 2002. 'Theme Four: Channel Four Time Team Artefacts'. 81-95. In Morris, E. (ed.) *Nevis Heritage Project: Interim Report 2001*. Nevis Heritage Project, University of Southampton, Southampton.

- Baron De Coehoorn, M. 1705. *The New Method of Fortification*. Printed for D. Midwinter, London.
- Beaudry, M. C. (ed.) 1993. *Documentary Archaeology in the Modern World*. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge.
- Beckles, H. M. 1989. *Natural Rebels: A Social history of Enslaved Black Women in Barbados*. Zed Books, London.
- Beckles, H. M. 1999. *Centering Women: Gender Discourses in Caribbean Slave Society*. James Currey, Oxford.
- Bender, B. 2001. 'The Politics of The Past: Emain Macha (Navan), Northern Ireland'. 199-211. In Layton, R., Stone, P. G. and Thomas, J. (eds.). *Destruction and Conservation of Cultural Property*. One World Archaeology Series. 41. Routledge, London.
- Bisset, C. 1751. *The Theory and Construction of Fortification*. Printed for the author, London.
- Black, C. V. 1983. *History of Jamaica*. Collins Educational, London.
- Boniface, P. and Fowler, P. 1993. *Heritage and Tourism in the Global Village*. Routledge, London.
- Boyer. 1701. *The Draughts of the most remarkable fortified towns in Europe*. Printed for I. Cleave, London.
- Bredin, A. E. C. 1987. *A History of the Irish Soldier*. Century Books, Belfast.
- Brice, M. H. 1984. *Stronghold: A History of Military Architecture*. Batsford, London.
- Browne, A. 2001. 'Whales Lose Out in Japan's Fight for Votes'. *The Observer*. 21. (13th May 2001).
- Buckley, R. N. 1979. *Slaves in Red Coats: The British West India Regiments, 1795-1815*. Yale University Press, Newhaven and London.
- Buckley, R. N. 1998. *The British Army in the West Indies: Society and the Military in the Revolutionary Age*. University Press of Florida, Florida.
- Buisseret, D. 1971. *The Fortifications of Kingston, 1655-1714*. Bolivar Press, Kingston, Jamaica.
- Buisseret, D. 1973. 'The Elusive Deodand: A Study of the Fortified Refuges of the Lesser Antilles'. *Journal of Caribbean History*. 6: 43-80.
- Burke Isles, J. A. 1871. *An Account Descriptive of the Island of Nevis, West Indies*. Printed for the author, Norwich.
- Burton, M. 1998. 'Old Plantation Home to be Restored'. *The St. Kitts-Nevis Observer*. 5. (4th-10th April 1998).

- Bush, B. 2001. 'Women in Caribbean History'. *Women's Historical Review*. **10**: 1, 147-9.
- Cambers, G. 1998a. *Planning for Coastal Change: 2a. Coastal Development Setback Guidelines in Nevis*. COSALC, UNESCO, Puerto Rico.
- Cambers, G. 1998b. *Planning for Coastal Change: 2b. Shoreline Management in Nevis: A Position Paper*. COSALC, UNESCO, Puerto Rico.
- Campbell, P. F. 1975. 'St. Anne's Fort and the Garrison'. *Journal of the Barbados Museum and Historical Society*. **35**: 1, 1-17.
- Chanca, D. Á. 1992. 'The Report of Dr. Chanca'. 29-38. In Hulme, P. and Whitehead, N. L. (eds.). *Wild Majesty: Encounters with Caribs From Columbus to the Present Day*. Clarendon Press, Oxford.
- Cleland, J. S. 2001. 'Women in Latin America and the Caribbean'. *Journal of World History*. **12**: 1, 231-232.
- Clement, C. O. and Eubanks, T. H. 1991. *Archaeological Reconnaissance Survey: Fort King George, Tobago*. Ministry of Tourism, Tobago, Scarborough.
- Connah, G. 1988. *The Archaeology of Australia's History*. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge.
- Constable. 1928. *The Royal Inniskilling Fusiliers: December 1688-July 1914*. Constable and Company Ltd., London.
- Copeland-Trimble, W. 1876. *The Historical Record of the 27th Inniskilling Regiment*. Wm. Clowes and Sons, London.
- Courtney, P. 1999. 'Different Strokes for Different Folks': The TransAtlantic Development of Historical and Post Medieval Archaeology'. 1-10. In Egan, G. and Michael, R. L. (eds.). *Old and New Worlds: Historical/Post Medieval Papers from the Societies' Joint Conferences at Williamsburg and London 1997 to Mark Thirty Years of Work and Achievement*. Oxbow Books, Oxford.
- Crandall, D. R. 2000. *A Military History of Montserrat, West Indies: Attacks, Fortifications, Cannons, Defenders, 1632-1815*. Privately published, Montserrat.
- Crandall, D. R. and Dyde, B. 1989. *The Fortification of St. George's Hill, Montserrat*. Montserrat National Trust, Plymouth.
- Crick, M. 1995. 'The Anthropologist as Tourist: An Identity in Question'. In Lanfant, M.-F., Allcock, J. B. and Bruner, E. M. (eds.). *International Tourism: Identity and Change*. Sage Studies in International Sociology, Number 47, London.
- Crosby, A. 2001. 'Prehistoric Settlement and Social Organisation'. 7-43. In Morris, E. (ed.) *Nevis Heritage Project Interim Report 2000*. Nevis Heritage Project, University of Southampton, Southampton.

- Cundall, F. (ed.) 1939. *Lady Nugent's Journal*. 3rd Ed. The West India Committee, London.
- Daintith, J., Wright, E., Isaacs, A., Martin, E. and Pickering, D. (eds.). 1990. *Dictionary of Quotations*. Bloomsbury, London.
- Daniel, E. B. 2001. *An Assessment of Beach Erosion Hazards in St. Kitts and Nevis*. OAS/USAID. Available at:
www.oas.org/pgdm/hazmap/cstlersn/stk_nev/kn_rept.htm. (4th October 2001).
- Davies, J. 1666. *A History of the Caribby Islands*. Printed for T. Dring and J. Starkey, London.
- De Bellay, W. 1589. *Instructions for the Warres (trans. by Paule Ive)*. Printed for T. Man and T. Cooke, London.
- De Corse, C. R. 2001. *An Archaeology of Elmina: Africans and Europeans on the Gold Coast, 1400-1900*. Smithsonian Institution Press, Washington.
- Deagan, K. 1996. 'Avenues of Enquiry in Historical Archaeology'. 16-42. In Orser, C. E. (ed.) *Images of the Recent Past: Readings in Historical Archaeology*. AltaMira, Walnut Creek.
- Deetz, J. 1977. *In Small Things Forgotten: The Archaeology of Early American Life*. Anchor Press, London.
- Delpuech, A. 2001. 'Historical Archaeology in the French West Indies'. 21-59. In Farnsworth, P. (ed.) *Island Lives: Historical Archaeologies of the Caribbean*. The University of Alabama Press, Tuscaloosa.
- Dixon, N. 1994. *On the Psychology of Military Incompetence*. 2nd Ed. Pimlico, London.
- Dookhan, I. 1998. *A Pre-Emancipation History of the West Indies*. 11th Ed. Longman, Harlow.
- Doyle, P. and Bennett, M. R. (eds.). 2002. *Fields of Battle: Terrain in Military History*. Kluwer Academic Publishers, London.
- Drewett, P. L. 1991. *Prehistoric Barbados*. Institute of Archaeology/Barbados Museum and Historical Society, London.
- Du Tertre, J. B. 1671. *Histoire Generale des Antilles Habites par les Francois (trans. for the author by Mrs. J Machling)*. Printed for the author, Paris.
- Duane, W. 1810. *A Military Dictionary or Explanation of the Several Systems of Discipline of Different Kinds of Troops*. Printed for the author, Philadelphia.
- Duffy, C. 1975. *Fire and Stone: The Science of Fortress Warfare, 1660-1860*. David and Charles, Newton Abbot.

- Duffy, C. 1979. *Siege Warfare: The Fortress in the Early Modern World, 1494-1660*. Routledge and Kegan Paul, London.
- Duffy, C. 1985. *The Fortress in the Age of Vauban and Frederick the Great, 1660-1789*. Routledge and Kegan Paul, London.
- Dunlop, J. 2000. *Comments concerning the Inniskilling Fusiliers. made to Machling, T.* 11th July 2000. Major Dunlop is Curator of the Royal Inniskilling Fusiliers Regimental Museum, Enniskillen, Northern Ireland.
- Dunn, R. S. 1973. *Sugar and Slaves: The Rise of the Planter Class in the English West Indies, 1624-1713*. W. W. Norton & Company, London.
- Dyde, B. 1993. *St. Kitts: Cradle of the Caribbean*. 2nd Ed. Macmillan, London.
- Economic History Services. 2002. *How Much is that Worth Today*. Economic History Services. Available at: <http://eh.net/ehresources/howmuch/poundq.php>. (3rd April 2002).
- Evans, I. H. 1990. *Brewers Dictionary of Phrase and Fable*. 14th Ed. Cassell, London.
- Ewen, C. R. 2001. 'Historical Archaeology in the Colonial Spanish Caribbean'. 3-20. In Farnsworth, P. (ed.) *Island Lives: Historical Archaeologies in the Caribbean*. The University of Alabama Press, Tuscaloosa.
- Farnsworth, P. 2001. 'Preface'. In Farnsworth, P. (ed.) *Island Lives: Historical Archaeologies of the Caribbean*. The University of Alabama Press, Tuscaloosa.
- Feilden, B. M. and Jokilehto, J. 1998. *Management Guidelines for World Heritage Sites*. 2nd Ed. ICCROM, Rome.
- Ferguson, J. 1990. *Far From Paradise: An introduction to Caribbean Development*. Latin America Bureau, London.
- Ferguson, J. 1998. *A Traveller's History of the Caribbean*. Windrush Press, Gloucestershire.
- Ferguson, L. 1992. *Uncommon Ground: Archaeology and Early African America, 1650-1800*. Smithsonian Institution Press, London.
- Fog Olwig, K. (ed.) 1995. *Small Islands Large Questions: Society, Culture and Resistance in the Post-Emancipation Caribbean*. Frank Cass & Company, London.
- Forde-Johnson, J. 1977. *Castles and Fortifications of Britain and Ireland*. Dent and Sons Ltd., London.
- Fowler, P. 1992. *The Past In Contemporary Society: Then, Now*. Routledge, London.
- Fox, R. A. 1993. *Archaeology, History and Custer's Last Battle*. University of Oklahoma Press, Norman.

- Freeman, P. W. M. 2001. 'Introduction: Issues Concerning the Archaeology of Battlefields'. In Freeman, P. W. M. and Pollard, A. (eds.). *Fields of Conflict: Progress and Prospect in Battlefield Archaeology*. BAR International Series, No. 958. Archaeopress, Oxford.
- Gaskell, J. 2000a. 'Commentary and Analysis'. *The St. Kitts-Nevis Observer*. 5. (9th-15th March 2000).
- Gaskell, J. 2000b. *Comments regarding cannon found at Coxheath Estate made to Machling, T.* February 2000. Mr. Gaskell is owner of land in the vicinity of Coxheath Estate.
- Gaskell, J. 2000c. Letter to the Editor. *The St. Kitts-Nevis Observer*. 24. (18-24th August 2000).
- Gilligan, A. 1998. 'Split Decision'. *The Sunday Telegraph Magazine*. 18-21. (19th April 1998).
- Gooding, E. 1981. *The West Indies at the Crossroads: The Search for a Viable Future*. Schenkman, Cambridge.
- Goodwill, F. 2001. *Comments made regarding the appearance of skulls on Pinney's Beach made to Machling, T.* September 2001. Mr. Goodwill was visiting Nevis at this time.
- Gordon, J. 1998. *Nevis, Queen of the Caribbees: An Introduction and Guide*. 4th Ed. Macmillan, London.
- Grant, W. L. and Monro, J. (eds.). 1910. *Acts of the Privy Council: Colonial Series 2, 1680-1720*. Privy Council, Hereford.
- Greenpeace. 2001a. *'How the South Pacific Whaling Sanctuary Was Defeated'*. Greenpeace. Available at: <http://www.greenpeace.org.uk/Multimedia/Live/FullReport/3526.pdf>. (9th May 2001).
- Greenpeace. 2001b. *'Vote Buying - Japan's Chosen Strategy to Secure a Return to Large Scale Whaling'*. Greenpeace. Available at: <http://www.greenpeace.org.uk/Multimedia/Live/FullReport/3525.pdf>. (9th May 2001).
- Greenwood, R. and Hamber, S. 1979. *Arawaks to Africans*. Macmillan, London.
- Griffiths, H. 2003. *Comments regarding vulcanism on Nevis made to Machling, T.* January 2003. Dr. Griffiths is an Operations Geologist for Shell Brazil.
- Guishard, M. 2002. 'Nevis Tourism Authority Travels to New Building'. *The St. Kitts-Nevis Observer*. 15. (6th-12 September 2002).

- Hall, M. 2000. *Archaeology and the Modern World: Colonial Transcripts in South Africa and the Chesapeake*. Routledge, London.
- Hamblin, T. 2000. 'Know Your History: Brimstone Hill: More Than Just a Fort'. *The St. Kitts-Nevis Observer*. 2. (11th-17th February 2000).
- Harlow, V. T. 1989. *Christopher Codrington, 1668-1710*. 2nd Ed. Hurst & Company, London.
- Harlow, V. T. (ed.) 1925. *Colonizing Expeditions to the West Indies and Guiana, 1623-27*. The Hakluyt Society, London.
- Harrington, J. C. 1994. 'From Architraves to Artifacts: A Metamorphosis'. 1-15. In South, S. (ed.) *Pioneers in Historical Archaeology: Breaking New Ground*. Plenum Press, London.
- Harrington, P. 1992. *Archaeology of the English Civil War*. Shire Archaeology, Princes Risborough.
- Harris, E. C. 1986. 'American Spies at Bermuda's Forts, 1842-52'. *Post-Medieval Archaeology*. **20**: 311-331.
- Harris, E. C. 1992. *Great Guns of Bermuda: A Guide to the Principal Forts of the Bermuda Islands*. Bermuda Maritime Museum Press, Bermuda.
- Harris, E. C. 1997. *Bermuda Forts: 1612-1957*. Bermuda Maritime Museum Press, Bermuda.
- Harris, E. C. 2002. *Comments concerning Gates/Davers Fort made to Machling, T.* 25th June 2002. Dr. Harris is Director of the Bermuda Maritime Museum, Bermuda.
- Hart, R. 1998. *From Occupation to Independence: A Short History of the English-Speaking Caribbean Region*. Pluto Press, London.
- Hartog, J. 1994. *The Forts of Sint Maarten and Saint Maarten*. National Parks Foundation, St. Maarten.
- Hathaway, E. (ed.) 1996. *A Dorset Rifleman: The Recollections of Benjamin Harris*. Shinglepicker Publications, Swanage.
- Haviser, J. B. 2001. 'Historical Archaeology in the Netherlands Antilles and Aruba'. 60-81. In Farnsworth, P. (ed.) *Island Lives: Historical Archaeologies of the Caribbean*. University of Alabama Press, Tuscaloosa.
- Heathcote, J. 2003. *Comments regarding uplift and geological activity on Nevis made to Machling, T.* March 2003. Dr. Heathcote is undertaking geomorphological research on Nevis.
- Henige, D. P. 1970. *Colonial Governors from the 15th Century to the Present*. University of Wisconsin Press, Wisconsin.

- Hexham, H. 1642. *The First Part of the Principles of the Art Military, Practised in the Warres of the United Netherlands*. Printed for the author, Rotterdam.
- Hibbert, C. (ed.) 1964. *The Wheatley Diary: A Journal and Sketchbook kept during the Peninsular War and the Waterloo Campaign*. Windrush Press, Gloucestershire.
- Higman, B. W. 1999. *Writing West Indian Histories*. Macmillan, London.
- Hilton, J. 1675. 'Relation of the First Settlement of St. Christopher and Nevis by John Hilton, Storekeeper and Gunner of Nevis, April 29th 1675'. In Harlow, V. T. (ed.) *Colonizing Expeditions to the West Indies and Guiana, 1623-1667*. Hakluyt Society, London.
- Hogg, I. V. 1975. *Fortress: A History of Military Defence*. Macdonald and Jane's, London.
- Hogg, I. V. 1981. *The History of Fortification*. Orbis, London.
- Hogg, I. V. 1987. *The Illustrated Encyclopedia of Artillery*. Quarto, London.
- Holland, I. 2000a. *Comments made regarding shipping conditions off the northern coast of Nevis made to Machling, T.* February 2000. Mr Holland owns Codrington's Fort, Nevis.
- Holland, I. 2000b. *Comments regarding Codrington's Fort made to Machling, T.* February 2000. Mr. Holland owns Codrington's Fort.
- Holtorf, C. J. 2001. 'Is the Past a Non-Renewable Resource?' 286-297. In Layton, R., Stone, P. G. and Thomas, J. (eds.). *Destruction and Conservation of Cultural Property*. One World Archaeology Series, No. 41. Routledge, London.
- Howard, B. 1991. *Fortifications of St. Eustatius: An Archaeological and Historical Study of Defence in the Caribbean*. M.A. Thesis. Dept. of Anthropology, College of William and Mary, Williamsburg,
- Howard, B. 2002. *The Fortifications of St. Eustatius, Dutch West Indies*. Howard, Bryan P. Available at: <http://www.colonies.tripod.com/statia/statia.html>. (16th October 2001).
- Howes, A. and Foreman, M. 1999. *Town and Gun: The 17th Century Defences of Hull*. Kingston Press, Kingston Upon Hull.
- Hubbard, V. 1989. Cannon Fragment Discovered near Cotton Ground. *Nevis Historical and Conservation Society Newsletter*. **18**: 16-19. (November 1989).
- Hubbard, V. 1996. *Swords, Ships and Sugar: History of Nevis to 1900*. 4th Ed. Premiere Editions International, Corvallis.
- Hubbard, V. 2000. *Comments regarding cannon from Nevis made to Machling, T.* January 2000. Mr. Hubbard has been involved in Nevisian historical research for many years and has served as President of the NHCS.

- Hubbard, V. and Robinson, J. 2001. *Comments concerning the origin of archaeology on Nevis made to Machling, T.* March 2001. Mr. Hubbard and Mrs. Robinson have been involved in Nevisian historical research for many years and have served as President of the NHCS and as Museum's manager, respectively.
- Hudson, K. 1963. *Industrial Archaeology: An Introduction*. John Baker, London.
- Hughes, Q. 1991. *Military Architecture: The Art of Defence from the Earliest Times to the Atlantic Wall*. Beaufort Publishing, Liphook.
- Hulme, P. and Whitehead, N. L. (eds.). 1992. *Wild Majesty: Encounters With Caribs From Columbus to the Present Day*. Clarendon Press, Oxford.
- Ivey, J. E. 2001. 'The Defences of the Alamo as found by Archaeology'. 127-133. In Freeman, P. W. M. and Pollard, A. (eds.). *Fields of Conflict: Progress and Prospect in Battlefield Archaeology. BAR International Series, No. 958*. Archaeopress, Oxford.
- J.S. 1688. *Fortification and Military Discipline in Two Parts*. Printed for R. Morden, London.
- Jamaica. 2002. *Jamaica Forts*. Jamaica. Available at: <http://www.jnht.com/forts/rocky.html>. (23rd April 2002).
- Jane, C. W. E. 1982. *Shirley Heights: The Defence of Nelson's Dockyard*. Reference Library of Nelson's Dockyard National Park Foundation, English Harbour, Antigua.
- Jardine, L. 2000. *Ingenious Pursuits: Building the Scientific Revolution*. Abacus, London.
- Jeaffreson, J. C. (ed.) 1878. *A Young Squire of the 17th Century, from the papers 1676-1686 of Christopher Jeaffreson*. Printed for the author, London.
- Jessamy, M. 1998. *Forts and Coastal Batteries of Grenada*. Roland's Image Productions, Grenada.
- Johnson, M. H. 1996. *An Archaeology of Capitalism*. Blackwells, Oxford.
- Johnson, M. H. 1999a. *Archaeological Theory: An Introduction*. Oxford, Blackwell.
- Johnson, M. H. 1999b. 'The New Postmedieval Archaeology'. 17-22. In Egan, G. and Michael, R. L. (eds.). *Old and New Worlds: Historical/Post Medieval Papers from the Societies' Joint Conferences at Williamsburg and London 1997 to Mark Thirty Years of Work and Achievement*. Oxbow, Oxford.
- Johnson, M. H. 2002. *Behind the Castle Gate: From Medieval to Renaissance*. Routledge, London.
- Keegan, J. 1994. *A History of Warfare*. 2nd Ed. Pimlico, London.

- Keegan, W. F. 2000. 'West Indian Archaeology. 3. Ceramic Age'. *Journal of Archaeological Research*. **8**: 2, 135-167.
- Kent, P. 1988. *The Fortifications of East Anglia*. Terence Dalton Ltd, Lavenham, Suffolk.
- Klippel, W. E. and Schroedl, G. F. 1999. 'African Slave Craftsmen and Single-Hole Bone Discs from Brimstone Hill, St. Kitts, West Indies'. *Post-Medieval Archaeology*. **33**: 222-232.
- Lander, J. F. 2001. *Caribbean Tsunami: An Initial History*. University of Colorado, Boulder. Available at: http://isis.uwimona.edu.jm/uds/cartsu_1.gif. (4th October 2001).
- Lander, J. F. and Whiteside, L. S. 2001. *Caribbean Tsunami: An Initial History: Table 1*. University of Colorado, Boulder. Available at: <http://poseidon.uprm.edu/lander/table1a.htm>. (4th October 2001).
- Lanfant, M.-F., Allcock, J. B. and Bruner, E. M. (eds.). 1995. *International Tourism: Identity and Change*. Sage Studies in International Sociology, No. 47, London.
- Laws, W. 1976. *Distinction, Death and Disgrace: Governorship of the Leeward Islands in the Early Eighteenth Century*. Jamaican Historical Society, Kingston, Jamaica.
- Layton, R., Stone, P. G. and Thomas, J. (eds.). 2001. *Destruction and Conservation of Cultural Property*. One World Archaeology Series. **41**. Routledge, London.
- Leech, R. and Williams, B. 2001. 'The Colonial Landscape - Urban and Rural Communities'. 74-86. In *The Nevis Heritage Project Interim Report 2000*. Nevis Heritage Project, University of Southampton, Southampton.
- Leech, R., Williams, B. and Fradgley, N. 2002. 'Theme Three: The Colonial Landscape - Urban and Rural Communities'. 50-80. In Morris, E. (ed.) *Nevis Heritage Project: Interim Report 2001*. Nevis Heritage Project, University of Southampton, Southampton.
- Le Lycée Gerville Réache. 1990. *Les Fortifications de la Guadeloupe Proprement Dite*. La Direction Régionale des Affaires Culturelles, Basse-Terre, Guadeloupe.
- Leone, M. P. 1984. 'Interpreting Ideology in Historical Archaeology: Using the Rules of Perspective in the William Paca Garden in Annapolis, Maryland'. 25-35. In Miller, D. and Tilley, C. (eds.). *Ideology, Power and Pre-History*. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge.
- Leone, M. P. and Potter, P. B. 1994. 'Historical Archaeology of Capitalism'. *Bulletin of the Society for American Archaeology*. **12**: 4, 14-15.
- Leybourn, W. 1673. *The Works of Edmund Gunter*. 5th Ed. Printed for the author, London.

- Little, B. J. (ed.) 1992. *Text-Aided Archaeology*. CRC Press, London.
- Loché, L. 1780. *Elements of Fortification*. Printed for the author, London.
- Loftfield, T. C. 2001. 'Creolization in 17th Century Barbados'. 207-233. In Farnsworth, P. (ed.) *Island Lives: Historical Archaeologies of the Caribbean*. The University of Alabama Press, Tuscaloosa.
- Lowenthal, D. 1995. *The Past is a Foreign Country*. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge.
- Machling, T. 2001. 'Colonial Fortifications: Old Road Fort, Cotton Tree Fort and Dukes Sconce/Abbott's/Coles Point Forts: Fieldwork 2000'. 45-73. In Morris, E. (ed.) *Nevis Heritage Project Interim Report 2000*. Nevis Heritage Project, University of Southampton, Southampton.
- Machling, T. 2002. 'Colonial Fortifications: From Ireland to Nevis: The Life of Governor John Johnson'. 40-49. In Morris, E. (ed.) *Nevis Heritage Project Interim Report 2001*. Nevis Heritage Project, University of Southampton, Southampton.
- Machling, T. 2003. 'Colonial Fortifications: Jamestown, Morton's Bay and James Fort: Myth, Port and Fort'. 31-38. In Morris, E. (ed.) *Nevis Heritage Project Interim Report 2002*. Nevis Heritage Project, University of Southampton, Southampton.
- Mack, T. 2001. 'Pay Back Time'. *The Guardian*. 42-49. 11th August 2001.
- Macmanamon, F. P. 2000. 'The Protection of Archaeological Resources in The United States: Reconciling Preservation with Contemporary Society'. 40-54. In Macmanamon, F. P. and Hatton, A. (eds.). *Cultural Resource Management in Contemporary Society: Perspectives on Managing and Presenting the Past*. One World Archaeology Series. 33. Routledge, London.
- Manners, A. 2000. 'Executive Director's Page'. *Nevis Historical and Conservation Society Newsletter*. 58: 2. (November 2000).
- Marolois, S. 1638. *The Art of Fortification or Architecture Militaire*. Printed for the author, Amsterdam.
- Martin, S. I. 1999. *Britain's Slave Trade*. Channel 4 Books, London.
- Matheson, D. L. 1987. *The Brimstone Hill Fortress*. Brimstone Hill Fortress National Park Society, St. Kitts.
- Mbunwe-Samba, P. 2001. 'Should Developing Countries Restore and Preserve?' 30-41. In Layton, R., Stone, P. G. and Thomas, J. (eds.). *Destruction and Conservation of Cultural Property*. One World Archaeology Series. 41. Routledge, London.
- McGreal, C. 2001a. 'Africans Angry at Refusal to Debate Slavery Reparations'. *The Guardian*. 16. (1st September 2001).

- Mcgreal, C. 2001b. 'Britain Blocks EU Apology for Slave Trade'. *The Guardian*. 2. (3rd September 2001).
- Mcgreal, C. 2001c. 'Give Them Hard Cash'. *The Guardian*. 15. (3rd September 2001).
- Meniketti, M. 1998. *The Port St. George Project: An Archaeological Assessment of Sugar Plantation and Harbour Complex in Nevis, West Indies*. MA Thesis. Michigan Technical University, Michigan.
- Moore, J. 1673. *Modern Fortification or Elements of Military Architecture*. Printed for G. Godbid, London.
- Morris, E. L. 2000. 'A Caribbean Feasibility - The Nevis Heritage Project'. *Antiquity*. 74: 267-8.
- Morris, E. L. 2002. 'Afro-Caribbean Pottery'. 84-87. In Morris, E. (ed.) *Nevis Heritage Project: Interim Report 2002*. Nevis Heritage Project, University of Southampton, Southampton.
- Morris, E. L., Crosby, A., Leech, R. and Machling, T. 2001. *The Nevis Heritage Project: Interim Report 2000*. Nevis, Heritage Project, University of Southampton, Southampton.
- Morris, E. L., Read, R., James, S. E. and Machling, T. 1999. ' "...the Old Stone Ffort at Newcastle..." The Redoubt, Nevis, Eastern Caribbean'. *Post-Medieval Archaeology*. 33: 194-221.
- Mudcat Cafe. 2002. *Folk Song Database*. Mudcat-Cafe. Available at: <http://www.mudcat.org>. (8th August 2002).
- Muller, J. 1782. *A Treatise Containing the Elementary Part of Fortification*. 4th Ed. Printed for C. Nourse, London.
- Myers, M. 1999. *Preserving Charlestown's Heritage: The Economic and Social Benefits of Preservation with Guidelines on how to Maintain the Town's Unique Character*. Nevis Historical and Conservation Society, Charlestown.
- N.H.C.S. 2003. *Archaeological Fieldwork on Nevis: Minimum Standards*. NHCS/NIA, Charlestown. (Active from 1st January 2003).
- National Assembly of St. Kitts and Nevis. 1987. *The National Conservation and Environment Protection Act*. (17th April 1987).
- Newfoundland. 2002. *Plan of Port Royal, Newfoundland*. Newfoundland and Labrador Heritage. Available at: http://www.heritage.nf.ca/exploration/fort_royal.html. (26th February 2002).
- Ngunjiri, P. 2002a. 'Beach Vendors Fined for Row with Four Seasons Security'. *The St. Kitts-Nevis Observer*. 10. (6th-12th September 2002).

- Ngunjiri, P. 2002b. 'NIA to Set up National Trust to Protect Historic Sites'. *The St. Kitts-Nevis Observer*. 12. (14th-22nd June 2002).
- Nicholson, D. V. 1994. *Antigua and Barbuda Forts*. Museum of Antigua and Barbuda, Antigua.
- Nicholson, W. A. 1907. *Artillery Fire: The Battery*. Edward Stanford, London.
- Norris, J. 2000. *Artillery: A History*. Sutton Publishing, Stroud.
- Oliver, V. L. 1914. *Caribbeana*. Printed for the author, London.
- Orser, C. E. (ed.) 1996. *Images of the Recent Past: Readings in Historical Archaeology*. AltaMira, Walnut Creek.
- Orser, C. E. and Fagan, B. M. 1995. *Historical Archaeology*. Harper Collins, New York.
- O'sullivan, D. 1999. 'Teaching and Learning Post Medieval Archaeology in Britain'. 33-40. In Egan, G. and Michael, R. L. (eds.). *Old and New Worlds: Historical/Post Medieval Papers from the Societies' Joint Conferences at Williamsburg and London 1997 to Mark Thirty Years of Work and Achievement*. Oxbow Books, Oxford.
- Ozanam. 1711. *A Treatise of Fortification* (trans. by J. T. Desaguliers). Printed for the author, Oxford.
- Paddock, F. K. 1982. *Letter detailing the Cannon of Nevis made to Lupanacci, R.* (2nd March 1982).
- Pares, R. 1950. *A West India Fortune*. Longmans, Green and Co, London.
- Pares, R. 1963. *War and Trade in the West Indies, 1729-1763*. Frank Cass and Co, London.
- Parker, G. 1988. *The Military Revolution: Military Innovation and the Rise of the West 1500-1800*. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge.
- Pawson, M. and Buisseret, D. 1975. *Port Royal, Jamaica*. Clarendon Press, Oxford.
- Peterson, J. B. 1997. 'Taino, Island Carib, and Prehistoric Amerindian Economies in the West Indies: Tropical Forest Adaptations to Island Environments'. 118-130. In Wilson, S. M. (ed.) *The Indigenous People of the Caribbean*. University Press of Florida, Gainesville.
- Phills, A. 2000. 'East Caribbean Currency Authority - Eastern Caribbean Central Bank'. *Nevis Historical and Conservation Society Newsletter*. 55: 4-5. (February 2000).
- Pollak, M. D. 1991. *Military Architecture, Cartography and the Representation of the Early Modern European City: A Checklist of Treatises on Fortification in the Newberry Library*. The Newberry Library, Chicago.

- Pollard, A. 2001. "'Place Ekowe in a State of Defence': The Archaeological Investigation of the British Fort at KwaMondi, Eshowe, Zululand'. 229-236. In Freeman, P. W. M. and Pollard, A. (eds.). *Fields of Conflict: Progress and Prospect in Battlefield Archaeology*. BAR International Series 958. Archaeopress, Oxford.
- Pollard, A. and Oliver, N. 2002. *Two Men In A Trench: Battlefield Archaeology*. Penguin, London.
- Puerto Rico. 2002. *El Morro and El Cañelo*. Puerto Rico Government. Available at: <http://www.nps.gov/saju/morro.html>. (27th March 2002).
- Pulsipher, L. M. and Goodwin, C. M. 1982. 'A Sugar Boiling House at Galways: An Irish Sugar Plantation in Montserrat, West Indies'. *Post-Medieval Archaeology*. **16**: 21-27.
- R.N. 1639. *Fortification or Architecture Military*. Printed by T. Cotes for A. Crooke, London.
- Riviere, B. 1990. *State Systems in the Eastern Caribbean: Historical and Contemporary Features*. University of the West Indies, Jamaica.
- Robertson, J. 1754. *The Elements of Navigation and a Treatise of Marine Fortification*. Printed for J. Nourse, London.
- Robson, G. R. 1964. 'An Earthquake Catalogue for the Eastern Caribbean'. *Bulletin of the Seismological Society of America*. **54**: 2, 785-832.
- Ross, W. G. 1887. *Military Engineering During the Great Civil War*. Professional Papers of the Corps of Royal Engineers, London.
- Rymer, J. 1775. *An Description of the Island of Nevis with an Account of its Principal Diseases*. Printed for the author, London.
- Said, E. W. 1994. *Culture and Imperialism*. Vintage, London.
- Sainsbury, W. N. (ed.) 1860. *Calendar of State Papers: Colonial Series, America and the West Indies*. Department of State and National Bodies, London.
- Saunders, A. 1989. *Fortress Britain: Artillery Fortification in the British Isles and Ireland*. Beaufort Publishing, Liphook.
- Saunders, A. 1993. 'The Range of Post-Medieval Military Buildings and Defensive Structures'. 14-20. In Watson-Smyth, M. (ed.) *Deserted Bastions: Historical Naval and Military Architecture*. Save Britain's Heritage, London.
- Scammell, G. V. 1989. *The First Imperial Age: European Overseas Expansion, c.1400-1715*. Unwyn Hyman, London.

- Schroedl, G. F. 2000a. *Archaeological and Architectural Assessment of Charles Fort, St. Kitts, West Indies: Charles Fort Archaeological Project Report No.1*. University of Tennessee, Knoxville.
- Schroedl, G. F. 2000b. *Slavery in the Context of British Fortifications: The Archaeological Information: Brimstone Hill Archaeological Project Report No. 19*. University of Tennessee, Knoxville.
- Schroedl, G. F. and Ahlman, T. 2002. 'The Maintenance of Cultural and Personal Identities of Enslaved Africans and British Soldiers at the Brimstone Hill Fortress, St. Kitts, West Indies'. *Historical Archaeology*. **36**: 4, 38-49.
- Schuyler, R. L. 1970. 'Historical Archaeology and Historic Sites Archaeology as Anthropology: Basic Definitions and Relationships'. *Historical Archaeology*. **4**: 83-89.
- Schuyler, R. L. 1999. 'The Centrality of Post-Medieval Studies to General Historical Archaeology'. 10-17. In Egan, G. and Michael, R. L. (eds.). *Old and New Worlds: Historical/Post-Medieval Archaeology Papers from the Societies' Joint Conferences at Williamsburg and London 1997 to Mark Thirty Years of Work and Achievement*. Oxbow, Oxford.
- Seemann, U. A. 1997. *Fortifications of the Cape Peninsula, 1647-1829*. Castle Military Museum, Cape Town.
- Seifert, D. J. 1991. 'Within Sight of the White House: The Archaeology of Working Women'. *Historical Archaeology*. **26**: 4, 82-108.
- Shepherd, V. A. 1999. *Women in Caribbean History: The British-Colonised Territories*. James Currey, Oxford.
- Slayman, A. L. 1996. "Where the Past Serves the Present". *Archaeology*. **49**: 1, 79.
- Sloane, H. 1707. *A Voyage to the Islands Madera, Barbados, Nieves, St. Christophers and Jamaica with the Natural History of the Herbs and Trees, Four Footed Beasts, Fishes, Birds, Insects, Reptiles, etc.* Printed for the author, London.
- Smith, V. T. C. 1987. *Report on Fort Charles, Nevis*. Nevis Historical and Conservation Society, Charlestown. January 1987.
- Smith, V. T. C. 1990. *Report on the Newcastle Tower, Nevis*. Nevis Historical and Conservation Society, Charlestown. September 1990.
- Smith, V. T. C. 1992a. *Fire and Brimstone: The Story of the Brimstone Hill Fortress, St. Kitts, West Indies, 1690-1853*. Creole Publishing Company, St. Kitts.
- Smith, V. T. C. 1992b. 'Fort George: An Early Polygonal Citadel on Brimstone Hill, St. Kitts in the West Indies'. *FORT*. **20**: 55-70.

- Smith, V. T. C. 1994. 'Brimstone Hill Fortress, St. Kitts, West Indies. Part One: History'. *Post-Medieval Archaeology*. **28**: 73-109.
- Smith, V. T. C. 1995. 'Brimstone Hill Fortress, St. Kitts, West Indies. Part Two: Description'. *Post-Medieval Archaeology*. **29**: 77-106.
- Smith, V. T. C. 1997. 'The Defences of London during the English Civil War'. *FORT*. **25**: 61-81.
- Smith, W. 1740. *A Natural History of Nevis and the Rest of the English Charibee Islands in America*. Printed for the author, Cambridge.
- Sollors, W. (ed.) 2001. *The Interesting Narrative of the Life of Olaudah Equiano or Gustavus Vassa, the African, Written by Himself*. W. W. Norton & Company, London.
- Southgate, B. 1998. *History: What and Why?* Routledge, London.
- Spinks, M. 2000. 'Caribbean Tourism'. *Symposium on the Historical Fortifications of the Caribbean*, St. Kitts. (3-4 October 2000).
- Starbuck, D. R. 1999. 'Military Archaeology of America's Colonial Wars'. 195-202. In Egan, G. and Michael, R. L. (eds.). *Old and New Worlds: Historical/Post Medieval Papers from the Societies' Joint Conferences at Williamsburg and London 1997 to Mark Thirty Years of Work and Achievement*. Oxbow Books, Oxford.
- Straith, H. 1833. *A Treatise on Fortification Deduced from Established Principles*. Printed for the author, Croydon.
- Swall, A. 1691. *The New Method of Fortification as practised by M. Le Vauban*. Printed for the author, London.
- Taylor, T. 1999. *Time Team 99: The Site Reports*. Channel 4 Books, London.
- Terrell, M. 1994a. 'The Jewish Synagogue: 1994 Dig'. *Nevis Historical and Conservation Society Newsletter*. **36**: 13-14.
- Terrell, M. 1994b. 'The Jews of Nevis and their Synagogue'. *Nevis Historical and Conservation Society Newsletter*. **34**: 4-7.
- Thompson, A. O. 1997. *The Haunting Past: Politics, Economics and Race in Caribbean Life*. M. E. Sharpe, New York.
- Tincey, J. and Embleton, G. 1998. *The British Army: 1660-1704*. Osprey, London.
- Trollope, C. 2000. *The Nevis Guns: Report to the Nevis Historical and Conservation Society*. Colchester, Essex.
- Trollope, C. 2002. *Comments regarding cannon ranges made to Machling, T. March 2001*. Mr. Trollope is an expert on 17th and 18th century cannon.
- Trott, A. 1999. 'Digging Up the Past'. *The Leeward Times*. (28th May 1999).

- Urry, J. 1996. *The Tourist Gaze: Leisure and Travel in Contemporary Societies*. Sage, London.
- Warner, P. 1998. 'Million \$\$ Resort Will Make Life Better'. *The St. Kitts-Nevis Observer*. 1. (31st October-6th November 1998).
- Warner, P. 1999a. 'Infrastructural Programmes Continue on Nevis'. *The St. Kitts-Nevis Observer*. 9. (20th-26th March 1999).
- Warner, P. 1999b. 'Kuwait and NIA Initial Loan Agreement'. *The St. Kitts-Nevis Observer*. 9. (20th-26th March 1999).
- Warner, P. 1999c. 'Nevis Fish Farm Raises Legal, Other Concerns'. *The St. Kitts-Nevis Observer*. 12. (21st-27th May 1999).
- Warner, P. 1999d. 'Pinney Appeals Ruling'. *The St. Kitts-Nevis Observer*. 1. (20th-26th March 1999).
- Warner, P. 2000a. 'Four Seasons Contractor to Answer Charges of Removing Natural Barrier'. *The St. Kitts-Nevis Observer*. 14. (13-19th October 2000).
- Warner, P. 2000b. 'Hoteliers want Court to Rule that Sand Bar is natural Barrier to the Sea'. *The St. Kitts-Nevis Observer*. 3. (20-26th October 2000).
- Warner, P. 2001. 'Premier Amory Pledges to Support Growth and Development of Nevisians in 2001'. *The St. Kitts-Nevis Observer*. 9. (5th-11th January 2001).
- Watters, D. R. 2001. 'Historical Archaeology in the British Caribbean'. 82-102. In Farnsworth, P. (ed.) *Island Lives: Historical Archaeologies of the Caribbean*. The University of Alabama Press, Tuscaloosa.
- Watts, D. 1987. *The West Indies: Patterns of Development, Culture and Environmental Change Since 1492*. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge.
- Watts, S. 2001. 'Yellow Fever Immunities in West Africa and the Americas in the Age of Slavery and Beyond: A Reappraisal'. *Journal of the Society of Historians*. 34: 4, 955.
- Wentworth-Higginson, T. 1870. *Army Life in the Black Regiment*. Printed for the author, Boston.
- Wesler, K. W. 1998. 'Historical Archaeology in West Africa'. 1-40. In Wesler, K. W. (ed.) *Historical Archaeology in Nigeria*. Africa World Press Inc., Asmara.
- Wilkenson, S. 2000. *Comments regarding the onshore building at Old Road Fort made to Machling, T.* May 2000. Mr. Wilkenson is an inhabitant of Nevis.
- Williams, E. 1972. *British Historians and the West Indies*. 2nd Ed. Andre Deutsch, London.

- Williams, E. 1994. *Capitalism and Slavery*. 2nd Ed. University of North Carolina Press, London.
- Williams, E. 1997. *From Columbus to Castro: The history of the Caribbean, 1492-1969*. 4th Ed. Andre Deutsch, London.
- Williams, M. (ed.) 1999. *Soul Survivors: The Definitive Anthology of Female Slave Narratives*. Black Classics, London.
- Wilson, S. M. 1989. 'The Prehistoric Settlement Pattern of Nevis, West Indies'. *Journal of Field Archaeology*. **16**: 427-450.
- Wilson, S. M. 1997. *The Indigenous People of the Caribbean*. University Press of Florida, Gainesville.
- Wilson, S. M., Iceland, H. B. and Hester, T. R. 1998. 'Preceramic Connections between Yucatan and the Caribbean'. *Latin American Antiquity*. **9**: 342-352.